KENILWORTH. by Sir Walter Scott, Bart.

Contents

INTRODUCTION

KENILWORTH

CHAPTER I.

CHAPTER II.

CHAPTER III.

CHAPTER IV.

CHAPTER V.

CHAPTER VI.

CHAPTER VII.

CHAPTER VIII.

CHAPTER IX.

CHAPTER X.

CHAPTER XI.

CHAPTER XII.

CHAPTER XIII.

CHAPTER XIV.

CHAPTER XV.

CHAPTER XVI.

CHAPTER XVII.

CHAPTER XVIII.

CHAPTER XIX.

CHAPTER XX.

CHAPTER XXI.

CHAPTER XXII.

CHAPTER XXIII.

CHAPTER XXIV.

CHAPTER XXV.

CHAPTER XXVI.

CHAPTER XXVII.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

CHAPTER XXIX.

CHAPTER XXX.

CHAPTER XXXI.

CHAPTER XXXII.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

CHAPTER XXXV.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

CHAPTER XL.

CHAPTER XLI.

NOTES.

INTRODUCTION

A certain degree of success, real or supposed, in the delineation of

Queen Mary, naturally induced the author to attempt something similar

respecting "her sister and her foe," the celebrated Elizabeth. He

will not, however, pretend to have approached the task with the same

feelings; for the candid Robertson himself confesses having felt the

prejudices with which a Scottishman is tempted to regard the subject;

and what so liberal a historian avows, a poor romance-writer dares not

disown. But he hopes the influence of a prejudice, almost as natural to

him as his native air, will not be found to have greatly affected the

sketch he has attempted of England's Elizabeth. I have endeavoured

to describe her as at once a high-minded sovereign, and a female of

passionate feelings, hesitating betwixt the sense of her rank and

the duty she owed her subjects on the one hand, and on the other her

attachment to a nobleman, who, in external qualifications at least,

amply merited her favour. The interest of the story is thrown upon that

period when the sudden death of the first Countess of Leicester seemed

to open to the ambition of her husband the opportunity of sharing the

crown of his sovereign.

It is possible that slander, which very seldom favours the memories

of persons in exalted stations, may have blackened the character of

Leicester with darker shades than really belonged to it. But the almost

general voice of the times attached the most foul suspicions to the

death of the unfortunate Countess, more especially as it took place so

very opportunely for the indulgence of her lover's ambition. If we can

trust Ashmole's Antiquities of Berkshire, there was but too much ground

for the traditions which charge Leicester with the murder of his wife.

In the following extract of the passage, the reader will find the

authority I had for the story of the romance:--

"At the west end of the church are the ruins of a manor, anciently

belonging (as a cell, or place of removal, as some report) to the

monks of Abington. At the Dissolution, the said manor, or lordship, was

conveyed to one--Owen (I believe), the possessor of Godstow then.

"In the hall, over the chimney, I find Abington arms cut in

stone--namely, a patonee between four martletts; and also another

escutcheon--namely, a lion rampant, and several mitres cut in stone

about the house. There is also in the said house a chamber called

Dudley's chamber, where the Earl of Leicester's wife was murdered, of

which this is the story following:--

"Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, a very goodly personage, and

singularly well featured, being a great favourite to Queen Elizabeth,

it was thought, and commonly reported, that had he been a bachelor or

widower, the Queen would have made him her husband; to this end, to free

himself of all obstacles, he commands, or perhaps, with fair flattering

entreaties, desires his wife to repose herself here at his servant

Anthony Forster's house, who then lived in the aforesaid manor-house;

and also prescribes to Sir Richard Varney (a prompter to this design),

at his coming hither, that he should first attempt to poison her, and if

that did not take effect, then by any other way whatsoever to dispatch

her. This, it seems, was proved by the report of Dr. Walter Bayly,

sometime fellow of New College, then living in Oxford, and professor of

physic in that university; whom, because he would not consent to take

away her life by poison, the Earl endeavoured to displace him the court.

This man, it seems, reported for most certain that there was a practice

in Cumnor among the conspirators, to have poisoned this poor innocent

lady, a little before she was killed, which was attempted after this

manner:--They seeing the good lady sad and heavy (as one that well

knew, by her other handling, that her death was not far off), began to

persuade her that her present disease was abundance of melancholy and

other humours, etc., and therefore would needs counsel her to take some

potion, which she absolutely refusing to do, as still suspecting the

worst; whereupon they sent a messenger on a day (unawares to her) for

Dr. Bayly, and entreated him to persuade her to take some little potion

by his direction, and they would fetch the same at Oxford; meaning to

have added something of their own for her comfort, as the doctor

upon just cause and consideration did suspect, seeing their great

importunity, and the small need the lady had of physic, and therefore

he peremptorily denied their request; misdoubting (as he afterwards

reported) lest, if they had poisoned her under the name of his potion,

he might after have been hanged for a colour of their sin, and the

doctor remained still well assured that this way taking no effect, she

would not long escape their violence, which afterwards happened thus.

For Sir Richard Varney abovesaid (the chief projector in this design),

who, by the Earl's order, remained that day of her death alone with her,

with one man only and Forster, who had that day forcibly sent away all

her servants from her to Abington market, about three miles distant from

this place; they (I say, whether first stifling her, or else strangling

her) afterwards flung her down a pair of stairs and broke her neck,

using much violence upon her; but, however, though it was vulgarly

reported that she by chance fell downstairs (but still without hurting

her hood that was upon her head), yet the inhabitants will tell you

there that she was conveyed from her usual chamber where she lay, to

another where the bed's head of the chamber stood close to a privy

postern door, where they in the night came and stifled her in her bed,

bruised her head very much broke her neck, and at length flung her down

stairs, thereby believing the world would have thought it a mischance,

and so have blinded their villainy. But behold the mercy and justice

of God in revenging and discovering this lady's murder; for one of the

persons that was a coadjutor in this murder was afterwards taken for a

felony in the marches of Wales, and offering to publish the manner

of the aforesaid murder, was privately made away in the prison by the

Earl's appointment; and Sir Richard Varney the other, dying about the

same time in London, cried miserably, and blasphemed God, and said to

a person of note (who hath related the same to others since), not long

before his death, that all the devils in hell did tear him in pieces.

Forster, likewise, after this fact, being a man formerly addicted to

hospitality, company, mirth, and music, was afterwards observed to

forsake all this, and with much melancholy and pensiveness (some say

with madness) pined and drooped away. The wife also of Bald Butter,

kinsman to the Earl, gave out the whole fact a little before her death.

Neither are these following passages to be forgotten, that as soon as

ever she was murdered, they made great haste to bury her before the

coroner had given in his inquest (which the Earl himself condemned as

not done advisedly), which her father, or Sir John Robertsett (as I

suppose), hearing of, came with all speed hither, caused her corpse to

be taken up, the coroner to sit upon her, and further inquiry to be made

concerning this business to the full; but it was generally thought that

the Earl stopped his mouth, and made up the business betwixt them; and

the good Earl, to make plain to the world the great love he bare to her

while alive, and what a grief the loss of so virtuous a lady was to his

tender heart, caused (though the thing, by these and other means, was

beaten into the heads of the principal men of the University of Oxford)

her body to be reburied in St, Mary's Church in Oxford, with great

pomp and solemnity. It is remarkable, when Dr. Babington, the Earl's

chaplain, did preach the funeral sermon, he tript once or twice in

his speech, by recommending to their memories that virtuous lady so

pitifully murdered, instead of saying pitifully slain. This Earl, after

all his murders and poisonings, was himself poisoned by that which

was prepared for others (some say by his wife at Cornbury Lodge before

mentioned), though Baker in his Chronicle would have it at Killingworth;

anno 1588." [Ashmole's Antiquities of Berkshire, vol.i., p.149. The

tradition as to Leicester's death was thus communicated by Ben Jonson to

Drummond of Hawthornden:--"The Earl of Leicester gave a bottle of liquor

to his Lady, which he willed her to use in any faintness, which she,

after his returne from court, not knowing it was poison, gave him, and

so he died."--BEN JONSON'S INFORMATION TO DRUMMOND OF HAWTHORNDEN, MS.,

SIR ROBERT SIBBALD'S COPY.]

The same accusation has been adopted and circulated by the author of

Leicester's Commonwealth, a satire written directly against the Earl of

Leicester, which loaded him with the most horrid crimes, and, among

the rest, with the murder of his first wife. It was alluded to in the

Yorkshire Tragedy, a play erroneously ascribed to Shakespeare, where

a baker, who determines to destroy all his family, throws his wife

downstairs, with this allusion to the supposed murder of Leicester's

lady,--

"The only way to charm a woman's tongue

Is, break her neck--a politician did it."

The reader will find I have borrowed several incidents as well as names

from Ashmole, and the more early authorities; but my first acquaintance

with the history was through the more pleasing medium of verse. There

is a period in youth when the mere power of numbers has a more strong

effect on ear and imagination than in more advanced life. At this season

of immature taste, the author was greatly delighted with the poems of

Mickle and Langhorne, poets who, though by no means deficient in the

higher branches of their art, were eminent for their powers of verbal

melody above most who have practised this department of poetry. One of

those pieces of Mickle, which the author was particularly pleased with,

is a ballad, or rather a species of elegy, on the subject of Cumnor

Hall, which, with others by the same author, was to be found in Evans's

Ancient Ballads (vol. iv., page 130), to which work Mickle made liberal

contributions. The first stanza especially had a peculiar species of

enchantment for the youthful ear of the author, the force of which is

not even now entirely spent; some others are sufficiently prosaic.

CUMNOR HALL.

The dews of summer night did fall;

The moon, sweet regent of the sky,

Silver'd the walls of Cumnor Hall,

And many an oak that grew thereby,

Now nought was heard beneath the skies,

The sounds of busy life were still,

Save an unhappy lady's sighs,

That issued from that lonely pile.

"Leicester," she cried, "is this thy love

That thou so oft hast sworn to me,

To leave me in this lonely grove,

Immured in shameful privity?

"No more thou com'st with lover's speed,

Thy once beloved bride to see;

But be she alive, or be she dead,

I fear, stern Earl, 's the same to thee.

"Not so the usage I received

When happy in my father's hall;

No faithless husband then me grieved,

No chilling fears did me appal.

"I rose up with the cheerful morn,

No lark more blithe, no flower more gay;

And like the bird that haunts the thorn,

So merrily sung the livelong day.

"If that my beauty is but small,

Among court ladies all despised,

Why didst thou rend it from that hall,

Where, scornful Earl, it well was prized?

"And when you first to me made suit,

How fair I was you oft would say!

And proud of conquest, pluck'd the fruit,

Then left the blossom to decay.

"Yes! now neglected and despised,

The rose is pale, the lily's dead;

But he that once their charms so prized,

Is sure the cause those charms are fled.

"For know, when sick'ning grief doth prey,

And tender love's repaid with scorn,

The sweetest beauty will decay,--

What floweret can endure the storm?

"At court, I'm told, is beauty's throne,

Where every lady's passing rare,

That Eastern flowers, that shame the sun,

Are not so glowing, not so fair.

"Then, Earl, why didst thou leave the beds

Where roses and where lilies vie,

To seek a primrose, whose pale shades

Must sicken when those gauds are by?

"'Mong rural beauties I was one,

Among the fields wild flowers are fair;

Some country swain might me have won,

And thought my beauty passing rare.

"But, Leicester (or I much am wrong),

Or 'tis not beauty lures thy vows;

Rather ambition's gilded crown

Makes thee forget thy humble spouse.

"Then, Leicester, why, again I plead

(The injured surely may repine)--

Why didst thou wed a country maid,

When some fair princess might be thine?

"Why didst thou praise my hum'ble charms,

And, oh! then leave them to decay?

Why didst thou win me to thy arms,

Then leave to mourn the livelong day?

"The village maidens of the plain

Salute me lowly as they go;

Envious they mark my silken train,

Nor think a Countess can have woe.

"The simple nymphs! they little know

How far more happy's their estate;

To smile for joy, than sigh for woe--

To be content, than to be great.

"How far less blest am I than them?

Daily to pine and waste with care!

Like the poor plant that, from its stem

Divided, feels the chilling air.

"Nor, cruel Earl! can I enjoy

The humble charms of solitude;

Your minions proud my peace destroy,

By sullen frowns or pratings rude.

"Last night, as sad I chanced to stray,

The village death-bell smote my ear;

They wink'd aside, and seemed to say,

'Countess, prepare, thy end is near!'

"And now, while happy peasants sleep,

Here I sit lonely and forlorn;

No one to soothe me as I weep,

Save Philomel on yonder thorn.

"My spirits flag--my hopes decay--

Still that dread death-bell smites my ear;

And many a boding seems to say,

'Countess, prepare, thy end is near!'"

Thus sore and sad that lady grieved,

In Cumnor Hall, so lone and drear;

And many a heartfelt sigh she heaved,

And let fall many a bitter tear.

And ere the dawn of day appear'd,

In Cumnor Hall, so lone and drear,

Full many a piercing scream was heard,

And many a cry of mortal fear.

The death-bell thrice was heard to ring,

An aerial voice was heard to call,

And thrice the raven flapp'd its wing

Around the towers of Cumnor Hall.

The mastiff howl'd at village door,

The oaks were shatter'd on the green;

Woe was the hour--for never more

That hapless Countess e'er was seen!

And in that Manor now no more

Is cheerful feast and sprightly ball;

For ever since that dreary hour

Have spirits haunted Cumnor Hall.

The village maids, with fearful glance,

Avoid the ancient moss-grown wall;

Nor ever lead the merry dance,

Among the groves of Cumnor Hall.

Full many a traveller oft hath sigh'd,

And pensive wept the Countess' fall,

As wand'ring onward they've espied

The haunted towers of Cumnor Hall.

ARBOTSFORD, 1st March 1831.

KENILWORTH

CHAPTER I.

I am an innkeeper, and know my grounds,

And study them; Brain o' man, I study them.

I must have jovial guests to drive my ploughs,

And whistling boys to bring my harvests home,

Or I shall hear no flails thwack. THE NEW INN.

It is the privilege of tale-tellers to open their story in an inn, the

free rendezvous of all travellers, and where the humour of each displays

itself without ceremony or restraint. This is specially suitable when

the scene is laid during the old days of merry England, when the

guests were in some sort not merely the inmates, but the messmates

and temporary companions of mine Host, who was usually a personage of

privileged freedom, comely presence, and good-humour. Patronized by him

the characters of the company were placed in ready contrast; and they

seldom failed, during the emptying of a six-hooped pot, to throw off

reserve, and present themselves to each other, and to their landlord,

with the freedom of old acquaintance.

The village of Cumnor, within three or four miles of Oxford, boasted,

during the eighteenth of Queen Elizabeth, an excellent inn of the old

stamp, conducted, or rather ruled, by Giles Gosling, a man of a goodly

person, and of somewhat round belly; fifty years of age and upwards,

moderate in his reckonings, prompt in his payments, having a cellar of

sound liquor, a ready wit, and a pretty daughter. Since the days of

old Harry Baillie of the Tabard in Southwark, no one had excelled Giles

Gosling in the power of pleasing his guests of every description; and so

great was his fame, that to have been in Cumnor without wetting a cup

at the bonny Black Bear, would have been to avouch one's-self utterly

indifferent to reputation as a traveller. A country fellow might as well

return from London without looking in the face of majesty. The men of

Cumnor were proud of their Host, and their Host was proud of his house,

his liquor, his daughter, and himself.

It was in the courtyard of the inn which called this honest fellow

landlord, that a traveller alighted in the close of the evening, gave

his horse, which seemed to have made a long journey, to the hostler,

and made some inquiry, which produced the following dialogue betwixt the

myrmidons of the bonny Black Bear.

"What, ho! John Tapster."

"At hand, Will Hostler," replied the man of the spigot, showing himself

in his costume of loose jacket, linen breeches, and green apron, half

within and half without a door, which appeared to descend to an outer

cellar.

"Here is a gentleman asks if you draw good ale," continued the hostler.

"Beshrew my heart else," answered the tapster, "since there are but four

miles betwixt us and Oxford. Marry, if my ale did not convince the

heads of the scholars, they would soon convince my pate with the pewter

flagon."

"Call you that Oxford logic?" said the stranger, who had now quitted the

rein of his horse, and was advancing towards the inn-door, when he was

encountered by the goodly form of Giles Gosling himself.

"Is it logic you talk of, Sir Guest?" said the host; "why, then, have at

you with a downright consequence--

'The horse to the rack,

And to fire with the sack.'"

"Amen! with all my heart, my good host," said the stranger; "let it be a

quart of your best Canaries, and give me your good help to drink it."

"Nay, you are but in your accidence yet, Sir Traveller, if you call on

your host for help for such a sipping matter as a quart of sack; Were it

a gallon, you might lack some neighbouring aid at my hand, and yet call

yourself a toper."

"Fear me not." said the guest, "I will do my devoir as becomes a man who

finds himself within five miles of Oxford; for I am not come from the

field of Mars to discredit myself amongst the followers of Minerva."

As he spoke thus, the landlord, with much semblance of hearty welcome,

ushered his guest into a large, low chamber, where several persons were

seated together in different parties--some drinking, some playing at

cards, some conversing, and some, whose business called them to be early

risers on the morrow, concluding their evening meal, and conferring with

the chamberlain about their night's quarters.

The entrance of a stranger procured him that general and careless sort

of attention which is usually paid on such occasions, from which the

following results were deduced:--The guest was one of those who, with

a well-made person, and features not in themselves unpleasing, are

nevertheless so far from handsome that, whether from the expression

of their features, or the tone of their voice, or from their gait and

manner, there arises, on the whole, a disinclination to their society.

The stranger's address was bold, without being frank, and seemed eagerly

and hastily to claim for him a degree of attention and deference which

he feared would be refused, if not instantly vindicated as his right.

His attire was a riding-cloak, which, when open, displayed a handsome

jerkin overlaid with lace, and belted with a buff girdle, which

sustained a broadsword and a pair of pistols.

"You ride well provided, sir," said the host, looking at the weapons as

he placed on the table the mulled sack which the traveller had ordered.

"Yes, mine host; I have found the use on't in dangerous times, and I do

not, like your modern grandees, turn off my followers the instant they

are useless."

"Ay, sir?" said Giles Gosling; "then you are from the Low Countries, the

land of pike and caliver?"

"I have been high and low, my friend, broad and wide, far and near. But

here is to thee in a cup of thy sack; fill thyself another to pledge me,

and, if it is less than superlative, e'en drink as you have brewed."

"Less than superlative?" said Giles Gosling, drinking off the cup, and

smacking his lips with an air of ineffable relish,--"I know nothing

of superlative, nor is there such a wine at the Three Cranes, in the

Vintry, to my knowledge; but if you find better sack than that in the

Sheres, or in the Canaries either, I would I may never touch either pot

or penny more. Why, hold it up betwixt you and the light, you shall see

the little motes dance in the golden liquor like dust in the sunbeam.

But I would rather draw wine for ten clowns than one traveller.--I trust

your honour likes the wine?"

"It is neat and comfortable, mine host; but to know good liquor, you

should drink where the vine grows. Trust me, your Spaniard is too wise

a man to send you the very soul of the grape. Why, this now, which you

account so choice, were counted but as a cup of bastard at the Groyne,

or at Port St. Mary's. You should travel, mine host, if you would be

deep in the mysteries of the butt and pottle-pot."

"In troth, Signior Guest," said Giles Gosling, "if I were to travel only

that I might be discontented with that which I can get at home, methinks

I should go but on a fool's errand. Besides, I warrant you, there is

many a fool can turn his nose up at good drink without ever having

been out of the smoke of Old England; and so ever gramercy mine own

fireside."

"This is but a mean mind of yours, mine host," said the stranger;

"I warrant me, all your town's folk do not think so basely. You have

gallants among you, I dare undertake, that have made the Virginia

voyage, or taken a turn in the Low Countries at least. Come, cudgel your

memory. Have you no friends in foreign parts that you would gladly have

tidings of?"

"Troth, sir, not I," answered the host, "since ranting Robin of

Drysandford was shot at the siege of the Brill. The devil take the

caliver that fired the ball, for a blither lad never filled a cup

at midnight! But he is dead and gone, and I know not a soldier, or a

traveller, who is a soldier's mate, that I would give a peeled codling

for."

"By the Mass, that is strange. What! so many of our brave English hearts

are abroad, and you, who seem to be a man of mark, have no friend, no

kinsman among them?"

"Nay, if you speak of kinsmen," answered Gosling, "I have one wild slip

of a kinsman, who left us in the last year of Queen Mary; but he is

better lost than found."

"Do not say so, friend, unless you have heard ill of him lately. Many a

wild colt has turned out a noble steed.--His name, I pray you?"

"Michael Lambourne," answered the landlord of the Black Bear; "a son of

my sister's--there is little pleasure in recollecting either the name or

the connection."

"Michael Lambourne!" said the stranger, as if endeavouring to recollect

himself--"what, no relation to Michael Lambourne, the gallant cavalier

who behaved so bravely at the siege of Venlo that Grave Maurice thanked

him at the head of the army? Men said he was an English cavalier, and of

no high extraction."

"It could scarcely be my nephew," said Giles Gosling, "for he had not

the courage of a hen-partridge for aught but mischief."

"Oh, many a man finds courage in the wars," replied the stranger.

"It may be," said the landlord; "but I would have thought our Mike more

likely to lose the little he had."

"The Michael Lambourne whom I knew," continued the traveller, "was a

likely fellow--went always gay and well attired, and had a hawk's eye

after a pretty wench."

"Our Michael," replied the host, "had the look of a dog with a bottle

at its tail, and wore a coat, every rag of which was bidding good-day to

the rest."

"Oh, men pick up good apparel in the wars," replied the guest.

"Our Mike," answered the landlord, "was more like to pick it up in a

frippery warehouse, while the broker was looking another way; and, for

the hawk's eye you talk of, his was always after my stray spoons. He was

tapster's boy here in this blessed house for a quarter of a year; and

between misreckonings, miscarriages, mistakes, and misdemeanours, had

he dwelt with me for three months longer, I might have pulled down sign,

shut up house, and given the devil the key to keep."

"You would be sorry, after all," continued the traveller, "were I to

tell you poor Mike Lambourne was shot at the head of his regiment at the

taking of a sconce near Maestricht?"

"Sorry!--it would be the blithest news I ever heard of him, since it

would ensure me he was not hanged. But let him pass--I doubt his

end will never do such credit to his friends. Were it so, I should

say"--(taking another cup of sack)--"Here's God rest him, with all my

heart."

"Tush, man," replied the traveller, "never fear but you will have credit

by your nephew yet, especially if he be the Michael Lambourne whom I

knew, and loved very nearly, or altogether, as well as myself. Can you

tell me no mark by which I could judge whether they be the same?"

"Faith, none that I can think of," answered Giles Gosling, "unless that

our Mike had the gallows branded on his left shoulder for stealing a

silver caudle-cup from Dame Snort of Hogsditch."

"Nay, there you lie like a knave, uncle," said the stranger, slipping

aside his ruff; and turning down the sleeve of his doublet from his neck

and shoulder; "by this good day, my shoulder is as unscarred as thine

own.

"What, Mike, boy--Mike!" exclaimed the host;--"and is it thou, in good

earnest? Nay, I have judged so for this half-hour; for I knew no other

person would have ta'en half the interest in thee. But, Mike, an thy

shoulder be unscathed as thou sayest, thou must own that Goodman Thong,

the hangman, was merciful in his office, and stamped thee with a cold

iron."

"Tush, uncle--truce with your jests. Keep them to season your sour ale,

and let us see what hearty welcome thou wilt give a kinsman who has

rolled the world around for eighteen years; who has seen the sun set

where it rises, and has travelled till the west has become the east."

"Thou hast brought back one traveller's gift with thee, Mike, as I well

see; and that was what thou least didst: need to travel for. I remember

well, among thine other qualities, there was no crediting a word which

came from thy mouth."

"Here's an unbelieving pagan for you, gentlemen!" said Michael

Lambourne, turning to those who witnessed this strange interview betwixt

uncle and nephew, some of whom, being natives of the village, were no

strangers to his juvenile wildness. "This may be called slaying a Cumnor

fatted calf for me with a vengeance.--But, uncle, I come not from

the husks and the swine-trough, and I care not for thy welcome or no

welcome; I carry that with me will make me welcome, wend where I will."

So saying, he pulled out a purse of gold indifferently well filled, the

sight of which produced a visible effect upon the company. Some shook

their heads and whispered to each other, while one or two of the less

scrupulous speedily began to recollect him as a school-companion,

a townsman, or so forth. On the other hand, two or three grave,

sedate-looking persons shook their heads, and left the inn, hinting

that, if Giles Gosling wished to continue to thrive, he should turn his

thriftless, godless nephew adrift again, as soon as he could. Gosling

demeaned himself as if he were much of the same opinion, for even the

sight of the gold made less impression on the honest gentleman than it

usually doth upon one of his calling.

"Kinsman Michael," he said, "put up thy purse. My sister's son shall be

called to no reckoning in my house for supper or lodging; and I reckon

thou wilt hardly wish to stay longer where thou art e'en but too well

known."

"For that matter, uncle," replied the traveller, "I shall consult my own

needs and conveniences. Meantime I wish to give the supper and sleeping

cup to those good townsmen who are not too proud to remember Mike

Lambourne, the tapster's boy. If you will let me have entertainment for

my money, so; if not, it is but a short two minutes' walk to the Hare

and Tabor, and I trust our neighbours will not grudge going thus far

with me."

"Nay, Mike," replied his uncle, "as eighteen years have gone over thy

head, and I trust thou art somewhat amended in thy conditions, thou

shalt not leave my house at this hour, and shalt e'en have whatever

in reason you list to call for. But I would I knew that that purse of

thine, which thou vapourest of, were as well come by as it seems well

filled."

"Here is an infidel for you, my good neighbours!" said Lambourne, again

appealing to the audience. "Here's a fellow will rip up his kinsman's

follies of a good score of years' standing. And for the gold, why, sirs,

I have been where it grew, and was to be had for the gathering. In

the New World have I been, man--in the Eldorado, where urchins play

at cherry-pit with diamonds, and country wenches thread rubies for

necklaces, instead of rowan-tree berries; where the pantiles are made of

pure gold, and the paving-stones of virgin silver."

"By my credit, friend Mike," said young Laurence Goldthred, the cutting

mercer of Abingdon, "that were a likely coast to trade to. And what may

lawns, cypruses, and ribands fetch, where gold is so plenty?"

"Oh, the profit were unutterable," replied Lambourne, "especially when

a handsome young merchant bears the pack himself; for the ladies of that

clime are bona-robas, and being themselves somewhat sunburnt, they catch

fire like tinder at a fresh complexion like thine, with a head of hair

inclining to be red."

"I would I might trade thither," said the mercer, chuckling.

"Why, and so thou mayest," said Michael--"that is, if thou art the same

brisk boy who was partner with me at robbing the Abbot's orchard. 'Tis

but a little touch of alchemy to decoct thy house and land into ready

money, and that ready money into a tall ship, with sails, anchors,

cordage, and all things conforming; then clap thy warehouse of goods

under hatches, put fifty good fellows on deck, with myself to command

them, and so hoist topsails, and hey for the New World!"

"Thou hast taught him a secret, kinsman," said Giles Gosling, "to

decoct, an that be the word, his pound into a penny and his webs into a

thread.--Take a fool's advice, neighbour Goldthred. Tempt not the sea,

for she is a devourer. Let cards and cockatrices do their worst, thy

father's bales may bide a banging for a year or two ere thou comest to

the Spital; but the sea hath a bottomless appetite,--she would swallow

the wealth of Lombard Street in a morning, as easily as I would a

poached egg and a cup of clary. And for my kinsman's Eldorado, never

trust me if I do not believe he has found it in the pouches of some such

gulls as thyself.--But take no snuff in the nose about it; fall to and

welcome, for here comes the supper, and I heartily bestow it on all

that will take share, in honour of my hopeful nephew's return, always

trusting that he has come home another man.--In faith, kinsman, thou art

as like my poor sister as ever was son to mother."

"Not quite so like old Benedict Lambourne, her husband, though," said

the mercer, nodding and winking. "Dost thou remember, Mike, what thou

saidst when the schoolmaster's ferule was over thee for striking up thy

father's crutches?--it is a wise child, saidst thou, that knows its own

father. Dr. Bircham laughed till he cried again, and his crying saved

yours."

"Well, he made it up to me many a day after," said Lambourne; "and how

is the worthy pedagogue?"

"Dead," said Giles Gosling, "this many a day since."

"That he is," said the clerk of the parish; "I sat by his bed the

whilst. He passed away in a blessed frame. 'MORIOR--MORTUUS SUM VEL

FUI--MORI'--these were his latest words; and he just added, 'my last

verb is conjugated."

"Well, peace be with him," said Mike, "he owes me nothing."

"No, truly," replied Goldthred; "and every lash which he laid on thee,

he always was wont to say, he spared the hangman a labour."

"One would have thought he left him little to do then," said the clerk;

"and yet Goodman Thong had no sinecure of it with our friend, after

all."

"VOTO A DIOS!" exclaimed Lambourne, his patience appearing to fail him,

as he snatched his broad, slouched hat from the table and placed it on

his head, so that the shadow gave the sinister expression of a Spanish

brave to eyes and features which naturally boded nothing pleasant.

"Hark'ee, my masters--all is fair among friends, and under the rose; and

I have already permitted my worthy uncle here, and all of you, to use

your pleasure with the frolics of my nonage. But I carry sword and

dagger, my good friends, and can use them lightly too upon occasion. I

have learned to be dangerous upon points of honour ever since I served

the Spaniard, and I would not have you provoke me to the degree of

falling foul."

"Why, what would you do?" said the clerk.

"Ay, sir, what would you do?" said the mercer, bustling up on the other

side of the table.

"Slit your throat, and spoil your Sunday's quavering, Sir Clerk,"

said Lambourne fiercely; "cudgel you, my worshipful dealer in flimsy

sarsenets, into one of your own bales."

"Come, come," said the host, interposing, "I will have no swaggering

here.--Nephew, it will become you best to show no haste to take offence;

and you, gentlemen, will do well to remember, that if you are in an inn,

still you are the inn-keeper's guests, and should spare the honour

of his family.--I protest your silly broils make me as oblivious as

yourself; for yonder sits my silent guest as I call him, who hath been

my two days' inmate, and hath never spoken a word, save to ask for his

food and his reckoning--gives no more trouble than a very peasant--pays

his shot like a prince royal--looks but at the sum total of the

reckoning, and does not know what day he shall go away. Oh, 'tis a jewel

of a guest! and yet, hang-dog that I am, I have suffered him to sit

by himself like a castaway in yonder obscure nook, without so much as

asking him to take bite or sup along with us. It were but the right

guerdon of my incivility were he to set off to the Hare and Tabor before

the night grows older."

With his white napkin gracefully arranged over his left arm, his velvet

cap laid aside for the moment, and his best silver flagon in his right

hand, mine host walked up to the solitary guest whom he mentioned, and

thereby turned upon him the eyes of the assembled company.

He was a man aged betwixt twenty-five and thirty, rather above the

middle size, dressed with plainness and decency, yet bearing an air of

ease which almost amounted to dignity, and which seemed to infer that

his habit was rather beneath his rank. His countenance was reserved and

thoughtful, with dark hair and dark eyes; the last, upon any momentary

excitement, sparkled with uncommon lustre, but on other occasions

had the same meditative and tranquil cast which was exhibited by his

features. The busy curiosity of the little village had been employed to

discover his name and quality, as well as his business at Cumnor;

but nothing had transpired on either subject which could lead to its

gratification. Giles Gosling, head-borough of the place, and a steady

friend to Queen Elizabeth and the Protestant religion, was at one time

inclined to suspect his guest of being a Jesuit, or seminary priest, of

whom Rome and Spain sent at this time so many to grace the gallows

in England. But it was scarce possible to retain such a prepossession

against a guest who gave so little trouble, paid his reckoning so

regularly, and who proposed, as it seemed, to make a considerable stay

at the bonny Black Bear.

"Papists," argued Giles Gosling, "are a pinching, close-fisted race,

and this man would have found a lodging with the wealthy squire at

Bessellsey, or with the old Knight at Wootton, or in some other of their

Roman dens, instead of living in a house of public entertainment, as

every honest man and good Christian should. Besides, on Friday he stuck

by the salt beef and carrot, though there were as good spitch-cocked

eels on the board as ever were ta'en out of the Isis."

Honest Giles, therefore, satisfied himself that his guest was no Roman,

and with all comely courtesy besought the stranger to pledge him in

a draught of the cool tankard, and honour with his attention a small

collation which he was giving to his nephew, in honour of his return,

and, as he verily hoped, of his reformation. The stranger at first shook

his head, as if declining the courtesy; but mine host proceeded to

urge him with arguments founded on the credit of his house, and the

construction which the good people of Cumnor might put upon such an

unsocial humour.

"By my faith, sir," he said, "it touches my reputation that men should

be merry in my house; and we have ill tongues amongst us at Cumnor (as

where be there not?), who put an evil mark on men who pull their hat

over their brows, as if they were looking back to the days that are

gone, instead of enjoying the blithe sunshiny weather which God has sent

us in the sweet looks of our sovereign mistress, Queen Elizabeth, whom

Heaven long bless and preserve!"

"Why, mine host," answered the stranger, "there is no treason, sure, in

a man's enjoying his own thoughts, under the shadow of his own bonnet?

You have lived in the world twice as long as I have, and you must know

there are thoughts that will haunt us in spite of ourselves, and to

which it is in vain to say, Begone, and let me be merry."

"By my sooth," answered Giles Gosling, "if such troublesome thoughts

haunt your mind, and will not get them gone for plain English, we will

have one of Father Bacon's pupils from Oxford, to conjure them away with

logic and with Hebrew--or, what say you to laying them in a glorious red

sea of claret, my noble guest? Come, sir, excuse my freedom. I am an old

host, and must have my talk. This peevish humour of melancholy sits ill

upon you; it suits not with a sleek boot, a hat of trim block, a fresh

cloak, and a full purse. A pize on it! send it off to those who have

their legs swathed with a hay-wisp, their heads thatched with a felt

bonnet, their jerkin as thin as a cobweb, and their pouch without ever

a cross to keep the fiend Melancholy from dancing in it. Cheer up,

sir! or, by this good liquor, we shall banish thee from the joys

of blithesome company, into the mists of melancholy and the land of

little-ease. Here be a set of good fellows willing to be merry; do not

scowl on them like the devil looking over Lincoln."

"You say well, my worthy host," said the guest, with a melancholy smile,

which, melancholy as it was, gave a very pleasant: expression to his

countenance--"you say well, my jovial friend; and they that are moody

like myself should not disturb the mirth of those who are happy. I will

drink a round with your guests with all my heart, rather than be termed

a mar-feast."

So saying, he arose and joined the company, who, encouraged by the

precept and example of Michael Lambourne, and consisting chiefly of

persons much disposed to profit by the opportunity of a merry meal at

the expense of their landlord, had already made some inroads upon the

limits of temperance, as was evident from the tone in which Michael

inquired after his old acquaintances in the town, and the bursts of

laughter with which each answer was received. Giles Gosling himself

was somewhat scandalized at the obstreperous nature of their mirth,

especially as he involuntarily felt some respect for his unknown guest.

He paused, therefore, at some distance from the table occupied by these

noisy revellers, and began to make a sort of apology for their license.

"You would think," he said, "to hear these fellows talk, that there was

not one of them who had not been bred to live by Stand and Deliver; and

yet tomorrow you will find them a set of as painstaking mechanics, and

so forth, as ever cut an inch short of measure, or paid a letter of

change in light crowns over a counter. The mercer there wears his hat

awry, over a shaggy head of hair, that looks like a curly water-dog's

back, goes unbraced, wears his cloak on one side, and affects a

ruffianly vapouring humour: when in his shop at Abingdon, he is, from

his flat cap to his glistening shoes, as precise in his apparel as if he

was named for mayor. He talks of breaking parks, and taking the highway,

in such fashion that you would think he haunted every night betwixt

Hounslow and London; when in fact he may be found sound asleep on his

feather-bed, with a candle placed beside him on one side, and a Bible on

the other, to fright away the goblins."

"And your nephew, mine host, this same Michael Lambourne, who is lord of

the feast--is he, too, such a would-be ruffler as the rest of them?"

"Why, there you push me hard," said the host; "my nephew is my nephew,

and though he was a desperate Dick of yore, yet Mike may have mended

like other folks, you wot. And I would not have you think all I said

of him, even now, was strict gospel; I knew the wag all the while, and

wished to pluck his plumes from him. And now, sir, by what name shall I

present my worshipful guest to these gallants?"

"Marry, mine host," replied the stranger, "you may call me Tressilian."

"Tressilian?" answered mine host of the Bear. "A worthy name, and, as I

think, of Cornish lineage; for what says the south proverb--

'By Pol, Tre, and Pen,

You may know the Cornish men.'

Shall I say the worthy Master Tressilian of Cornwall?"

"Say no more than I have given you warrant for, mine host, and so shall

you be sure you speak no more than is true. A man may have one of those

honourable prefixes to his name, yet be born far from Saint Michael's

Mount."

Mine host pushed his curiosity no further, but presented Master

Tressilian to his nephew's company, who, after exchange of salutations,

and drinking to the health of their new companion, pursued the

conversation in which he found them engaged, seasoning it with many an

intervening pledge.

CHAPTER II.

Talk you of young Master Lancelot? --MERCHANT OF VENICE.

After some brief interval, Master Goldthred, at the earnest instigation

of mine host, and the joyous concurrence of his guest, indulged the

company with, the following morsel of melody:--

"Of all the birds on bush or tree,

Commend me to the owl,

Since he may best ensample be

To those the cup that trowl.

For when the sun hath left the west,

He chooses the tree that he loves the best,

And he whoops out his song, and he laughs at his jest;

Then, though hours be late and weather foul,

We'll drink to the health of the bonny, bonny owl.

"The lark is but a bumpkin fowl,

He sleeps in his nest till morn;

But my blessing upon the jolly owl,

That all night blows his horn.

Then up with your cup till you stagger in speech,

And match me this catch till you swagger and screech,

And drink till you wink, my merry men each;

For, though hours be late and weather be foul,

We'll drink to the health of the bonny, bonny owl."

"There is savour in this, my hearts," said Michael, when the mercer had

finished his song, "and some goodness seems left among you yet; but what

a bead-roll you have read me of old comrades, and to every man's name

tacked some ill-omened motto! And so Swashing Will of Wallingford hath

bid us good-night?"

"He died the death of a fat buck," said one of the party, "being shot

with a crossbow bolt, by old Thatcham, the Duke's stout park-keeper at

Donnington Castle."

"Ay, ay, he always loved venison well," replied Michael, "and a cup

of claret to boot--and so here's one to his memory. Do me right, my

masters."

When the memory of this departed worthy had been duly honoured,

Lambourne proceeded to inquire after Prance of Padworth.

"Pranced off--made immortal ten years since," said the mercer; "marry,

sir, Oxford Castle and Goodman Thong, and a tenpenny-worth of cord, best

know how."

"What, so they hung poor Prance high and dry? so much for loving to walk

by moonlight. A cup to his memory, my masters-all merry fellows like

moonlight. What has become of Hal with the Plume--he who lived near

Yattenden, and wore the long feather?--I forget his name."

"What, Hal Hempseed?" replied the mercer. "Why, you may remember he was

a sort of a gentleman, and would meddle in state matters, and so he

got into the mire about the Duke of Norfolk's affair these two or three

years since, fled the country with a pursuivant's warrant at his heels,

and has never since been heard of."

"Nay, after these baulks," said Michael Lambourne, "I need hardly

inquire after Tony Foster; for when ropes, and crossbow shafts, and

pursuivant's warrants, and such-like gear, were so rife, Tony could

hardly 'scape them."

"Which Tony Foster mean you?" said the innkeeper.

"Why, him they called Tony Fire-the-Fagot, because he brought a light

to kindle the pile round Latimer and Ridley, when the wind blew out Jack

Thong's torch, and no man else would give him light for love or money."

"Tony Foster lives and thrives," said the host. "But, kinsman, I would

not have you call him Tony Fire-the-Fagot, if you would not brook the

stab."

"How! is he grown ashamed on't?" said Lambourne, "Why, he was wont to

boast of it, and say he liked as well to see a roasted heretic as a

roasted ox."

"Ay, but, kinsman, that was in Mary's time," replied the landlord, "when

Tony's father was reeve here to the Abbot of Abingdon. But since that,

Tony married a pure precisian, and is as good a Protestant, I warrant

you, as the best."

"And looks grave, and holds his head high, and scorns his old

companions," said the mercer.

"Then he hath prospered, I warrant him," said Lambourne; "for ever when

a man hath got nobles of his own, he keeps out of the way of those whose

exchequers lie in other men's purchase."

"Prospered, quotha!" said the mercer; "why, you remember Cumnor Place,

the old mansion-house beside the churchyard?"

"By the same token, I robbed the orchard three times--what of that?

It was the old abbot's residence when there was plague or sickness at

Abingdon."

"Ay," said the host, "but that has been long over; and Anthony Foster

hath a right in it, and lives there by some grant from a great courtier,

who had the church-lands from the crown. And there he dwells, and has

as little to do with any poor wight in Cumnor, as if he were himself a

belted knight."

"Nay," said the mercer, "it is not altogether pride in Tony neither;

there is a fair lady in the case, and Tony will scarce let the light of

day look on her."

"How!" said Tressilian, who now for the first time interfered in

their conversation; "did ye not say this Foster was married, and to a

precisian?"

"Married he was, and to as bitter a precisian as ever ate flesh in Lent;

and a cat-and-dog life she led with Tony, as men said. But she is dead,

rest be with her! and Tony hath but a slip of a daughter; so it is

thought he means to wed this stranger, that men keep such a coil about."

"And why so?--I mean, why do they keep a coil about her?" said

Tressilian.

"Why, I wot not," answered the host, "except that men say she is as

beautiful as an angel, and no one knows whence she comes, and every one

wishes to know why she is kept so closely mewed up. For my part, I never

saw her--you have, I think, Master Goldthred?"

"That I have, old boy," said the mercer. "Look you, I was riding hither

from Abingdon. I passed under the east oriel window of the old mansion,

where all the old saints and histories and such-like are painted. It was

not the common path I took, but one through the Park; for the postern

door was upon the latch, and I thought I might take the privilege of an

old comrade to ride across through the trees, both for shading, as the

day was somewhat hot, and for avoiding of dust, because I had on my

peach-coloured doublet, pinked out with cloth of gold."

"Which garment," said Michael Lambourne, "thou wouldst willingly make

twinkle in the eyes of a fair dame. Ah! villain, thou wilt never leave

thy old tricks."

"Not so-not so," said the mercer, with a smirking laugh--"not altogether

so--but curiosity, thou knowest, and a strain of compassion withal; for

the poor young lady sees nothing from morn to even but Tony Foster, with

his scowling black brows, his bull's head, and his bandy legs."

"And thou wouldst willingly show her a dapper body, in a silken

jerkin--a limb like a short-legged hen's, in a cordovan boot--and a

round, simpering, what-d'ye-lack sort of a countenance, set off with a

velvet bonnet, a Turkey feather, and a gilded brooch? Ah! jolly mercer,

they who have good wares are fond to show them!--Come, gentles, let

not the cup stand--here's to long spurs, short boots, full bonnets, and

empty skulls!"

"Nay, now, you are jealous of me, Mike," said Goldthred; "and yet my

luck was but what might have happened to thee, or any man."

"Marry confound thine impudence," retorted Lambourne; "thou wouldst not

compare thy pudding face, and sarsenet manners, to a gentleman, and a

soldier?"

"Nay, my good sir," said Tressilian, "let me beseech you will not

interrupt the gallant citizen; methinks he tells his tale so well, I

could hearken to him till midnight."

"It's more of your favour than of my desert," answered Master Goldthred;

"but since I give you pleasure, worthy Master Tressilian, I shall

proceed, maugre all the gibes and quips of this valiant soldier, who,

peradventure, hath had more cuffs than crowns in the Low Countries. And

so, sir, as I passed under the great painted window, leaving my rein

loose on my ambling palfrey's neck, partly for mine ease, and partly

that I might have the more leisure to peer about, I hears me the lattice

open; and never credit me, sir, if there did not stand there the person

of as fair a woman as ever crossed mine eyes; and I think I have looked

on as many pretty wenches, and with as much judgment, as other folks."

"May I ask her appearance, sir?" said Tressilian.

"Oh, sir," replied Master Goldthred, "I promise you, she was in

gentlewoman's attire--a very quaint and pleasing dress, that might have

served the Queen herself; for she had a forepart with body and sleeves,

of ginger-coloured satin, which, in my judgment, must have cost by the

yard some thirty shillings, lined with murrey taffeta, and laid down and

guarded with two broad laces of gold and silver. And her hat, sir, was

truly the best fashioned thing that I have seen in these parts, being of

tawny taffeta, embroidered with scorpions of Venice gold, and having a

border garnished with gold fringe--I promise you, sir, an absolute

and all-surpassing device. Touching her skirts, they were in the old

pass-devant fashion."

"I did not ask you of her attire, sir," said Tressilian, who had shown

some impatience during this conversation, "but of her complexion--the

colour of her hair, her features."

"Touching her complexion," answered the mercer, "I am not so special

certain, but I marked that her fan had an ivory handle, curiously

inlaid. And then again, as to the colour of her hair, why, I can

warrant, be its hue what it might, that she wore above it a net of green

silk, parcel twisted with gold."

"A most mercer-like memory!" said Lambourne. "The gentleman asks him of

the lady's beauty, and he talks of her fine clothes!"

"I tell thee," said the mercer, somewhat disconcerted, "I had little

time to look at her; for just as I was about to give her the good time

of day, and for that purpose had puckered my features with a smile--"

"Like those of a jackanape simpering at a chestnut," said Michael

Lambourne.

"Up started of a sudden," continued Goldthred, without heeding the

interruption, "Tony Foster himself, with a cudgel in his hand--"

"And broke thy head across, I hope, for thine impertinence," said his

entertainer.

"That were more easily said than done," answered Goldthred indignantly;

"no, no--there was no breaking of heads. It's true, he advanced his

cudgel, and spoke of laying on, and asked why I did not keep the

public road, and such like; and I would have knocked him over the pate

handsomely for his pains, only for the lady's presence, who might have

swooned, for what I know."

"Now, out upon thee for a faint-spirited slave!" said Lambourne; "what

adventurous knight ever thought of the lady's terror, when he went

to thwack giant, dragon, or magician, in her presence, and for her

deliverance? But why talk to thee of dragons, who would be driven back

by a dragon-fly. There thou hast missed the rarest opportunity!"

"Take it thyself, then, bully Mike," answered Goldthred. "Yonder is the

enchanted manor, and the dragon, and the lady, all at thy service, if

thou darest venture on them."

"Why, so I would for a quartern of sack," said the soldier--"or stay: I

am foully out of linen--wilt thou bet a piece of Hollands against these

five angels, that I go not up to the Hall to-morrow and force Tony

Foster to introduce me to his fair guest?"

"I accept your wager," said the mercer; "and I think, though thou hadst

even the impudence of the devil, I shall gain on thee this bout. Our

landlord here shall hold stakes, and I will stake down gold till I send

the linen."

"I will hold stakes on no such matter," said Gosling. "Good now, my

kinsman, drink your wine in quiet, and let such ventures alone. I

promise you, Master Foster hath interest enough to lay you up in

lavender in the Castle at Oxford, or to get your legs made acquainted

with the town-stocks."

"That would be but renewing an old intimacy, for Mike's shins and the

town's wooden pinfold have been well known to each other ere now," said

the mercer; "but he shall not budge from his wager, unless he means to

pay forfeit."

"Forfeit?" said Lambourne; "I scorn it. I value Tony Foster's wrath no

more than a shelled pea-cod; and I will visit his Lindabrides, by Saint

George, be he willing or no!"

"I would gladly pay your halves of the risk, sir," said Tressilian, "to

be permitted to accompany you on the adventure."

"In what would that advantage you, sir?" answered Lambourne.

"In nothing, sir," said Tressilian, "unless to mark the skill and valour

with which you conduct yourself. I am a traveller who seeks for strange

rencounters and uncommon passages, as the knights of yore did after

adventures and feats of arms."

"Nay, if it pleasures you to see a trout tickled," answered Lambourne,

"I care not how many witness my skill. And so here I drink success to my

enterprise; and he that will not pledge me on his knees is a rascal, and

I will cut his legs off by the garters!"

The draught which Michael Lambourne took upon this occasion had been

preceded by so many others, that reason tottered on her throne. He

swore one or two incoherent oaths at the mercer, who refused, reasonably

enough, to pledge him to a sentiment which inferred the loss of his own

wager.

"Wilt thou chop logic with me," said Lambourne, "thou knave, with no

more brains than are in a skein of ravelled silk? By Heaven, I will cut

thee into fifty yards of galloon lace!"

But as he attempted to draw his sword for this doughty purpose, Michael

Lambourne was seized upon by the tapster and the chamberlain, and

conveyed to his own apartment, there to sleep himself sober at his

leisure.

The party then broke up, and the guests took their leave; much more

to the contentment of mine host than of some of the company, who were

unwilling to quit good liquor, when it was to be had for free cost, so

long as they were able to sit by it. They were, however, compelled to

remove; and go at length they did, leaving Gosling and Tressilian in the

empty apartment.

"By my faith," said the former, "I wonder where our great folks find

pleasure, when they spend their means in entertainments, and in playing

mine host without sending in a reckoning. It is what I but rarely

practise; and whenever I do, by Saint Julian, it grieves me beyond

measure. Each of these empty stoups now, which my nephew and his drunken

comrades have swilled off, should have been a matter of profit to one in

my line, and I must set them down a dead loss. I cannot, for my heart,

conceive the pleasure of noise, and nonsense, and drunken freaks, and

drunken quarrels, and smut, and blasphemy, and so forth, when a man

loses money instead of gaining by it. And yet many a fair estate is lost

in upholding such a useless course, and that greatly contributes to the

decay of publicans; for who the devil do you think would pay for drink

at the Black Bear, when he can have it for nothing at my Lord's or the

Squire's?"

Tressilian perceived that the wine had made some impression even on the

seasoned brain of mine host, which was chiefly to be inferred from his

declaiming against drunkenness. As he himself had carefully avoided the

bowl, he would have availed himself of the frankness of the moment

to extract from Gosling some further information upon the subject

of Anthony Foster, and the lady whom the mercer had seen in his

mansion-house; but his inquiries only set the host upon a new theme of

declamation against the wiles of the fair sex, in which he brought, at

full length, the whole wisdom of Solomon to reinforce his own. Finally,

he turned his admonitions, mixed with much objurgation, upon his

tapsters and drawers, who were employed in removing the relics of the

entertainment, and restoring order to the apartment; and at length,

joining example to precept, though with no good success, he demolished

a salver with half a score of glasses, in attempting to show how such

service was done at the Three Cranes in the Vintry, then the most

topping tavern in London. This last accident so far recalled him to his

better self, that he retired to his bed, slept sound, and awoke a new

man in the morning.

CHAPTER III.

Nay, I'll hold touch--the game shall be play'd out;

It ne'er shall stop for me, this merry wager:

That which I say when gamesome, I'll avouch

In my most sober mood, ne'er trust me else. THE HAZARD TABLE.

"And how doth your kinsman, good mine host?" said Tressilian, when Giles

Gosling first appeared in the public room, on the morning following the

revel which we described in the last chapter. "Is he well, and will he

abide by his wager?"

"For well, sir, he started two hours since, and has visited I know not

what purlieus of his old companions; hath but now returned, and is at

this instant breakfasting on new-laid eggs and muscadine. And for his

wager, I caution you as a friend to have little to do with that, or

indeed with aught that Mike proposes. Wherefore, I counsel you to a warm

breakfast upon a culiss, which shall restore the tone of the stomach;

and let my nephew and Master Goldthred swagger about their wager as they

list."

"It seems to me, mine host," said Tressilian, "that you know not well

what to say about this kinsman of yours, and that you can neither blame

nor commend him without some twinge of conscience."

"You have spoken truly, Master Tressilian," replied Giles Gosling.

"There is Natural Affection whimpering into one ear, 'Giles, Giles, why

wilt thou take away the good name of thy own nephew? Wilt thou defame

thy sister's son, Giles Gosling? wilt thou defoul thine own nest,

dishonour thine own blood?' And then, again, comes Justice, and says,

'Here is a worthy guest as ever came to the bonny Black Bear; one who

never challenged a reckoning' (as I say to your face you never did,

Master Tressilian--not that you have had cause), 'one who knows not why

he came, so far as I can see, or when he is going away; and wilt thou,

being a publican, having paid scot and lot these thirty years in the

town of Cumnor, and being at this instant head-borough, wilt thou suffer

this guest of guests, this man of men, this six-hooped pot (as I may

say) of a traveller, to fall into the meshes of thy nephew, who is known

for a swasher and a desperate Dick, a carder and a dicer, a professor of

the seven damnable sciences, if ever man took degrees in them?' No,

by Heaven! I might wink, and let him catch such a small butterfly as

Goldthred; but thou, my guest, shall be forewarned, forearmed, so thou

wilt but listen to thy trusty host."

"Why, mine host, thy counsel shall not be cast away," replied

Tressilian; "however, I must uphold my share in this wager, having once

passed my word to that effect. But lend me, I pray, some of thy counsel.

This Foster, who or what is he, and why makes he such mystery of his

female inmate?"

"Troth," replied Gosling, "I can add but little to what you heard last

night. He was one of Queen Mary's Papists, and now he is one of Queen

Elizabeth's Protestants; he was an onhanger of the Abbot of Abingdon;

and now he lives as master of the Manor-house. Above all, he was

poor, and is rich. Folk talk of private apartments in his old waste

mansion-house, bedizened fine enough to serve the Queen, God bless her!

Some men think he found a treasure in the orchard, some that he sold

himself to the devil for treasure, and some say that he cheated the

abbot out of the church plate, which was hidden in the old Manor-house

at the Reformation. Rich, however, he is, and God and his conscience,

with the devil perhaps besides, only know how he came by it. He has

sulky ways too--breaking off intercourse with all that are of the place,

as if he had either some strange secret to keep, or held himself to be

made of another clay than we are. I think it likely my kinsman and he

will quarrel, if Mike thrust his acquaintance on him; and I am sorry

that you, my worthy Master Tressilian, will still think of going in my

nephew's company."

Tressilian again answered him, that he would proceed with great caution,

and that he should have no fears on his account; in short, he bestowed

on him all the customary assurances with which those who are determined

on a rash action are wont to parry the advice of their friends.

Meantime, the traveller accepted the landlord's invitation, and had just

finished the excellent breakfast, which was served to him and Gosling

by pretty Cicely, the beauty of the bar, when the hero of the preceding

night, Michael Lambourne, entered the apartment. His toilet had

apparently cost him some labour, for his clothes, which differed from

those he wore on his journey, were of the newest fashion, and put on

with great attention to the display of his person.

"By my faith, uncle," said the gallant, "you made a wet night of it, and

I feel it followed by a dry morning. I will pledge you willingly in a

cup of bastard.--How, my pretty coz Cicely! why, I left you but a child

in the cradle, and there thou stand'st in thy velvet waistcoat, as tight

a girl as England's sun shines on. Know thy friends and kindred,

Cicely, and come hither, child, that I may kiss thee, and give thee my

blessing."

"Concern not yourself about Cicely, kinsman," said Giles Gosling, "but

e'en let her go her way, a' God's name; for although your mother were

her father's sister, yet that shall not make you and her cater-cousins."

"Why, uncle," replied Lambourne, "think'st thou I am an infidel, and

would harm those of mine own house?"

"It is for no harm that I speak, Mike," answered his uncle, "but a

simple humour of precaution which I have. True, thou art as well gilded

as a snake when he casts his old slough in the spring time; but for all

that, thou creepest not into my Eden. I will look after mine Eve, Mike,

and so content thee.--But how brave thou be'st, lad! To look on thee

now, and compare thee with Master Tressilian here, in his sad-coloured

riding-suit, who would not say that thou wert the real gentleman and he

the tapster's boy?"

"Troth, uncle," replied Lambourne, "no one would say so but one of your

country-breeding, that knows no better. I will say, and I care not who

hears me, there is something about the real gentry that few men come up

to that are not born and bred to the mystery. I wot not where the trick

lies; but although I can enter an ordinary with as much audacity, rebuke

the waiters and drawers as loudly, drink as deep a health, swear as

round an oath, and fling my gold as freely about as any of the jingling

spurs and white feathers that are around me, yet, hang me if I can ever

catch the true grace of it, though I have practised an hundred times.

The man of the house sets me lowest at the board, and carves to me the

last; and the drawer says, 'Coming, friend,' without any more reverence

or regardful addition. But, hang it, let it pass; care killed a cat. I

have gentry enough to pass the trick on Tony Fire-the-Faggot, and that

will do for the matter in hand."

"You hold your purpose, then, of visiting your old acquaintance?" said

Tressilian to the adventurer.

"Ay, sir," replied Lambourne; "when stakes are made, the game must be

played; that is gamester's law, all over the world. You, sir, unless

my memory fails me (for I did steep it somewhat too deeply in the

sack-butt), took some share in my hazard?"

"I propose to accompany you in your adventure," said Tressilian, "if you

will do me so much grace as to permit me; and I have staked my share of

the forfeit in the hands of our worthy host."

"That he hath," answered Giles Gosling, "in as fair Harry-nobles as ever

were melted into sack by a good fellow. So, luck to your enterprise,

since you will needs venture on Tony Foster; but, by my credit, you had

better take another draught before you depart, for your welcome at

the Hall yonder will be somewhat of the driest. And if you do get into

peril, beware of taking to cold steel; but send for me, Giles Gosling,

the head-borough, and I may be able to make something out of Tony yet,

for as proud as he is."

The nephew dutifully obeyed his uncle's hint, by taking a second

powerful pull at the tankard, observing that his wit never served him

so well as when he had washed his temples with a deep morning's draught;

and they set forth together for the habitation of Anthony Foster.

The village of Cumnor is pleasantly built on a hill, and in a wooded

park closely adjacent was situated the ancient mansion occupied at this

time by Anthony Foster, of which the ruins may be still extant. The park

was then full of large trees, and in particular of ancient and mighty

oaks, which stretched their giant arms over the high wall surrounding

the demesne, thus giving it a melancholy, secluded, and monastic

appearance. The entrance to the park lay through an old-fashioned

gateway in the outer wall, the door of which was formed of two huge

oaken leaves thickly studded with nails, like the gate of an old town.

"We shall be finely helped up here," said Michael Lambourne, looking at

the gateway and gate, "if this fellow's suspicious humour should

refuse us admission altogether, as it is like he may, in case this

linsey-wolsey fellow of a mercer's visit to his premises has disquieted

him. But, no," he added, pushing the huge gate, which gave way, "the

door stands invitingly open; and here we are within the forbidden

ground, without other impediment than the passive resistance of a heavy

oak door moving on rusty hinges."

They stood now in an avenue overshadowed by such old trees as we have

described, and which had been bordered at one time by high hedges of yew

and holly. But these, having been untrimmed for many years, had run up

into great bushes, or rather dwarf-trees, and now encroached, with their

dark and melancholy boughs, upon the road which they once had screened.

The avenue itself was grown up with grass, and, in one or two places,

interrupted by piles of withered brushwood, which had been lopped from

the trees cut down in the neighbouring park, and was here stacked for

drying. Formal walks and avenues, which, at different points, crossed

this principal approach, were, in like manner, choked up and interrupted

by piles of brushwood and billets, and in other places by underwood and

brambles. Besides the general effect of desolation which is so strongly

impressed whenever we behold the contrivances of man wasted and

obliterated by neglect, and witness the marks of social life effaced

gradually by the influence of vegetation, the size of the trees and the

outspreading extent of their boughs diffused a gloom over the scene,

even when the sun was at the highest, and made a proportional impression

on the mind of those who visited it. This was felt even by Michael

Lambourne, however alien his habits were to receiving any impressions,

excepting from things which addressed themselves immediately to his

passions.

"This wood is as dark as a wolf's mouth," said he to Tressilian, as they

walked together slowly along the solitary and broken approach, and had

just come in sight of the monastic front of the old mansion, with its

shafted windows, brick walls overgrown with ivy and creeping shrubs,

and twisted stalks of chimneys of heavy stone-work. "And yet," continued

Lambourne, "it is fairly done on the part of Foster too for since he

chooses not visitors, it is right to keep his place in a fashion that

will invite few to trespass upon his privacy. But had he been the

Anthony I once knew him, these sturdy oaks had long since become the

property of some honest woodmonger, and the manor-close here had looked

lighter at midnight than it now does at noon, while Foster played fast

and loose with the price, in some cunning corner in the purlieus of

Whitefriars."

"Was he then such an unthrift?" asked Tressilian.

"He was," answered Lambourne, "like the rest of us, no saint, and no

saver. But what I liked worst of Tony was, that he loved to take his

pleasure by himself, and grudged, as men say, every drop of water that

went past his own mill. I have known him deal with such measures of wine

when he was alone, as I would not have ventured on with aid of the best

toper in Berkshire;--that, and some sway towards superstition, which he

had by temperament, rendered him unworthy the company of a good fellow.

And now he has earthed himself here, in a den just befitting such a sly

fox as himself."

"May I ask you, Master Lambourne," said Tressilian, "since your old

companion's humour jumps so little with your own, wherefore you are so

desirous to renew acquaintance with him?"

"And may I ask you, in return, Master Tressilian," answered Lambourne,

"wherefore you have shown yourself so desirous to accompany me on this

party?"

"I told you my motive," said Tressilian, "when I took share in your

wager--it was simple curiosity."

"La you there now!" answered Lambourne. "See how you civil and discreet

gentlemen think to use us who live by the free exercise of our wits! Had

I answered your question by saying that it was simple curiosity which

led me to visit my old comrade Anthony Foster, I warrant you had set it

down for an evasion, and a turn of my trade. But any answer, I suppose,

must serve my turn."

"And wherefore should not bare curiosity," said Tressilian, "be a

sufficient reason for my taking this walk with you?"

"Oh, content yourself, sir," replied Lambourne; "you cannot put

the change on me so easy as you think, for I have lived among the

quick-stirring spirits of the age too long to swallow chaff for grain.

You are a gentleman of birth and breeding--your bearing makes it good;

of civil habits and fair reputation--your manners declare it, and

my uncle avouches it; and yet you associate yourself with a sort of

scant-of-grace, as men call me, and, knowing me to be such, you make

yourself my companion in a visit to a man whom you are a stranger

to--and all out of mere curiosity, forsooth! The excuse, if curiously

balanced, would be found to want some scruples of just weight, or so."

"If your suspicions were just," said Tressilian, "you have shown no

confidence in me to invite or deserve mine."

"Oh, if that be all," said Lambourne, "my motives lie above water. While

this gold of mine lasts"--taking out his purse, chucking it into the

air, and catching it as it fell--"I will make it buy pleasure; and

when it is out I must have more. Now, if this mysterious Lady of the

Manor--this fair Lindabrides of Tony Fire-the-Fagot--be so admirable a

piece as men say, why, there is a chance that she may aid me to melt

my nobles into greats; and, again, if Anthony be so wealthy a chuff

as report speaks him, he may prove the philosopher's stone to me, and

convert my greats into fair rose-nobles again."

"A comfortable proposal truly," said Tressilian; "but I see not what

chance there is of accomplishing it."

"Not to-day, or perchance to-morrow," answered Lambourne; "I expect not

to catch the old jack till. I have disposed my ground-baits handsomely.

But I know something more of his affairs this morning than I did last

night, and I will so use my knowledge that he shall think it more

perfect than it is. Nay, without expecting either pleasure or profit, or

both, I had not stepped a stride within this manor, I can tell you; for

I promise you I hold our visit not altogether without risk.--But here we

are, and we must make the best on't."

While he thus spoke, they had entered a large orchard which surrounded

the house on two sides, though the trees, abandoned by the care of man,

were overgrown and messy, and seemed to bear little fruit. Those which

had been formerly trained as espaliers had now resumed their natural

mode of growing, and exhibited grotesque forms, partaking of the

original training which they had received. The greater part of the

ground, which had once been parterres and flower-gardens, was suffered

in like manner to run to waste, excepting a few patches which had been

dug up and planted with ordinary pot herbs. Some statues, which had

ornamented the garden in its days of splendour, were now thrown down

from their pedestals and broken in pieces; and a large summer-house,

having a heavy stone front, decorated with carving representing the life

and actions of Samson, was in the same dilapidated condition.

They had just traversed this garden of the sluggard, and were within

a few steps of the door of the mansion, when Lambourne had ceased

speaking; a circumstance very agreeable to Tressilian, as it saved him

the embarrassment of either commenting upon or replying to the frank

avowal which his companion had just made of the sentiments and views

which induced him to come hither. Lambourne knocked roundly and boldly

at the huge door of the mansion, observing, at the same time, he had

seen a less strong one upon a county jail. It was not until they had

knocked more than once that an aged, sour-visaged domestic reconnoitred

them through a small square hole in the door, well secured with bars of

iron, and demanded what they wanted.

"To speak with Master Foster instantly, on pressing business of the

state," was the ready reply of Michael Lambourne.

"Methinks you will find difficulty to make that good," said Tressilian

in a whisper to his companion, while the servant went to carry the

message to his master.

"Tush," replied the adventurer; "no soldier would go on were he

always to consider when and how he should come off. Let us once obtain

entrance, and all will go well enough."

In a short time the servant returned, and drawing with a careful hand

both bolt and bar, opened the gate, which admitted them through an

archway into a square court, surrounded by buildings. Opposite to the

arch was another door, which the serving-man in like manner unlocked,

and thus introduced them into a stone-paved parlour, where there was but

little furniture, and that of the rudest and most ancient fashion. The

windows were tall and ample, reaching almost to the roof of the room,

which was composed of black oak; those opening to the quadrangle were

obscured by the height of the surrounding buildings, and, as they were

traversed with massive shafts of solid stone-work, and thickly painted

with religious devices, and scenes taken from Scripture history, by no

means admitted light in proportion to their size, and what did penetrate

through them partook of the dark and gloomy tinge of the stained glass.

Tressilian and his guide had time enough to observe all these

particulars, for they waited some space in the apartment ere the present

master of the mansion at length made his appearance. Prepared as he was

to see an inauspicious and ill-looking person, the ugliness of Anthony

Foster considerably exceeded what Tressilian had anticipated. He was

of middle stature, built strongly, but so clumsily as to border on

deformity, and to give all his motions the ungainly awkwardness of a

left-legged and left-handed man. His hair, in arranging which men at

that time, as at present, were very nice and curious, instead of being

carefully cleaned and disposed into short curls, or else set up on end,

as is represented in old paintings, in a manner resembling that used by

fine gentlemen of our own day, escaped in sable negligence from under

a furred bonnet, and hung in elf-locks, which seemed strangers to

the comb, over his rugged brows, and around his very singular and

unprepossessing countenance. His keen, dark eyes were deep set beneath

broad and shaggy eyebrows, and as they were usually bent on the ground,

seemed as if they were themselves ashamed of the expression natural to

them, and were desirous to conceal it from the observation of men.

At times, however, when, more intent on observing others, he suddenly

raised them, and fixed them keenly on those with whom he conversed, they

seemed to express both the fiercer passions, and the power of mind which

could at will suppress or disguise the intensity of inward feeling.

The features which corresponded with these eyes and this form were

irregular, and marked so as to be indelibly fixed on the mind of him

who had once seen them. Upon the whole, as Tressilian could not help

acknowledging to himself, the Anthony Foster who now stood before them

was the last person, judging from personal appearance, upon whom one

would have chosen to intrude an unexpected and undesired visit. His

attire was a doublet of russet leather, like those worn by the better

sort of country folk, girt with a buff belt, in which was stuck on the

right side a long knife, or dudgeon dagger, and on the other a

cutlass. He raised his eyes as he entered the room, and fixed a keenly

penetrating glance upon his two visitors; then cast them down as if

counting his steps, while he advanced slowly into the middle of the

room, and said, in a low and smothered tone of voice, "Let me pray you,

gentlemen, to tell me the cause of this visit."

He looked as if he expected the answer from Tressilian, so true was

Lambourne's observation that the superior air of breeding and dignity

shone through the disguise of an inferior dress. But it was Michael who

replied to him, with the easy familiarity of an old friend, and a tone

which seemed unembarrassed by any doubt of the most cordial reception.

"Ha! my dear friend and ingle, Tony Foster!" he exclaimed, seizing

upon the unwilling hand, and shaking it with such emphasis as almost to

stagger the sturdy frame of the person whom he addressed, "how fares it

with you for many a long year? What! have you altogether forgotten your

friend, gossip, and playfellow, Michael Lambourne?"

"Michael Lambourne!" said Foster, looking at him a moment; then dropping

his eyes, and with little ceremony extricating his hand from the

friendly grasp of the person by whom he was addressed, "are you Michael

Lambourne?"

"Ay; sure as you are Anthony Foster," replied Lambourne.

"'Tis well," answered his sullen host. "And what may Michael Lambourne

expect from his visit hither?"

"VOTO A DIOS," answered Lambourne, "I expected a better welcome than I

am like to meet, I think."

"Why, thou gallows-bird--thou jail-rat--thou friend of the hangman

and his customers!" replied Foster, "hast thou the assurance to expect

countenance from any one whose neck is beyond the compass of a Tyburn

tippet?"

"It may be with me as you say," replied Lambourne; "and suppose I grant

it to be so for argument's sake, I were still good enough society

for mine ancient friend Anthony Fire-the-Fagot, though he be, for the

present, by some indescribable title, the master of Cumnor Place."

"Hark you, Michael Lambourne," said Foster; "you are a gambler now, and

live by the counting of chances--compute me the odds that I do not, on

this instant, throw you out of that window into the ditch there."

"Twenty to one that you do not," answered the sturdy visitor.

"And wherefore, I pray you?" demanded Anthony Foster, setting his teeth

and compressing his lips, like one who endeavours to suppress some

violent internal emotion.

"Because," said Lambourne coolly, "you dare not for your life lay a

finger on me. I am younger and stronger than you, and have in me a

double portion of the fighting devil, though not, it may be, quite so

much of the undermining fiend, that finds an underground way to his

purpose--who hides halters under folk's pillows, and who puts rats-bane

into their porridge, as the stage-play says."

Foster looked at him earnestly, then turned away, and paced the room

twice with the same steady and considerate pace with which he had

entered it; then suddenly came back, and extended his hand to Michael

Lambourne, saying, "Be not wroth with me, good Mike; I did but try

whether thou hadst parted with aught of thine old and honourable

frankness, which your enviers and backbiters called saucy impudence."

"Let them call it what they will," said Michael Lambourne, "it is the

commodity we must carry through the world with us.--Uds daggers! I tell

thee, man, mine own stock of assurance was too small to trade upon. I

was fain to take in a ton or two more of brass at every port where I

touched in the voyage of life; and I started overboard what modesty and

scruples I had remaining, in order to make room for the stowage."

"Nay, nay," replied Foster, "touching scruples and modesty, you sailed

hence in ballast. But who is this gallant, honest Mike?--is he a

Corinthian--a cutter like thyself?"

"I prithee, know Master Tressilian, bully Foster," replied Lambourne,

presenting his friend in answer to his friend's question, "know him

and honour him, for he is a gentleman of many admirable qualities; and

though he traffics not in my line of business, at least so far as I

know, he has, nevertheless, a just respect and admiration for artists

of our class. He will come to in time, as seldom fails; but as yet he is

only a neophyte, only a proselyte, and frequents the company of cocks of

the game, as a puny fencer does the schools of the masters, to see how a

foil is handled by the teachers of defence."

"If such be his quality, I will pray your company in another chamber,

honest Mike, for what I have to say to thee is for thy private

ear.--Meanwhile, I pray you, sir, to abide us in this apartment, and

without leaving it; there be those in this house who would be alarmed by

the sight of a stranger."

Tressilian acquiesced, and the two worthies left the apartment together,

in which he remained alone to await their return. [See Note 1. Foster,

Lambourne, and the Black Bear.]

CHAPTER IV.

Not serve two masters?--Here's a youth will try it--

Would fain serve God, yet give the devil his due;

Says grace before he doth a deed of villainy,

And returns his thanks devoutly when 'tis acted,--OLD PLAY.

The room into which the Master of Cumnor Place conducted his worthy

visitant was of greater extent than that in which they had at first

conversed, and had yet more the appearance of dilapidation. Large oaken

presses, filled with shelves of the same wood, surrounded the room, and

had, at one time, served for the arrangement of a numerous collection

of books, many of which yet remained, but torn and defaced, covered with

dust, deprived of their costly clasps and bindings, and tossed together

in heaps upon the shelves, as things altogether disregarded, and

abandoned to the pleasure of every spoiler. The very presses themselves

seemed to have incurred the hostility of those enemies of learning who

had destroyed the volumes with which they had been heretofore filled.

They were, in several places, dismantled of their shelves, and otherwise

broken and damaged, and were, moreover, mantled with cobwebs and covered

with dust.

"The men who wrote these books," said Lambourne, looking round him,

"little thought whose keeping they were to fall into."

"Nor what yeoman's service they were to do me," quoth Anthony Foster;

"the cook hath used them for scouring his pewter, and the groom hath had

nought else to clean my boots with, this many a month past."

"And yet," said Lambourne, "I have been in cities where such learned

commodities would have been deemed too good for such offices."

"Pshaw, pshaw," answered Foster, "'they are Popish trash, every one

of them--private studies of the mumping old Abbot of Abingdon. The

nineteenthly of a pure gospel sermon were worth a cartload of such

rakings of the kennel of Rome."

"Gad-a-mercy, Master Tony Fire-the-Fagot!" said Lambourne, by way of

reply.

Foster scowled darkly at him, as he replied, "Hark ye, friend Mike;

forget that name, and the passage which it relates to, if you would not

have our newly-revived comradeship die a sudden and a violent death."

"Why," said Michael Lambourne, "you were wont to glory in the share you

had in the death of the two old heretical bishops."

"That," said his comrade, "was while I was in the gall of bitterness and

bond of iniquity, and applies not to my walk or my ways now that I

am called forth into the lists. Mr. Melchisedek Maultext compared my

misfortune in that matter to that of the Apostle Paul, who kept the

clothes of the witnesses who stoned Saint Stephen. He held forth on the

matter three Sabbaths past, and illustrated the same by the conduct of

an honourable person present, meaning me."

"I prithee peace, Foster," said Lambourne, "for I know not how it is, I

have a sort of creeping comes over my skin when I hear the devil quote

Scripture; and besides, man, how couldst thou have the heart to quit

that convenient old religion, which you could slip off or on as easily

as your glove? Do I not remember how you were wont to carry your

conscience to confession, as duly as the month came round? and when thou

hadst it scoured, and burnished, and whitewashed by the priest, thou

wert ever ready for the worst villainy which could be devised, like a

child who is always readiest to rush into the mire when he has got his

Sunday's clean jerkin on."

"Trouble not thyself about my conscience," said Foster; "it is a thing

thou canst not understand, having never had one of thine own. But let

us rather to the point, and say to me, in one word, what is thy business

with me, and what hopes have drawn thee hither?"

"The hope of bettering myself, to be sure," answered Lambourne, "as the

old woman said when she leapt over the bridge at Kingston. Look you,

this purse has all that is left of as round a sum as a man would wish to

carry in his slop-pouch. You are here well established, it would seem,

and, as I think, well befriended, for men talk of thy being under some

special protection--nay, stare not like a pig that is stuck, mon;

thou canst not dance in a net and they not see thee. Now I know such

protection is not purchased for nought; you must have services to render

for it, and in these I propose to help thee."

"But how if I lack no assistance from thee, Mike? I think thy modesty

might suppose that were a case possible."

"That is to say," retorted Lambourne, "that you would engross the

whole work, rather than divide the reward. But be not over-greedy,

Anthony--covetousness bursts the sack and spills the grain. Look you,

when the huntsman goes to kill a stag, he takes with him more dogs than

one. He has the stanch lyme-hound to track the wounded buck over hill

and dale, but he hath also the fleet gaze-hound to kill him at view.

Thou art the lyme-hound, I am the gaze-hound; and thy patron will need

the aid of both, and can well afford to requite it. Thou hast deep

sagacity--an unrelenting purpose--a steady, long-breathed malignity of

nature, that surpasses mine. But then, I am the bolder, the quicker, the

more ready, both at action and expedient. Separate, our properties are

not so perfect; but unite them, and we drive the world before us. How

sayest thou--shall we hunt in couples?"

"It is a currish proposal--thus to thrust thyself upon my private

matters," replied Foster; "but thou wert ever an ill-nurtured whelp."

"You shall have no cause to say so, unless you spurn my courtesy," said

Michael Lambourne; "but if so, keep thee well from me, Sir Knight, as

the romance has it. I will either share your counsels or traverse them;

for I have come here to be busy, either with thee or against thee."

"Well," said Anthony Foster, "since thou dost leave me so fair a choice,

I will rather be thy friend than thine enemy. Thou art right; I CAN

prefer thee to the service of a patron who has enough of means to make

us both, and an hundred more. And, to say truth, thou art well qualified

for his service. Boldness and dexterity he demands--the justice-books

bear witness in thy favour; no starting at scruples in his service why,

who ever suspected thee of a conscience? an assurance he must have who

would follow a courtier--and thy brow is as impenetrable as a Milan

visor. There is but one thing I would fain see amended in thee."

"And what is that, my most precious friend Anthony?" replied Lambourne;

"for I swear by the pillow of the Seven Sleepers I will not be slothful

in amending it."

"Why, you gave a sample of it even now," said Foster. "Your speech

twangs too much of the old stamp, and you garnish it ever and anon with

singular oaths, that savour of Papistrie. Besides, your exterior man is

altogether too deboshed and irregular to become one of his lordship's

followers, since he has a reputation to keep up in the eye of the world.

You must somewhat reform your dress, upon a more grave and composed

fashion; wear your cloak on both shoulders, and your falling band

unrumpled and well starched. You must enlarge the brim of your beaver,

and diminish the superfluity of your trunk-hose; go to church, or, which

will be better, to meeting, at least once a month; protest only upon

your faith and conscience; lay aside your swashing look, and never touch

the hilt of your sword but when you would draw the carnal weapon in good

earnest."

"By this light, Anthony, thou art mad," answered Lambourne, "and hast

described rather the gentleman-usher to a puritan's wife, than the

follower of an ambitious courtier! Yes, such a thing as thou wouldst

make of me should wear a book at his girdle instead of a poniard, and

might just be suspected of manhood enough to squire a proud dame-citizen

to the lecture at Saint Antonlin's, and quarrel in her cause with any

flat-capped threadmaker that would take the wall of her. He must ruffle

it in another sort that would walk to court in a nobleman's train."

"Oh, content you, sir," replied Foster, "there is a change since you

knew the English world; and there are those who can hold their way

through the boldest courses, and the most secret, and yet never a

swaggering word, or an oath, or a profane word in their conversation."

"That is to say," replied Lambourne, "they are in a trading copartnery,

to do the devil's business without mentioning his name in the firm?

Well, I will do my best to counterfeit, rather than lose ground in this

new world, since thou sayest it is grown so precise. But, Anthony, what

is the name of this nobleman, in whose service I am to turn hypocrite?"

"Aha! Master Michael, are you there with your bears?" said Foster, with

a grim smile; "and is this the knowledge you pretend of my concernments?

How know you now there is such a person IN RERUM NATURA, and that I have

not been putting a jape upon you all this time?"

"Thou put a jape on me, thou sodden-brained gull?" answered Lambourne,

nothing daunted. "Why, dark and muddy as thou think'st thyself, I

would engage in a day's space to sec as clear through thee and thy

concernments, as thou callest them, as through the filthy horn of an old

stable lantern."

At this moment their conversation was interrupted by a scream from the

next apartment.

"By the holy Cross of Abingdon," exclaimed Anthony Foster, forgetting

his Protestantism in his alarm, "I am a ruined man!"

So saying, he rushed into the apartment whence the scream issued,

followed by Michael Lambourne. But to account for the sounds which

interrupted their conversation, it is necessary to recede a little way

in our narrative.

It has been already observed, that when Lambourne accompanied Foster

into the library, they left Tressilian alone in the ancient parlour. His

dark eye followed them forth of the apartment with a glance of contempt,

a part of which his mind instantly transferred to himself, for having

stooped to be even for a moment their familiar companion. "These are the

associates, Amy"--it was thus he communed with himself--"to which

thy cruel levity--thine unthinking and most unmerited falsehood, has

condemned him of whom his friends once hoped far other things, and who

now scorns himself, as he will be scorned by others, for the baseness

he stoops to for the love of thee! But I will not leave the pursuit of

thee, once the object of my purest and most devoted affection, though

to me thou canst henceforth be nothing but a thing to weep over. I will

save thee from thy betrayer, and from thyself; I will restore thee to

thy parent--to thy God. I cannot bid the bright star again sparkle in

the sphere it has shot from, but--"

A slight noise in the apartment interrupted his reverie. He looked

round, and in the beautiful and richly-attired female who entered at

that instant by a side-door he recognized the object of his search. The

first impulse arising from this discovery urged him to conceal his face

with the collar of his cloak, until he should find a favourable moment

of making himself known. But his purpose was disconcerted by the young

lady (she was not above eighteen years old), who ran joyfully towards

him, and, pulling him by the cloak, said playfully, "Nay, my sweet

friend, after I have waited for you so long, you come not to my bower

to play the masquer. You are arraigned of treason to true love and fond

affection, and you must stand up at the bar and answer it with face

uncovered--how say you, guilty or not?"

"Alas, Amy!" said Tressilian, in a low and melancholy tone, as he

suffered her to draw the mantle from his face. The sound of his voice,

and still more the unexpected sight of his face, changed in an instant

the lady's playful mood. She staggered back, turned as pale as death,

and put her hands before her face. Tressilian was himself for a moment

much overcome, but seeming suddenly to remember the necessity of using

an opportunity which might not again occur, he said in a low tone, "Amy,

fear me not."

"Why should I fear you?" said the lady, withdrawing her hands from her

beautiful face, which was now covered with crimson,--"Why should I fear

you, Master Tressilian?--or wherefore have you intruded yourself into my

dwelling, uninvited, sir, and unwished for?"

"Your dwelling, Amy!" said Tressilian. "Alas! is a prison your

dwelling?--a prison guarded by one of the most sordid of men, but not a

greater wretch than his employer!"

"This house is mine," said Amy--"mine while I choose to inhabit it. If

it is my pleasure to live in seclusion, who shall gainsay me?"

"Your father, maiden," answered Tressilian, "your broken-hearted father,

who dispatched me in quest of you with that authority which he cannot

exert in person. Here is his letter, written while he blessed his pain

of body which somewhat stunned the agony of his mind."

"The pain! Is my father then ill?" said the lady.

"So ill," answered Tressilian, "that even your utmost haste may not

restore him to health; but all shall be instantly prepared for your

departure, the instant you yourself will give consent."

"Tressilian," answered the lady, "I cannot, I must not, I dare not leave

this place. Go back to my father--tell him I will obtain leave to see

him within twelve hours from hence. Go back, Tressilian--tell him I am

well, I am happy--happy could I think he was so; tell him not to fear

that I will come, and in such a manner that all the grief Amy has given

him shall be forgotten--the poor Amy is now greater than she dare name.

Go, good Tressilian--I have injured thee too, but believe me I have

power to heal the wounds I have caused. I robbed you of a childish

heart, which was not worthy of you, and I can repay the loss with

honours and advancement."

"Do you say this to me, Amy?--do you offer me pageants of idle ambition,

for the quiet peace you have robbed me of!--But be it so I came not

to upbraid, but to serve and to free you. You cannot disguise it from

me--you are a prisoner. Otherwise your kind heart--for it was once a

kind heart--would have been already at your father's bedside.--Come,

poor, deceived, unhappy maiden!--all shall be forgot--all shall be

forgiven. Fear not my importunity for what regarded our contract--it was

a dream, and I have awaked. But come--your father yet lives--come, and

one word of affection, one tear of penitence, will efface the memory of

all that has passed."

"Have I not already said, Tressilian," replied she, "that I will surely

come to my father, and that without further delay than is necessary to

discharge other and equally binding duties?--Go, carry him the news;

I come as sure as there is light in heaven--that is, when I obtain

permission."

"Permission!--permission to visit your father on his sick-bed, perhaps

on his death-bed!" repeated Tressilian, impatiently; "and permission

from whom? From the villain, who, under disguise of friendship, abused

every duty of hospitality, and stole thee from thy father's roof!"

"Do him no slander, Tressilian! He whom thou speakest of wears a sword

as sharp as thine--sharper, vain man; for the best deeds thou hast

ever done in peace or war were as unworthy to be named with his, as thy

obscure rank to match itself with the sphere he moves in.--Leave me!

Go, do mine errand to my father; and when he next sends to me, let him

choose a more welcome messenger."

"Amy," replied Tressilian calmly, "thou canst not move me by thy

reproaches. Tell me one thing, that I may bear at least one ray of

comfort to my aged friend:--this rank of his which thou dost boast--dost

thou share it with him, Amy?--does he claim a husband's right to control

thy motions?"

"Stop thy base, unmannered tongue!" said the lady; "to no question that

derogates from my honour do I deign an answer."

"You have said enough in refusing to reply," answered Tressilian;

"and mark me, unhappy as thou art, I am armed with thy father's full

authority to command thy obedience, and I will save thee from the

slavery of sin and of sorrow, even despite of thyself, Amy."

"Menace no violence here!" exclaimed the lady, drawing back from him,

and alarmed at the determination expressed in his look and manner;

"threaten me not, Tressilian, for I have means to repel force."

"But not, I trust, the wish to use them in so evil a cause?" said

Tressilian. "With thy will--thine uninfluenced, free, and natural will,

Amy, thou canst not choose this state of slavery and dishonour. Thou

hast been bound by some spell--entrapped by some deceit--art now

detained by some compelled vow. But thus I break the charm--Amy, in the

name of thine excellent, thy broken-hearted father, I command thee to

follow me!"

As he spoke he advanced and extended his arm, as with the purpose of

laying hold upon her. But she shrunk back from his grasp, and uttered

the scream which, as we before noticed, brought into the apartment

Lambourne and Foster.

The latter exclaimed, as soon as he entered, "Fire and fagot! what

have we here?" Then addressing the lady, in a tone betwixt entreaty

and command, he added, "Uds precious! madam, what make you here out of

bounds? Retire--retire--there is life and death in this matter.--And

you, friend, whoever you may be, leave this house--out with you, before

my dagger's hilt and your costard become acquainted.--Draw, Mike, and

rid us of the knave!"

"Not I, on my soul," replied Lambourne; "he came hither in my

company, and he is safe from me by cutter's law, at least till we meet

again.--But hark ye, my Cornish comrade, you have brought a Cornish flaw

of wind with you hither, a hurricanoe as they call it in the Indies.

Make yourself scarce--depart--vanish--or we'll have you summoned before

the Mayor of Halgaver, and that before Dudman and Ramhead meet." [Two

headlands on the Cornish coast. The expressions are proverbial.]

"Away, base groom!" said Tressilian.--"And you, madam, fare you

well--what life lingers in your father's bosom will leave him at the

news I have to tell."

He departed, the lady saying faintly as he left the room, "Tressilian,

be not rash--say no scandal of me."

"Here is proper gear," said Foster. "I pray you go to your chamber, my

lady, and let us consider how this is to be answered--nay, tarry not."

"I move not at your command, sir," answered the lady.

"Nay, but you must, fair lady," replied Foster; "excuse my freedom, but,

by blood and nails, this is no time to strain courtesies--you MUST go to

your chamber.--Mike, follow that meddling coxcomb, and, as you desire

to thrive, see him safely clear of the premises, while I bring this

headstrong lady to reason. Draw thy tool, man, and after him."

"I'll follow him," said Michael Lambourne, "and see him fairly out

of Flanders; but for hurting a man I have drunk my morning's draught

withal, 'tis clean against my conscience." So saying, he left the

apartment.

Tressilian, meanwhile, with hasty steps, pursued the first path which

promised to conduct him through the wild and overgrown park in which the

mansion of Foster was situated. Haste and distress of mind led his steps

astray, and instead of taking the avenue which led towards the village,

he chose another, which, after he had pursued it for some time with a

hasty and reckless step, conducted him to the other side of the demesne,

where a postern door opened through the wall, and led into the open

country.

Tressilian paused an instant. It was indifferent to him by what road he

left a spot now so odious to his recollections; but it was probable

that the postern door was locked, and his retreat by that pass rendered

impossible.

"I must make the attempt, however," he said to himself; "the only means

of reclaiming this lost--this miserable--this still most lovely and most

unhappy girl, must rest in her father's appeal to the broken laws of his

country. I must haste to apprise him of this heartrending intelligence."

As Tressilian, thus conversing with himself, approached to try some

means of opening the door, or climbing over it, he perceived there was

a key put into the lock from the outside. It turned round, the bolt

revolved, and a cavalier, who entered, muffled in his riding-cloak, and

wearing a slouched hat with a drooping feather, stood at once within

four yards of him who was desirous of going out. They exclaimed at

once, in tones of resentment and surprise, the one "Varney!" the other

"Tressilian!"

"What make you here?" was the stern question put by the stranger to

Tressilian, when the moment of surprise was past--"what make you here,

where your presence is neither expected nor desired?"

"Nay, Varney," replied Tressilian, "what make you here? Are you come

to triumph over the innocence you have destroyed, as the vulture or

carrion-crow comes to batten on the lamb whose eyes it has first plucked

out? Or are you come to encounter the merited vengeance of an honest

man? Draw, dog, and defend thyself!"

Tressilian drew his sword as he spoke, but Varney only laid his hand

on the hilt of his own, as he replied, "Thou art mad, Tressilian. I own

appearances are against me; but by every oath a priest can make or a man

can swear, Mistress Amy Robsart hath had no injury from me. And in truth

I were somewhat loath to hurt you in this cause--thou knowest I can

fight."

"I have heard thee say so, Varney," replied Tressilian; "but now,

methinks, I would fain have some better evidence than thine own word."

"That shall not be lacking, if blade and hilt be but true to me,"

answered Varney; and drawing his sword with the right hand, he threw his

cloak around his left, and attacked Tressilian with a vigour which,

for a moment, seemed to give him the advantage of the combat. But this

advantage lasted not long. Tressilian added to a spirit determined on

revenge a hand and eye admirably well adapted to the use of the rapier;

so that Varney, finding himself hard pressed in his turn, endeavoured

to avail himself of his superior strength by closing with his adversary.

For this purpose, he hazarded the receiving one of Tressilian's passes

in his cloak, wrapped as it was around his arm, and ere his adversary

could, extricate his rapier thus entangled, he closed with him,

shortening his own sword at the same time, with the purpose of

dispatching him. But Tressilian was on his guard, and unsheathing his

poniard, parried with the blade of that weapon the home-thrust which

would otherwise have finished the combat, and, in the struggle which

followed, displayed so much address, as might have confirmed, the

opinion that he drew his origin from Cornwall whose natives are such

masters in the art of wrestling, as, were the games of antiquity

revived, might enable them to challenge all Europe to the ring. Varney,

in his ill-advised attempt, received a fall so sudden and violent that

his sword flew several paces from his hand and ere he could recover his

feet, that of his antagonist was; pointed to his throat.

"Give me the instant means of relieving the victim of thy treachery,"

said Tressilian, "or take the last look of your Creator's blessed sun!"

And while Varney, too confused or too sullen to reply, made a sudden

effort to arise, his adversary drew back his arm, and would have

executed his threat, but that the blow was arrested by the grasp of

Michael Lambourne, who, directed by the clashing of swords had come up

just in time to save the life of Varney.

"Come, come, comrade;" said Lambourne, "here is enough done and more

than enough; put up your fox and let us be jogging. The Black Bear

growls for us."

"Off, abject!" said Tressilian, striking himself free of Lambourne's

grasp; "darest thou come betwixt me and mine enemy?"

"Abject! abject!" repeated Lambourne; "that shall be answered with cold

steel whenever a bowl of sack has washed out memory of the morning's

draught that we had together. In the meanwhile, do you see,

shog--tramp--begone--we are two to one."

He spoke truth, for Varney had taken the opportunity to regain his

weapon, and Tressilian perceived it was madness to press the quarrel

further against such odds. He took his purse from his side, and taking

out two gold nobles, flung them to Lambourne. "There, caitiff, is

thy morning wage; thou shalt not say thou hast been my guide

unhired.--Varney, farewell! we shall meet where there are none to come

betwixt us." So saying, he turned round and departed through the postern

door.

Varney seemed to want the inclination, or perhaps the power (for his

fall had been a severe one), to follow his retreating enemy. But he

glared darkly as he disappeared, and then addressed Lambourne. "Art thou

a comrade of Foster's, good fellow?"

"Sworn friends, as the haft is to the knife," replied Michael Lambourne.

"Here is a broad piece for thee. Follow yonder fellow, and see where he

takes earth, and bring me word up to the mansion-house here. Cautious

and silent, thou knave, as thou valuest thy throat."

"Enough said," replied Lambourne; "I can draw on a scent as well as a

sleuth-hound."

"Begone, then," said Varney, sheathing his rapier; and, turning his

back on Michael Lambourne, he walked slowly towards the house. Lambourne

stopped but an instant to gather the nobles which his late companion had

flung towards him so unceremoniously, and muttered to himself, while he

put them upon his purse along with the gratuity of Varney, "I spoke to

yonder gulls of Eldorado. By Saint Anthony, there is no Eldorado for

men of our stamp equal to bonny Old England! It rains nobles, by

Heaven--they lie on the grass as thick as dewdrops--you may have them

for gathering. And if I have not my share of such glittering dewdrops,

may my sword melt like an icicle!"

CHAPTER V.

He was a man

Versed in the world as pilot in his compass.

The needle pointed ever to that interest

Which was his loadstar, and he spread his sails

With vantage to the gale of others' passion.

--THE DECEIVER, A TRAGEDY.

Antony Foster was still engaged in debate with his fair guest, who

treated with scorn every entreaty and request that she would retire to

her own apartment, when a whistle was heard at the entrance-door of the

mansion.

"We are fairly sped now," said Foster; "yonder is thy lord's signal, and

what to say about the disorder which has happened in this household,

by my conscience, I know not. Some evil fortune dogs the heels of that

unhanged rogue Lambourne, and he has 'scaped the gallows against every

chance, to come back and be the ruin of me!"

"Peace, sir," said the lady, "and undo the gate to your master.--My

lord! my dear lord!" she then exclaimed, hastening to the entrance of

the apartment; then added, with a voice expressive of disappointment,

"Pooh! it is but Richard Varney."

"Ay, madam," said Varney, entering and saluting the lady with a

respectful obeisance, which she returned with a careless mixture of

negligence and of displeasure, "it is but Richard Varney; but even the

first grey cloud should be acceptable, when it lightens in the east,

because it announces the approach of the blessed sun."

"How! comes my lord hither to-night?" said the lady, in joyful yet

startled agitation; and Anthony Foster caught up the word, and echoed

the question. Varney replied to the lady, that his lord purposed to

attend her; and would have proceeded with some compliment, when, running

to the door of the parlour, she called aloud, "Janet--Janet! come to my

tiring-room instantly." Then returning to Varney, she asked if her lord

sent any further commendations to her.

"This letter, honoured madam," said he, taking from his bosom a small

parcel wrapped in scarlet silk, "and with it a token to the Queen of

his Affections." With eager speed the lady hastened to undo the silken

string which surrounded the little packet, and failing to unloose

readily the knot with which it was secured, she again called loudly on

Janet, "Bring me a knife--scissors--aught that may undo this envious

knot!"

"May not my poor poniard serve, honoured madam?" said Varney,

presenting a small dagger of exquisite workmanship, which hung in his

Turkey-leather sword-belt.

"No, sir," replied the lady, rejecting the instrument which he

offered--"steel poniard shall cut no true-love knot of mine."

"It has cut many, however," said Anthony Foster, half aside, and looking

at Varney. By this time the knot was disentangled without any other

help than the neat and nimble fingers of Janet, a simply-attired pretty

maiden, the daughter of Anthony Foster, who came running at the repeated

call of her mistress. A necklace of orient pearl, the companion of a

perfumed billet, was now hastily produced from the packet. The lady gave

the one, after a slight glance, to the charge of her attendant, while

she read, or rather devoured, the contents of the other.

"Surely, lady," said Janet, gazing with admiration at the neck-string

of pearls, "the daughters of Tyre wore no fairer neck-jewels than these.

And then the posy, 'For a neck that is fairer'--each pearl is worth a

freehold."

"Each word in this dear paper is worth the whole string, my girl. But

come to my tiring-room, girl; we must be brave, my lord comes hither

to-night.--He bids me grace you, Master Varney, and to me his wish is a

law. I bid you to a collation in my bower this afternoon; and you,

too, Master Foster. Give orders that all is fitting, and that suitable

preparations be made for my lord's reception to-night." With these words

she left the apartment.

"She takes state on her already," said Varney, "and distributes the

favour of her presence, as if she were already the partner of his

dignity. Well, it is wise to practise beforehand the part which fortune

prepares us to play--the young eagle must gaze at the sun ere he soars

on strong wing to meet it."

"If holding her head aloft," said Foster, "will keep her eyes from

dazzling, I warrant you the dame will not stoop her crest. She will

presently soar beyond reach of my whistle, Master Varney. I promise you,

she holds me already in slight regard."

"It is thine own fault, thou sullen, uninventive companion," answered

Varney, "who knowest no mode of control save downright brute force.

Canst thou not make home pleasant to her, with music and toys? Canst

thou not make the out-of-doors frightful to her, with tales of goblins?

Thou livest here by the churchyard, and hast not even wit enough to

raise a ghost, to scare thy females into good discipline."

"Speak not thus, Master Varney," said Foster; "the living I fear not,

but I trifle not nor toy with my dead neighbours of the churchyard. I

promise you, it requires a good heart to live so near it. Worthy Master

Holdforth, the afternoon's lecturer of Saint Antonlin's, had a sore

fright there the last time he came to visit me."

"Hold thy superstitious tongue," answered Varney; "and while thou

talkest of visiting, answer me, thou paltering knave, how came

Tressilian to be at the postern door?"

"Tressilian!" answered Foster, "what know I of Tressilian? I never heard

his name."

"Why, villain, it was the very Cornish chough to whom old Sir Hugh

Robsart destined his pretty Amy; and hither the hot-brained fool has

come to look after his fair runaway. There must be some order taken with

him, for he thinks he hath wrong, and is not the mean hind that will sit

down with it. Luckily he knows nought of my lord, but thinks he has only

me to deal with. But how, in the fiend's name, came he hither?"

"Why, with Mike Lambourne, an you must know," answered Foster.

"And who is Mike Lambourne?" demanded Varney. "By Heaven! thou wert best

set up a bush over thy door, and invite every stroller who passes by to

see what thou shouldst keep secret even from the sun and air."

"Ay! ay! this is a courtlike requital of my service to you, Master

Richard Varney," replied Foster. "Didst thou not charge me to seek out

for thee a fellow who had a good sword and an unscrupulous conscience?

and was I not busying myself to find a fit man--for, thank Heaven, my

acquaintance lies not amongst such companions--when, as Heaven would

have it, this tall fellow, who is in all his dualities the very flashing

knave thou didst wish, came hither to fix acquaintance upon me in the

plenitude of his impudence; and I admitted his claim, thinking to do

you a pleasure. And now see what thanks I get for disgracing myself by

converse with him!"

"And did he," said Varney, "being such a fellow as thyself, only

lacking, I suppose, thy present humour of hypocrisy, which lies as thin

over thy hard, ruffianly heart as gold lacquer upon rusty iron--did he,

I say, bring the saintly, sighing Tressilian in his train?"

"They came together, by Heaven!" said Foster; "and Tressilian--to speak

Heaven's truth--obtained a moment's interview with our pretty moppet,

while I was talking apart with Lambourne."

"Improvident villain! we are both undone," said Varney. "She has of late

been casting many a backward look to her father's halls, whenever her

lordly lover leaves her alone. Should this preaching fool whistle her

back to her old perch, we were but lost men."

"No fear of that, my master," replied Anthony Foster; "she is in no mood

to stoop to his lure, for she yelled out on seeing him as if an adder

had stung her."

"That is good. Canst thou not get from thy daughter an inkling of what

passed between them, good Foster?"

"I tell you plain, Master Varney," said Foster, "my daughter shall not

enter our purposes or walk in our paths. They may suit me well enough,

who know how to repent of my misdoings; but I will not have my child's

soul committed to peril either for your pleasure or my lord's. I may

walk among snares and pitfalls myself, because I have discretion, but I

will not trust the poor lamb among them."

"Why, thou suspicious fool, I were as averse as thou art that thy

baby-faced girl should enter into my plans, or walk to hell at her

father's elbow. But indirectly thou mightst gain some intelligence of

her?"

"And so I did, Master Varney," answered Foster; "and she said her lady

called out upon the sickness of her father."

"Good!" replied Varney; "that is a hint worth catching, and I will work

upon it. But the country must be rid of this Tressilian. I would have

cumbered no man about the matter, for I hate him like strong poison--his

presence is hemlock to me--and this day I had been rid of him, but that

my foot slipped, when, to speak truth, had not thy comrade yonder come

to my aid, and held his hand, I should have known by this time whether

you and I have been treading the path to heaven or hell."

"And you can speak thus of such a risk!" said Foster. "You keep a stout

heart, Master Varney. For me, if I did not hope to live many years, and

to have time for the great work of repentance, I would not go forward

with you."

"Oh! thou shalt live as long as Methuselah," said Varney, "and amass

as much wealth as Solomon; and thou shalt repent so devoutly, that thy

repentance shall be more famous than thy villainy--and that is a bold

word. But for all this, Tressilian must be looked after. Thy ruffian

yonder is gone to dog him. It concerns our fortunes, Anthony."

"Ay, ay," said Foster sullenly, "this it is to be leagued with one who

knows not even so much of Scripture, as that the labourer is worthy of

his hire. I must, as usual, take all the trouble and risk."

"Risk! and what is the mighty risk, I pray you?" answered Varney. "This

fellow will come prowling again about your demesne or into your house,

and if you take him for a house-breaker or a park-breaker, is it not

most natural you should welcome him with cold steel or hot lead? Even

a mastiff will pull down those who come near his kennel; and who shall

blame him?"

"Ay, I have a mastiff's work and a mastiff's wage among you," said

Foster. "Here have you, Master Varney, secured a good freehold estate

out of this old superstitious foundation; and I have but a poor lease of

this mansion under you, voidable at your honour's pleasure."

"Ay, and thou wouldst fain convert thy leasehold into a copyhold--the

thing may chance to happen, Anthony Foster, if thou dost good service

for it. But softly, good Anthony--it is not the lending a room or two of

this old house for keeping my lord's pretty paroquet--nay, it is not

the shutting thy doors and windows to keep her from flying off that may

deserve it. Remember, the manor and tithes are rated at the clear annual

value of seventy-nine pounds five shillings and fivepence halfpenny,

besides the value of the wood. Come, come, thou must be conscionable;

great and secret service may deserve both this and a better thing. And

now let thy knave come and pluck off my boots. Get us some dinner, and

a cup of thy best wine. I must visit this mavis, brave in apparel,

unruffled in aspect, and gay in temper."

They parted and at the hour of noon, which was then that of dinner, they

again met at their meal, Varney gaily dressed like a courtier of the

time, and even Anthony Foster improved in appearance, as far as dress

could amend an exterior so unfavourable.

This alteration did not escape Varney. Then the meal was finished, the

cloth removed, and they were left to their private discourse--"Thou

art gay as a goldfinch, Anthony," said Varney, looking at his host;

"methinks, thou wilt whistle a jig anon. But I crave your pardon,

that would secure your ejection from the congregation of the zealous

botchers, the pure-hearted weavers, and the sanctified bakers of

Abingdon, who let their ovens cool while their brains get heated."

"To answer you in the spirit, Master Varney," said Foster, "were--excuse

the parable--to fling sacred and precious things before swine. So I will

speak to thee in the language of the world, which he who is king of the

world, hath taught thee, to understand, and to profit by in no common

measure."

"Say what thou wilt, honest Tony," replied Varney; "for be it according

to thine absurd faith, or according to thy most villainous practice,

it cannot choose but be rare matter to qualify this cup of Alicant.

Thy conversation is relishing and poignant, and beats caviare, dried

neat's-tongue, and all other provocatives that give savour to good

liquor."

"Well, then, tell me," said Anthony Foster, "is not our good lord and

master's turn better served, and his antechamber more suitably filled,

with decent, God-fearing men, who will work his will and their own

profit quietly, and without worldly scandal, than that he should be

manned, and attended, and followed by such open debauchers and ruffianly

swordsmen as Tidesly, Killigrew, this fellow Lambourne, whom you have

put me to seek out for you, and other such, who bear the gallows in

their face and murder in their right hand--who are a terror to peaceable

men, and a scandal to my lord's service?"

"Oh, content you, good Master Anthony Foster," answered Varney; "he that

flies at all manner of game must keep all kinds of hawks, both short and

long-winged. The course my lord holds is no easy one, and he must

stand provided at all points with trusty retainers to meet each sort of

service. He must have his gay courtier, like myself, to ruffle it in

the presence-chamber, and to lay hand on hilt when any speaks in

disparagement of my lord's honour--"

"Ay," said Foster, "and to whisper a word for him into a fair lady's

ear, when he may not approach her himself."

"Then," said Varney, going on without appearing to notice the

interruption, "he must have his lawyers--deep, subtle pioneers--to draw

his contracts, his pre-contracts, and his post-contracts, and to find

the way to make the most of grants of church-lands, and commons, and

licenses for monopoly. And he must have physicians who can spice a cup

or a caudle. And he must have his cabalists, like Dec and Allan, for

conjuring up the devil. And he must have ruffling swordsmen, who would

fight the devil when he is raised and at the wildest. And above

all, without prejudice to others, he must have such godly, innocent,

puritanic souls as thou, honest Anthony, who defy Satan, and do his work

at the same time."

"You would not say, Master Varney," said Foster, "that our good lord

and master, whom I hold to be fulfilled in all nobleness, would use such

base and sinful means to rise, as thy speech points at?"

"Tush, man," said Varney, "never look at me with so sad a brow. You trap

me not--nor am I in your power, as your weak brain may imagine, because

I name to you freely the engines, the springs, the screws, the tackle,

and braces, by which great men rise in stirring times. Sayest thou our

good lord is fulfilled of all nobleness? Amen, and so be it--he has the

more need to have those about him who are unscrupulous in his service,

and who, because they know that his fall will overwhelm and crush them,

must wager both blood and brain, soul and body, in order to keep him

aloft; and this I tell thee, because I care not who knows it."

"You speak truth, Master Varney," said Anthony Foster. "He that is head

of a party is but a boat on a wave, that raises not itself, but is moved

upward by the billow which it floats upon."

"Thou art metaphorical, honest Anthony," replied Varney; "that velvet

doublet hath made an oracle of thee. We will have thee to Oxford to take

the degrees in the arts. And, in the meantime, hast thou arranged all

the matters which were sent from London, and put the western chambers

into such fashion as may answer my lord's humour?"

"They may serve a king on his bridal-day," said Anthony; "and I promise

you that Dame Amy sits in them yonder as proud and gay as if she were

the Queen of Sheba."

"'Tis the better, good Anthony," answered Varney; "we must found our

future fortunes on her good liking."

"We build on sand then," said Anthony Foster; "for supposing that she

sails away to court in all her lord's dignity and authority, how is she

to look back upon me, who am her jailor as it were, to detain her here

against her will, keeping her a caterpillar on an old wall, when she

would fain be a painted butterfly in a court garden?"

"Fear not her displeasure, man," said Varney. "I will show her all thou

hast done in this matter was good service, both to my lord and her;

and when she chips the egg-shell and walks alone, she shall own we have

hatched her greatness."

"Look to yourself, Master Varney," said Foster, "you may misreckon

foully in this matter. She gave you but a frosty reception this morning,

and, I think, looks on you, as well as me, with an evil eye."

"You mistake her, Foster--you mistake her utterly. To me she is bound

by all the ties which can secure her to one who has been the means of

gratifying both her love and ambition. Who was it that took the obscure

Amy Robsart, the daughter of an impoverished and dotard knight--the

destined bride of a moonstruck, moping enthusiast, like Edmund

Tressilian, from her lowly fates, and held out to her in prospect the

brightest fortune in England, or perchance in Europe? Why, man, it was

I--as I have often told thee--that found opportunity for their secret

meetings. It was I who watched the wood while he beat for the deer. It

was I who, to this day, am blamed by her family as the companion of her

flight; and were I in their neighbourhood, would be fain to wear a shirt

of better stuff than Holland linen, lest my ribs should be acquainted

with Spanish steel. Who carried their letters?--I. Who amused the old

knight and Tressilian?--I. Who planned her escape?--it was I. It was

I, in short, Dick Varney, who pulled this pretty little daisy from its

lowly nook, and placed it in the proudest bonnet in Britain."

"Ay, Master Varney," said Foster; "but it may be she thinks that had the

matter remained with you, the flower had been stuck so slightly into the

cap, that the first breath of a changeable breeze of passion had blown

the poor daisy to the common."

"She should consider," said Varney, smiling, "the true faith I owed my

lord and master prevented me at first from counselling marriage; and

yet I did counsel marriage when I saw she would not be satisfied without

the--the sacrament, or the ceremony--which callest thou it, Anthony?"

"Still she has you at feud on another score," said Foster; "and I tell

it you that you may look to yourself in time. She would not hide her

splendour in this dark lantern of an old monastic house, but would fain

shine a countess amongst countesses."

"Very natural, very right," answered Varney; "but what have I to do

with that?--she may shine through horn or through crystal at my lord's

pleasure, I have nought to say against it."

"She deems that you have an oar upon that side of the boat, Master

Varney," replied Foster, "and that you can pull it or no, at your good

pleasure. In a word, she ascribes the secrecy and obscurity in which she

is kept to your secret counsel to my lord, and to my strict agency; and

so she loves us both as a sentenced man loves his judge and his jailor."

"She must love us better ere she leave this place, Anthony," answered

Varney. "If I have counselled for weighty reasons that she remain here

for a season, I can also advise her being brought forth in the full blow

of her dignity. But I were mad to do so, holding so near a place to

my lord's person, were she mine enemy. Bear this truth in upon her as

occasion offers, Anthony, and let me alone for extolling you in her ear,

and exalting you in her opinion--KA ME, KA THEE--it is a proverb all

over the world. The lady must know her friends, and be made to judge of

the power they have of being her enemies; meanwhile, watch her strictly,

but with all the outward observance that thy rough nature will permit.

'Tis an excellent thing that sullen look and bull-dog humour of thine;

thou shouldst thank God for it, and so should my lord, for when there

is aught harsh or hard-natured to be done, thou dost it as if it flowed

from thine own natural doggedness, and not from orders, and so my lord

escapes the scandal.--But, hark--some one knocks at the gate. Look

out at the window--let no one enter--this were an ill night to be

interrupted."

"It is he whom we spoke of before dinner," said Foster, as he looked

through the casement; "it is Michael Lambourne."

"Oh, admit him, by all means," said the courtier; "he comes to give some

account of his guest; it imports us much to know the movements of Edmund

Tressilian.--Admit him, I say, but bring him not hither; I will come to

you presently in the Abbot's library."

Foster left the room, and the courtier, who remained behind, paced the

parlour more than once in deep thought, his arms folded on his bosom,

until at length he gave vent to his meditations in broken words, which

we have somewhat enlarged and connected, that his soliloquy may be

intelligible to the reader.

"'Tis true," he said, suddenly stopping, and resting his right hand on

the table at which they had been sitting, "this base churl hath fathomed

the very depth of my fear, and I have been unable to disguise it from

him. She loves me not--I would it were as true that I loved not her!

Idiot that I was, to move her in my own behalf, when wisdom bade me be

a true broker to my lord! And this fatal error has placed me more at her

discretion than a wise man would willingly be at that of the best piece

of painted Eve's flesh of them all. Since the hour that my policy made

so perilous a slip, I cannot look at her without fear, and hate, and

fondness, so strangely mingled, that I know not whether, were it at my

choice, I would rather possess or ruin her. But she must not leave this

retreat until I am assured on what terms we are to stand. My lord's

interest--and so far it is mine own, for if he sinks I fall in his

train--demands concealment of this obscure marriage; and besides, I will

not lend her my arm to climb to her chair of state, that she may set her

foot on my neck when she is fairly seated. I must work an interest in

her, either through love or through fear; and who knows but I may yet

reap the sweetest and best revenge for her former scorn?--that

were indeed a masterpiece of courtlike art! Let me but once be her

counsel-keeper--let her confide to me a secret, did it but concern the

robbery of a linnet's nest, and, fair Countess, thou art mine own!"

He again paced the room in silence, stopped, filled and drank a cup of

wine, as if to compose the agitation of his mind, and muttering,

"Now for a close heart and an open and unruffled brow," he left the

apartment.

CHAPTER VI.

The dews of summer night did fall,

The moon, sweet regent of the sky,

Silver'd the walls of Cumnor Hall,

And many an oak that grew thereby.--MICKLE.

[This verse is the commencement of the ballad already quoted, as

what suggested the novel.]

Four apartments; which, occupied the western side of the old quadrangle

at Cumnor Place, had been fitted up with extraordinary splendour. This

had been the work of several days prior to that on which our story

opened. Workmen sent from London, and not permitted to leave the

premises until the work was finished, had converted the apartments in

that side of the building from the dilapidated appearance of a dissolved

monastic house into the semblance of a royal palace. A mystery was

observed in all these arrangements: the workmen came thither and

returned by night, and all measures were taken to prevent the prying

curiosity of the villagers from observing or speculating upon the

changes which were taking place in the mansion of their once indigent

but now wealthy neighbour, Anthony Foster. Accordingly, the secrecy

desired was so far preserved, that nothing got abroad but vague and

uncertain reports, which were received and repeated, but without much

credit being attached to them.

On the evening of which we treat, the new and highly-decorated suite of

rooms were, for the first time, illuminated, and that with a brilliancy

which might have been visible half-a-dozen miles off, had not oaken

shutters, carefully secured with bolt and padlock, and mantled with long

curtains of silk and of velvet, deeply fringed with gold, prevented the

slightest gleam of radiance front being seen without.

The principal apartments, as we have seen, were four in number, each

opening into the other. Access was given to them by a large scale

staircase, as they were then called, of unusual length and height, which

had its landing-place at the door of an antechamber, shaped somewhat

like a gallery. This apartment the abbot had used as an occasional

council-room, but it was now beautifully wainscoted with dark, foreign

wood of a brown colour, and bearing a high polish, said to have been

brought from the Western Indies, and to have been wrought in London with

infinite difficulty and much damage to the tools of the workmen. The

dark colour of this finishing was relieved by the number of lights

in silver sconces which hung against the walls, and by six large and

richly-framed pictures, by the first masters of the age. A massy oaken

table, placed at the lower end of the apartment, served to accommodate

such as chose to play at the then fashionable game of shovel-board;

and there was at the other end an elevated gallery for the musicians

or minstrels, who might be summoned to increase the festivity of the

evening.

From this antechamber opened a banqueting-room of moderate size, but

brilliant enough to dazzle the eyes of the spectator with the richness

of its furniture. The walls, lately so bare and ghastly, were now

clothed with hangings of sky-blue velvet and silver; the chairs were of

ebony, richly carved, with cushions corresponding to the hangings; and

the place of the silver sconces which enlightened the ante-chamber was

supplied by a huge chandelier of the same precious metal. The floor

was covered with a Spanish foot-cloth, or carpet, on which flowers and

fruits were represented in such glowing and natural colours, that you

hesitated to place the foot on such exquisite workmanship. The table, of

old English oak, stood ready covered with the finest linen; and a large

portable court-cupboard was placed with the leaves of its embossed

folding-doors displayed, showing the shelves within, decorated with a

full display of plate and porcelain. In the midst of the table stood a

salt-cellar of Italian workmanship--a beautiful and splendid piece of

plate about two feet high, moulded into a representation of the giant

Briareus, whose hundred hands of silver presented to the guests various

sorts of spices, or condiments, to season their food withal.

The third apartment was called the withdrawing-room. It was hung with

the finest tapestry, representing the fall of Phaeton; for the looms

of Flanders were now much occupied on classical subjects. The principal

seat of this apartment was a chair of state, raised a step or two from

the floor, and large enough to contain two persons. It was surmounted

by a canopy, which, as well as the cushions, side-curtains, and the very

footcloth, was composed of crimson velvet, embroidered with seed-pearl.

On the top of the canopy were two coronets, resembling those of an earl

and countess. Stools covered with velvet, and some cushions disposed in

the Moorish fashion, and ornamented with Arabesque needle-work,

supplied the place of chairs in this apartment, which contained musical

instruments, embroidery frames, and other articles for ladies' pastime.

Besides lesser lights, the withdrawing-room was illuminated by four

tall torches of virgin wax, each of which was placed in the grasp of

a statue, representing an armed Moor, who held in his left arm a round

buckler of silver, highly polished, interposed betwixt his breast

and the light, which was thus brilliantly reflected as from a crystal

mirror.

The sleeping chamber belonging to this splendid suite of apartments

was decorated in a taste less showy, but not less rich, than had been

displayed in the others. Two silver lamps, fed with perfumed oil,

diffused at once a delicious odour and a trembling twilight-seeming

shimmer through the quiet apartment. It was carpeted so thick that the

heaviest step could not have been heard, and the bed, richly heaped with

down, was spread with an ample coverlet of silk and gold; from under

which peeped forth cambric sheets and blankets as white as the lambs

which yielded the fleece that made them. The curtains were of blue

velvet, lined with crimson silk, deeply festooned with gold, and

embroidered with the loves of Cupid and Psyche. On the toilet was a

beautiful Venetian mirror, in a frame of silver filigree, and beside it

stood a gold posset-dish to contain the night-draught. A pair of pistols

and a dagger, mounted with gold, were displayed near the head of the

bed, being the arms for the night, which were presented to honoured

guests, rather, it may be supposed, in the way of ceremony than from any

apprehension of danger. We must not omit to mention, what was more

to the credit of the manners of the time, that in a small recess,

illuminated by a taper, were disposed two hassocks of velvet and gold,

corresponding with the bed furniture, before a desk of carved ebony.

This recess had formerly been the private oratory of the abbot; but the

crucifix was removed, and instead there were placed on the desk, two

Books of Common Prayer, richly bound, and embossed with silver. With

this enviable sleeping apartment, which was so far removed from every

sound save that of the wind sighing among the oaks of the park, that

Morpheus might have coveted it for his own proper repose, corresponded

two wardrobes, or dressing-rooms as they are now termed, suitably

furnished, and in a style of the same magnificence which we have already

described. It ought to be added, that a part of the building in the

adjoining wing was occupied by the kitchen and its offices, and

served to accommodate the personal attendants of the great and wealthy

nobleman, for whose use these magnificent preparations had been made.

The divinity for whose sake this temple had been decorated was well

worthy the cost and pains which had been bestowed. She was seated in the

withdrawing-room which we have described, surveying with the pleased eye

of natural and innocent vanity the splendour which had been so suddenly

created, as it were, in her honour. For, as her own residence at Cumnor

Place formed the cause of the mystery observed in all the preparations

for opening these apartments, it was sedulously arranged that, until she

took possession of them, she should have no means of knowing what was

going forward in that part of the ancient building, or of exposing

herself to be seen by the workmen engaged in the decorations. She had

been, therefore, introduced on that evening to a part of the mansion

which she had never yet seen, so different from all the rest that it

appeared, in comparison, like an enchanted palace. And when she first

examined and occupied these splendid rooms, it was with the wild and

unrestrained joy of a rustic beauty who finds herself suddenly invested

with a splendour which her most extravagant wishes had never imagined,

and at the same time with the keen feeling of an affectionate heart,

which knows that all the enchantment that surrounds her is the work of

the great magician Love.

The Countess Amy, therefore--for to that rank she was exalted by her

private but solemn union with England's proudest Earl--had for a time

flitted hastily from room to room, admiring each new proof of her lover

and her bridegroom's taste, and feeling that admiration enhanced as

she recollected that all she gazed upon was one continued proof of his

ardent and devoted affection. "How beautiful are these hangings! How

natural these paintings, which seem to contend with life! How richly

wrought is that plate, which looks as if all the galleons of Spain had

been intercepted on the broad seas to furnish it forth! And oh, Janet!"

she exclaimed repeatedly to the daughter of Anthony Foster, the close

attendant, who, with equal curiosity, but somewhat less ecstatic

joy, followed on her mistress's footsteps--"oh, Janet! how much more

delightful to think that all these fair things have been assembled by

his love, for the love of me! and that this evening--this very evening,

which grows darker every instant, I shall thank him more for the love

that has created such an unimaginable paradise, than for all the wonders

it contains."

"The Lord is to be thanked first," said the pretty Puritan, "who gave

thee, lady, the kind and courteous husband whose love has done so much

for thee. I, too, have done my poor share. But if you thus run wildly

from room to room, the toil of my crisping and my curling pins will

vanish like the frost-work on the window when the sun is high."

"Thou sayest true, Janet," said the young and beautiful Countess,

stopping suddenly from her tripping race of enraptured delight, and

looking at herself from head to foot in a large mirror, such as she had

never before seen, and which, indeed, had few to match it even in the

Queen's palace--"thou sayest true, Janet!" she answered, as she saw,

with pardonable self-applause, the noble mirror reflect such charms as

were seldom presented to its fair and polished surface; "I have more of

the milk-maid than the countess, with these cheeks flushed with haste,

and all these brown curls, which you laboured to bring to order,

straying as wild as the tendrils of an unpruned vine. My falling ruff is

chafed too, and shows the neck and bosom more than is modest and seemly.

Come, Janet; we will practise state--we will go to the withdrawing-room,

my good girl, and thou shalt put these rebel locks in order, and

imprison within lace and cambric the bosom that beats too high."

They went to the withdrawing apartment accordingly, where the Countess

playfully stretched herself upon the pile of Moorish cushions, half

sitting, half reclining, half wrapt in her own thoughts, half listening

to the prattle of her attendant.

While she was in this attitude, and with a corresponding expression

betwixt listlessness and expectation on her fine and intelligent

features, you might have searched sea and land without finding anything

half so expressive or half so lovely. The wreath of brilliants which

mixed with her dark-brown hair did not match in lustre the hazel eye

which a light-brown eyebrow, pencilled with exquisite delicacy, and long

eyelashes of the same colour, relieved and shaded. The exercise she had

just taken, her excited expectation and gratified vanity, spread a glow

over her fine features, which had been sometimes censured (as beauty

as well as art has her minute critics) for being rather too pale. The

milk-white pearls of the necklace which she wore, the same which she had

just received as a true-love token from her husband, were excelled in

purity by her teeth, and by the colour of her skin, saving where the

blush of pleasure and self-satisfaction had somewhat stained the neck

with a shade of light crimson.--"Now, have done with these busy fingers,

Janet," she said to her handmaiden, who was still officiously employed

in bringing her hair and her dress into order--"have done, I say. I must

see your father ere my lord arrives, and also Master Richard Varney,

whom my lord has highly in his esteem--but I could tell that of him

would lose him favour."

"Oh, do not do so, good my lady!" replied Janet; "leave him to God, who

punishes the wicked in His own time; but do not you cross Varney's path,

for so thoroughly hath he my lord's ear, that few have thriven who have

thwarted his courses."

"And from whom had you this, my most righteous Janet?" said the

Countess; "or why should I keep terms with so mean a gentleman as

Varney, being as I am, wife to his master and patron?"

"Nay, madam," replied Janet Foster, "your ladyship knows better than I;

but I have heard my father say he would rather cross a hungry wolf than

thwart Richard Varney in his projects. And he has often charged me to

have a care of holding commerce with him."

"Thy father said well, girl, for thee," replied the lady, "and I dare

swear meant well. It is a pity, though, his face and manner do little

match his true purpose--for I think his purpose may be true."

"Doubt it not, my lady," answered Janet--"doubt not that my father

purposes well, though he is a plain man, and his blunt looks may belie

his heart."

"I will not doubt it, girl, were it only for thy sake; and yet he has

one of those faces which men tremble when they look on. I think even thy

mother, Janet--nay, have done with that poking-iron--could hardly look

upon him without quaking."

"If it were so, madam," answered Janet Foster, "my mother had those who

could keep her in honourable countenance. Why, even you, my lady, both

trembled and blushed when Varney brought the letter from my lord."

"You are bold, damsel," said the Countess, rising from the cushions on

which she sat half reclined in the arms of her attendant. "Know that

there are causes of trembling which have nothing to do with fear.--But,

Janet," she added, immediately relapsing into the good-natured and

familiar tone which was natural to her, "believe me, I will do what

credit I can to your father, and the rather that you, sweetheart, are

his child. Alas! alas!" she added, a sudden sadness passing over her

fine features, and her eyes filling with tears, "I ought the rather to

hold sympathy with thy kind heart, that my own poor father is uncertain

of my fate, and they say lies sick and sorrowful for my worthless sake!

But I will soon cheer him--the news of my happiness and advancement will

make him young again. And that I may cheer him the sooner"--she wiped

her eyes as she spoke--"I must be cheerful myself. My lord must not find

me insensible to his kindness, or sorrowful, when he snatches a visit to

his recluse, after so long an absence. Be merry, Janet; the night wears

on, and my lord must soon arrive. Call thy father hither, and call

Varney also. I cherish resentment against neither; and though I may have

some room to be displeased with both, it shall be their own fault if

ever a complaint against them reaches the Earl through my means. Call

them hither, Janet."

Janet Foster obeyed her mistress; and in a few minutes after, Varney

entered the withdrawing-room with the graceful ease and unclouded

front of an accomplished courtier, skilled, under the veil of external

politeness, to disguise his own feelings and to penetrate those of

others. Anthony Foster plodded into the apartment after him, his natural

gloomy vulgarity of aspect seeming to become yet more remarkable, from

his clumsy attempt to conceal the mixture of anxiety and dislike with

which he looked on her, over whom he had hitherto exercised so severe a

control, now so splendidly attired, and decked with so many pledges

of the interest which she possessed in her husband's affections. The

blundering reverence which he made, rather AT than TO the Countess, had

confession in it. It was like the reverence which the criminal makes to

the judge, when he at once owns his guilt and implores mercy--which

is at the same time an impudent and embarrassed attempt at defence or

extenuation, a confession of a fault, and an entreaty for lenity.

Varney, who, in right of his gentle blood, had pressed into the room

before Anthony Foster, knew better what to say than he, and said it with

more assurance and a better grace.

The Countess greeted him indeed with an appearance of cordiality, which

seemed a complete amnesty for whatever she might have to complain of.

She rose from her seat, and advanced two steps towards him, holding

forth her hand as she said, "Master Richard Varney, you brought me

this morning such welcome tidings, that I fear surprise and joy made me

neglect my lord and husband's charge to receive you with distinction. We

offer you our hand, sir, in reconciliation."

"I am unworthy to touch it," said Varney, dropping on one knee, "save as

a subject honours that of a prince."

He touched with his lips those fair and slender fingers, so richly

loaded with rings and jewels; then rising, with graceful gallantry, was

about to hand her to the chair of state, when she said, "No, good Master

Richard Varney, I take not my place there until my lord himself conducts

me. I am for the present but a disguised Countess, and will not take

dignity on me until authorized by him whom I derive it from."

"I trust, my lady," said Foster, "that in doing the commands of my lord

your husband, in your restraint and so forth, I have not incurred your

displeasure, seeing that I did but my duty towards your lord and mine;

for Heaven, as holy writ saith, hath given the husband supremacy and

dominion over the wife--I think it runs so, or something like it."

"I receive at this moment so pleasant a surprise, Master Foster,"

answered the Countess, "that I cannot but excuse the rigid fidelity

which secluded me from these apartments, until they had assumed an

appearance so new and so splendid."

"Ay lady," said Foster, "it hath cost many a fair crown; and that more

need not be wasted than is absolutely necessary, I leave you till my

lord's arrival with good Master Richard Varney, who, as I think, hath

somewhat to say to you from your most noble lord and husband.--Janet,

follow me, to see that all be in order."

"No, Master Foster," said the Countess, "we will your daughter remains

here in our apartment--out of ear-shot, however, in case Varney bath

ought to say to me from my lord."

Foster made his clumsy reverence, and departed, with an aspect which

seemed to grudge the profuse expense which had been wasted upon changing

his house from a bare and ruinous grange to an Asiastic palace. When he

was gone, his daughter took her embroidery frame, and went to establish

herself at the bottom of the apartment; while Richard Varney, with a

profoundly humble courtesy, took the lowest stool he could find, and

placing it by the side of the pile of cushions on which the Countess

had now again seated herself, sat with his eyes for a time fixed on the

ground, and in pro-found silence.

"I thought, Master Varney," said the Countess, when she saw he was not

likely to open the conversation, "that you had something to communicate

from my lord and husband; so at least I understood Master Foster, and

therefore I removed my waiting-maid. If I am mistaken, I will recall

her to my side; for her needle is not so absolutely perfect in tent and

cross-stitch, but that my superintendence is advisable."

"Lady," said Varney, "Foster was partly mistaken in my purpose. It

was not FROM but OF your noble husband, and my approved and most noble

patron, that I am led, and indeed bound, to speak."

"The theme is most welcome, sir," said the Countess, "whether it be

of or from my noble husband. But be brief, for I expect his hasty

approach."

"Briefly then, madam," replied Varney, "and boldly, for my argument

requires both haste and courage--you have this day seen Tressilian?"

"I have, sir and what of that?" answered the lady somewhat sharply.

"Nothing that concerns me, lady," Varney replied with humility. "But,

think you, honoured madam, that your lord will hear it with equal

equanimity?"

"And wherefore should he not? To me alone was Tressilian's visit

embarrassing and painful, for he brought news of my good father's

illness."

"Of your father's illness, madam!" answered Varney. "It must have been

sudden then--very sudden; for the messenger whom I dispatched, at my

lord's instance, found the good knight on the hunting field, cheering

his beagles with his wonted jovial field-cry. I trust Tressilian has

but forged this news. He hath his reasons, madam, as you well know, for

disquieting your present happiness."

"You do him injustice, Master Varney," replied the Countess, with

animation--"you do him much injustice. He is the freest, the most open,

the most gentle heart that breathes. My honourable lord ever excepted, I

know not one to whom falsehood is more odious than to Tressilian."

"I crave your pardon, madam," said Varney, "I meant the gentleman no

injustice--I knew not how nearly his cause affected you. A man may, in

some circumstances, disguise the truth for fair and honest purpose; for

were it to be always spoken, and upon all occasions, this were no world

to live in."

"You have a courtly conscience, Master Varney," said the Countess, "and

your veracity will not, I think, interrupt your preferment in the world,

such as it is. But touching Tressilian--I must do him justice, for

I have done him wrong, as none knows better than thou. Tressilian's

conscience is of other mould--the world thou speakest of has not that

which could bribe him from the way of truth and honour; and for living

in it with a soiled fame, the ermine would as soon seek to lodge in the

den of the foul polecat. For this my father loved him; for this I would

have loved him--if I could. And yet in this case he had what seemed

to him, unknowing alike of my marriage and to whom I was united, such

powerful reasons to withdraw me from this place, that I well trust he

exaggerated much of my father's indisposition, and that thy better news

may be the truer."

"Believe me they are, madam," answered Varney. "I pretend not to be a

champion of that same naked virtue called truth, to the very outrance.

I can consent that her charms be hidden with a veil, were it but for

decency's sake. But you must think lower of my head and heart than is

due to one whom my noble lord deigns to call his friend, if you suppose

I could wilfully and unnecessarily palm upon your ladyship a falsehood,

so soon to be detected, in a matter which concerns your happiness."

"Master Varney," said the Countess, "I know that my lord esteems you,

and holds you a faithful and a good pilot in those seas in which he has

spread so high and so venturous a sail. Do not suppose, therefore, I

meant hardly by you, when I spoke the truth in Tressilian's vindication.

I am as you well know, country-bred, and like plain rustic truth better

than courtly compliment; but I must change my fashions with my sphere, I

presume."

"True, madam," said Varney, smiling; "and though you speak now in

jest, it will not be amiss that in earnest your present speech had some

connection with your real purpose. A court-dame--take the most noble,

the most virtuous, the most unimpeachable that stands around our Queen's

throne--would, for example, have shunned to speak the truth, or what she

thought such, in praise of a discarded suitor, before the dependant and

confidant of her noble husband."

"And wherefore," said the Countess, colouring impatiently, "should I not

do justice to Tressilian's worth, before my husband's friend--before my

husband himself--before the whole world?"

"And with the same openness," said Varney, "your ladyship will this

night tell my noble lord your husband that Tressilian has discovered

your place of residence, so anxiously concealed from the world, and that

he has had an interview with you?"

"Unquestionably," said the Countess. "It will be the first thing I tell

him, together with every word that Tressilian said and that I answered.

I shall speak my own shame in this, for Tressilian's reproaches, less

just than he esteemed them, were not altogether unmerited. I will speak,

therefore, with pain, but I will speak, and speak all."

"Your ladyship will do your pleasure," answered Varney; "but methinks

it were as well, since nothing calls for so frank a disclosure, to

spare yourself this pain, and my noble lord the disquiet, and Master

Tressilian, since belike he must be thought of in the matter, the danger

which is like to ensue."

"I can see nought of all these terrible consequences," said the lady

composedly, "unless by imputing to my noble lord unworthy thoughts,

which I am sure never harboured in his generous heart."

"Far be it from me to do so," said Varney. And then, after a moment's

silence, he added, with a real or affected plainness of manner, very

different from his usual smooth courtesy, "Come, madam, I will show you

that a courtier dare speak truth as well as another, when it concerns

the weal of those whom he honours and regards, ay, and although it may

infer his own danger." He waited as if to receive commands, or at least

permission, to go on; but as the lady remained silent, he proceeded,

but obviously with caution. "Look around you," he said, "noble lady, and

observe the barriers with which this place is surrounded, the studious

mystery with which the brightest jewel that England possesses is

secluded from the admiring gaze. See with what rigour your walks are

circumscribed, and your movement restrained at the beck of yonder

churlish Foster. Consider all this, and judge for yourself what can be

the cause.

"My lord's pleasure," answered the Countess; "and I am bound to seek no

other motive."

"His pleasure it is indeed," said Varney; "and his pleasure arises out

of a love worthy of the object which inspires it. But he who possesses a

treasure, and who values it, is oft anxious, in proportion to the value

he puts upon it, to secure it from the depredations of others."

"What needs all this talk, Master Varney?" said the lady, in reply. "You

would have me believe that my noble lord is jealous. Suppose it true, I

know a cure for jealousy."

"Indeed, madam?" said Varney.

"It is," replied the lady, "to speak the truth to my lord at all

times--to hold up my mind and my thoughts before him as pure as that

polished mirror--so that when he looks into my heart, he shall only see

his own features reflected there."

"I am mute, madam," answered Varney; "and as I have no reason to grieve

for Tressilian, who would have my heart's blood were he able, I shall

reconcile myself easily to what may befall the gentleman in consequence

of your frank disclosure of his having presumed to intrude upon your

solitude. You, who know my lord so much better than I, will judge if he

be likely to bear the insult unavenged."

"Nay, if I could think myself the cause of Tressilian's ruin," said the

Countess, "I who have already occasioned him so much distress, I might

be brought to be silent. And yet what will it avail, since he was seen

by Foster, and I think by some one else? No, no, Varney, urge it no

more. I will tell the whole matter to my lord; and with such pleading

for Tressilian's folly, as shall dispose my lord's generous heart rather

to serve than to punish him."

"Your judgment, madam," said Varney, "is far superior to mine,

especially as you may, if you will, prove the ice before you step on it,

by mentioning Tressilian's name to my lord, and observing how he endures

it. For Foster and his attendant, they know not Tressilian by sight, and

I can easily give them some reasonable excuse for the appearance of an

unknown stranger."

The lady paused for an instant, and then replied, "If, Varney, it

be indeed true that Foster knows not as yet that the man he saw was

Tressilian, I own I were unwilling he should learn what nowise concerns

him. He bears himself already with austerity enough, and I wish him not

to be judge or privy-councillor in my affairs."

"Tush," said Varney, "what has the surly groom to do with your

ladyship's concerns?--no more, surely, than the ban-dog which watches

his courtyard. If he is in aught distasteful to your ladyship, I have

interest enough to have him exchanged for a seneschal that shall be more

agreeable to you."

"Master Varney," said the Countess, "let us drop this theme. When I

complain of the attendants whom my lord has placed around me, it must be

to my lord himself.--Hark! I hear the trampling of horse. He comes! he

comes!" she exclaimed, jumping up in ecstasy.

"I cannot think it is he," said Varney; "or that you can hear the tread

of his horse through the closely-mantled casements."

"Stop me not, Varney--my ears are keener than thine. It is he!"

"But, madam!--but, madam!" exclaimed Varney anxiously, and still placing

himself in her way, "I trust that what I have spoken in humble duty and

service will not be turned to my ruin? I hope that my faithful advice

will not be bewrayed to my prejudice? I implore that--"

"Content thee, man--content thee!" said the Countess, "and quit my

skirt--you are too bold to detain me. Content thyself, I think not of

thee."

At this moment the folding-doors flew wide open, and a man of majestic

mien, muffled in the folds of a long dark riding-cloak, entered the

apartment.

CHAPTER VII.

"This is he

Who rides on the court-gale; controls its tides;

Knows all their secret shoals and fatal eddies;

Whose frown abases, and whose smile exalts.

He shines like any rainbow--and, perchance,

His colours are as transient."--OLD PLAY.

There was some little displeasure and confusion on the Countess's brow,

owing to her struggle with Varney's pertinacity; but it was exchanged

for an expression of the purest joy and affection, as she threw herself

into the arms of the noble stranger who entered, and clasping him to her

bosom, exclaimed, "At length--at length thou art come!"

Varney discreetly withdrew as his lord entered, and Janet was about to

do the same, when her mistress signed to her to remain. She took her

place at the farther end of the apartment, and continued standing, as if

ready for attendance.

Meanwhile the Earl, for he was of no inferior rank, returned his lady's

caress with the most affectionate ardour, but affected to resist when

she strove to take his cloak from him.

"Nay," she said, "but I will unmantle you. I must see if you have kept

your word to me, and come as the great Earl men call thee, and not as

heretofore like a private cavalier."

"Thou art like the rest of the world, Amy," said the Earl, suffering her

to prevail in the playful contest; "the jewels, and feathers, and silk

are more to them than the man whom they adorn--many a poor blade looks

gay in a velvet scabbard."

"But so cannot men say of thee, thou noble Earl," said his lady, as the

cloak dropped on the floor, and showed him dressed as princes when they

ride abroad; "thou art the good and well-tried steel, whose inly worth

deserves, yet disdains, its outward ornaments. Do not think Amy can love

thee better in this glorious garb than she did when she gave her heart

to him who wore the russet-brown cloak in the woods of Devon."

"And thou too," said the Earl, as gracefully and majestically he led

his beautiful Countess towards the chair of state which was prepared

for them both--"thou too, my love, hast donned a dress which becomes

thy rank, though it cannot improve thy beauty. What think'st thou of our

court taste?"

The lady cast a sidelong glance upon the great mirror as they passed

it by, and then said, "I know not how it is, but I think not of my own

person while I look at the reflection of thine. Sit thou there," she

said, as they approached the chair of state, "like a thing for men to

worship and to wonder at."

"Ay, love," said the Earl, "if thou wilt share my state with me."

"Not so," said the Countess; "I will sit on this footstool at thy feet,

that I may spell over thy splendour, and learn, for the first time, how

princes are attired."

And with a childish wonder, which her youth and rustic education

rendered not only excusable but becoming, mixed as it was with a

delicate show of the most tender conjugal affection, she examined and

admired from head to foot the noble form and princely attire of him who

formed the proudest ornament of the court of England's Maiden Queen,

renowned as it was for splendid courtiers, as well as for wise

counsellors. Regarding affectionately his lovely bride, and gratified by

her unrepressed admiration, the dark eye and noble features of the Earl

expressed passions more gentle than the commanding and aspiring

look which usually sat upon his broad forehead, and in the piercing

brilliancy of his dark eye; and he smiled at the simplicity which

dictated the questions she put to him concerning the various ornaments

with which he was decorated.

"The embroidered strap, as thou callest it, around my knee," he said,

"is the English Garter, an ornament which kings are proud to wear. See,

here is the star which belongs to it, and here the Diamond George, the

jewel of the order. You have heard how King Edward and the Countess of

Salisbury--"

"Oh, I know all that tale," said the Countess, slightly blushing, "and

how a lady's garter became the proudest badge of English chivalry."

"Even so," said the Earl; "and this most honourable Order I had the good

hap to receive at the same time with three most noble associates, the

Duke of Norfolk, the Marquis of Northampton, and the Earl of Rutland.

I was the lowest of the four in rank--but what then? he that climbs a

ladder must begin at the first round."

"But this other fair collar, so richly wrought, with some jewel like a

sheep hung by the middle attached to it, what," said the young Countess,

"does that emblem signify?"

"This collar," said the Earl, "with its double fusilles interchanged

with these knobs, which are supposed to present flint-stones sparkling

with fire, and sustaining the jewel you inquire about, is the badge of

the noble Order of the Golden Fleece, once appertaining to the House

of Burgundy it hath high privileges, my Amy, belonging to it, this most

noble Order; for even the King of Spain himself, who hath now succeeded

to the honours and demesnes of Burgundy, may not sit in judgment upon

a knight of the Golden Fleece, unless by assistance and consent of the

Great Chapter of the Order."

"And is this an Order belonging to the cruel King of Spain?" said the

Countess. "Alas! my noble lord, that you will defile your noble English

breast by bearing such an emblem! Bethink you of the most unhappy Queen

Mary's days, when this same Philip held sway with her in England, and of

the piles which were built for our noblest, and our wisest, and our most

truly sanctified prelates and divines--and will you, whom men call the

standard-bearer of the true Protestant faith, be contented to wear the

emblem and mark of such a Romish tyrant as he of Spain?"

"Oh, content you, my love," answered the Earl; "we who spread our sails

to gales of court favour cannot always display the ensigns we love the

best, or at all times refuse sailing under colours which we like not.

Believe me, I am not the less good Protestant, that for policy I must

accept the honour offered me by Spain, in admitting me to this his

highest order of knighthood. Besides, it belongs properly to Flanders;

and Egmont, Orange, and others have pride in seeing it displayed on an

English bosom."

"Nay, my lord, you know your own path best," replied the Countess. "And

this other collar, to what country does this fair jewel belong?"

"To a very poor one, my love," replied the Earl; "this is the Order of

Saint Andrew, revived by the last James of Scotland. It was bestowed

on me when it was thought the young widow of France and Scotland would

gladly have wedded an English baron; but a free coronet of England is

worth a crown matrimonial held at the humour of a woman, and owning only

the poor rocks and bogs of the north."

The Countess paused, as if what the Earl last said had excited some

painful but interesting train of thought; and, as she still remained

silent, her husband proceeded:--

"And now, loveliest, your wish is gratified, and you have seen your

vassal in such of his trim array as accords with riding vestments; for

robes of state and coronets are only for princely halls."

"Well, then," said the Countess, "my gratified wish has, as usual, given

rise to a new one."

"And what is it thou canst ask that I can deny?" said the fond husband.

"I wished to see my Earl visit this obscure and secret bower," said the

Countess, "in all his princely array; and now, methinks I long to sit in

one of his princely halls, and see him enter dressed in sober russet, as

when he won poor Amy Robsart's heart."

"That is a wish easily granted," said the Earl--"the sober russet shall

be donned to-morrow, if you will."

"But shall I," said the lady, "go with you to one of your castles, to

see how the richness of your dwelling will correspond with your peasant

habit?"

"Why, Amy," said the Earl, looking around, "are not these apartments

decorated with sufficient splendour? I gave the most unbounded order,

and, methinks, it has been indifferently well obeyed; but if thou

canst tell me aught which remains to be done, I will instantly give

direction."

"Nay, my lord, now you mock me," replied the Countess; "the gaiety of

this rich lodging exceeds my imagination as much as it does my desert.

But shall not your wife, my love--at least one day soon--be surrounded

with the honour which arises neither from the toils of the mechanic

who decks her apartment, nor from the silks and jewels with which your

generosity adorns her, but which is attached to her place among the

matronage, as the avowed wife of England's noblest Earl?"

"One day?" said her husband. "Yes, Amy, my love, one day this shall

surely happen; and, believe me, thou canst not wish for that day more

fondly than I. With what rapture could I retire from labours of state,

and cares and toils of ambition, to spend my life in dignity and honour

on my own broad domains, with thee, my lovely Amy, for my friend and

companion! But, Amy, this cannot yet be; and these dear but stolen

interviews are all I can give to the loveliest and the best beloved of

her sex."

"But WHY can it not be?" urged the Countess, in the softest tones of

persuasion--"why can it not immediately take place--this more perfect,

this uninterrupted union, for which you say you wish, and which the laws

of God and man alike command? Ah! did you but desire it half as much

as you say, mighty and favoured as you are, who or what should bar your

attaining your wish?"

The Earl's brow was overcast.

"Amy," he said, "you speak of what you understand not. We that toil in

courts are like those who climb a mountain of loose sand--we dare make

no halt until some projecting rock affords us a secure footing and

resting-place. If we pause sooner, we slide down by our own weight,

an object of universal derision. I stand high, but I stand not secure

enough to follow my own inclination. To declare my marriage were to be

the artificer of my own ruin. But, believe me, I will reach a point, and

that speedily, when I can do justice to thee and to myself. Meantime,

poison not the bliss of the present moment, by desiring that which

cannot at present be, Let me rather know whether all here is managed

to thy liking. How does Foster bear himself to you?--in all things

respectful, I trust, else the fellow shall dearly rue it."

"He reminds me sometimes of the necessity of this privacy," answered

the lady, with a sigh; "but that is reminding me of your wishes, and

therefore I am rather bound to him than disposed to blame him for it."

"I have told you the stern necessity which is upon us," replied the

Earl. "Foster is, I note, somewhat sullen of mood; but Varney warrants

to me his fidelity and devotion to my service. If thou hast aught,

however, to complain of the mode in which he discharges his duty, he

shall abye it."

"Oh, I have nought to complain of," answered the lady, "so he discharges

his task with fidelity to you; and his daughter Janet is the kindest and

best companion of my solitude--her little air of precision sits so well

upon her!"

"Is she indeed?" said the Earl. "She who gives you pleasure must not

pass unrewarded.--Come hither, damsel."

"Janet," said the lady, "come hither to my lord."

Janet, who, as we already noticed, had discreetly retired to some

distance, that her presence might be no check upon the private

conversation of her lord and lady, now came forward; and as she made

her reverential curtsy, the Earl could not help smiling at the contrast

which the extreme simplicity of her dress, and the prim demureness of

her looks, made with a very pretty countenance and a pair of black eyes,

that laughed in spite of their mistress's desire to look grave.

"I am bound to you, pretty damsel," said the Earl, "for the contentment

which your service hath given to this lady." As he said this, he took

from his finger a ring of some price, and offered it to Janet Foster,

adding, "Wear this, for her sake and for mine."

"I am well pleased, my lord," answered Janet demurely, "that my poor

service hath gratified my lady, whom no one can draw nigh to without

desiring to please; but we of the precious Master Holdforth's

congregation seek not, like the gay daughters of this world, to twine

gold around our fingers, or wear stones upon our necks, like the vain

women of Tyre and of Sidon."

"Oh, what! you are a grave professor of the precise sisterhood, pretty

Mistress Janet," said the Earl, "and I think your father is of the same

congregation in sincerity? I like you both the better for it; for I have

been prayed for, and wished well to, in your congregations. And you may

the better afford the lack of ornament, Mistress Janet, because your

fingers are slender, and your neck white. But here is what neither

Papist nor Puritan, latitudinarian nor precisian, ever boggles or makes

mouths at. E'en take it, my girl, and employ it as you list."

So saying, he put into her hand five broad gold pieces of Philip and

Mary.

"I would not accept this gold either," said Janet, "but that I hope to

find a use for it which will bring a blessing on us all."

"Even please thyself, pretty Janet," said the Earl, "and I shall be well

satisfied. And I prithee let them hasten the evening collation."

"I have bidden Master Varney and Master Foster to sup with us, my lord,"

said the Countess, as Janet retired to obey the Earl's commands; "has it

your approbation?"

"What you do ever must have so, my sweet Amy," replied her husband; "and

I am the better pleased thou hast done them this grace, because Richard

Varney is my sworn man, and a close brother of my secret council; and

for the present, I must needs repose much trust in this Anthony Foster."

"I had a boon to beg of thee, and a secret to tell thee, my dear lord,"

said the Countess, with a faltering accent.

"Let both be for to-morrow, my love," replied the Earl. "I see they open

the folding-doors into the banqueting-parlour, and as I have ridden far

and fast, a cup of wine will not be unacceptable."

So saying he led his lovely wife into the next apartment, where Varney

and Foster received them with the deepest reverences, which the first

paid after the fashion of the court, and the second after that of the

congregation. The Earl returned their salutation with the negligent

courtesy of one long used to such homage; while the Countess repaid it

with a punctilious solicitude, which showed it was not quite so familiar

to her.

The banquet at which the company seated themselves corresponded in

magnificence with the splendour of the apartment in which it was served

up, but no domestic gave his attendance. Janet alone stood ready to wait

upon the company; and, indeed, the board was so well supplied with all

that could be desired, that little or no assistance was necessary. The

Earl and his lady occupied the upper end of the table, and Varney and

Foster sat beneath the salt, as was the custom with inferiors. The

latter, overawed perhaps by society to which he was altogether unused,

did not utter a single syllable during the repast; while Varney, with

great tact and discernment, sustained just so much of the conversation

as, without the appearance of intrusion on his part, prevented it from

languishing, and maintained the good-humour of the Earl at the highest

pitch. This man was indeed highly qualified by nature to discharge the

part in which he found himself placed, being discreet and cautious on

the one hand, and, on the other, quick, keen-witted, and imaginative;

so that even the Countess, prejudiced as she was against him on many

accounts, felt and enjoyed his powers of conversation, and was more

disposed than she had ever hitherto found herself to join in the praises

which the Earl lavished on his favourite. The hour of rest at length

arrived, the Earl and Countess retired to their apartment, and all was

silent in the castle for the rest of the night.

Early on the ensuing morning, Varney acted as the Earl's chamberlain as

well as his master of horse, though the latter was his proper office in

that magnificent household, where knights and gentlemen of good descent

were well contented to hold such menial situations, as nobles themselves

held in that of the sovereign. The duties of each of these charges were

familiar to Varney, who, sprung from an ancient but somewhat decayed

family, was the Earl's page during his earlier and more obscure

fortunes, and, faithful to him in adversity, had afterwards contrived to

render himself no less useful to him in his rapid and splendid advance

to fortune; thus establishing in him an interest resting both on present

and past services, which rendered him an almost indispensable sharer of

his confidence.

"Help me to do on a plainer riding-suit, Varney," said the Earl, as he

laid aside his morning-gown, flowered with silk and lined with sables,

"and put these chains and fetters there" (pointing to the collars of the

various Orders which lay on the table) "into their place of security--my

neck last night was well-nigh broke with the weight of them. I am half

of the mind that they shall gall me no more. They are bonds which knaves

have invented to fetter fools. How thinkest thou, Varney?"

"Faith, my good lord," said his attendant, "I think fetters of gold are

like no other fetters--they are ever the weightier the welcomer."

"For all that, Varney," replied his master, "I am well-nigh resolved

they shall bind me to the court no longer. What can further service and

higher favour give me, beyond the high rank and large estate which I

have already secured? What brought my father to the block, but that he

could not bound his wishes within right and reason? I have, you know,

had mine own ventures and mine own escapes. I am well-nigh resolved to

tempt the sea no further, but sit me down in quiet on the shore."

"And gather cockle-shells, with Dan Cupid to aid you," said Varney.

"How mean you by that, Varney?" said the Earl somewhat hastily.

"Nay, my lord," said Varney, "be not angry with me. If your lordship

is happy in a lady so rarely lovely that, in order to enjoy her company

with somewhat more freedom, you are willing to part with all you have

hitherto lived for, some of your poor servants may be sufferers; but

your bounty hath placed me so high, that I shall ever have enough to

maintain a poor gentleman in the rank befitting the high office he has

held in your lordship's family."

"Yet you seem discontented when I propose throwing up a dangerous game,

which may end in the ruin of both of us."

"I, my lord?" said Varney; "surely I have no cause to regret your

lordship's retreat! It will not be Richard Varney who will incur

the displeasure of majesty, and the ridicule of the court, when the

stateliest fabric that ever was founded upon a prince's favour melts

away like a morning frost-work. I would only have you yourself to be

assured, my lord, ere you take a step which cannot be retracted, that

you consult your fame and happiness in the course you propose."

"Speak on, then, Varney," said the Earl; "I tell thee I have determined

nothing, and will weigh all considerations on either side."

"Well, then, my lord," replied Varney, "we will suppose the step taken,

the frown frowned, the laugh laughed, and the moan moaned. You have

retired, we will say, to some one of your most distant castles, so far

from court that you hear neither the sorrow of your friends nor the glee

of your enemies, We will suppose, too, that your successful rival will

be satisfied (a thing greatly to be doubted) with abridging and cutting

away the branches of the great tree which so long kept the sun from him,

and that he does not insist upon tearing you up by the roots. Well; the

late prime favourite of England, who wielded her general's staff and

controlled her parliaments, is now a rural baron, hunting, hawking,

drinking fat ale with country esquires, and mustering his men at the

command of the high sheriff--"

"Varney, forbear!" said the Earl.

"Nay, my lord, you must give me leave to conclude my picture.--Sussex

governs England--the Queen's health fails--the succession is to be

settled--a road is opened to ambition more splendid than ambition ever

dreamed of. You hear all this as you sit by the hob, under the shade of

your hall-chimney. You then begin to think what hopes you have fallen

from, and what insignificance you have embraced; and all that you

might look babies in the eyes of your fair wife oftener than once a

fortnight."

"I say, Varney," said the Earl, "no more of this. I said not that the

step, which my own ease and comfort would urge me to, was to be taken

hastily, or without due consideration to the public safety. Bear witness

to me, Varney; I subdue my wishes of retirement, not because I am moved

by the call of private ambition, but that I may preserve the position in

which I may best serve my country at the hour of need.--Order our horses

presently; I will wear, as formerly, one of the livery cloaks, and ride

before the portmantle. Thou shalt be master for the day, Varney--neglect

nothing that can blind suspicion. We will to horse ere men are stirring.

I will but take leave of my lady, and be ready. I impose a restraint on

my own poor heart, and wound one yet more dear to me; but the patriot

must subdue the husband."

Having said this in a melancholy but firm accent, he left the dressing

apartment.

"I am glad thou art gone," thought Varney, "or, practised as I am in the

follies of mankind, I had laughed in the very face of thee! Thou mayest

tire as thou wilt of thy new bauble, thy pretty piece of painted Eve's

flesh there, I will not be thy hindrance. But of thine old bauble,

ambition, thou shalt not tire; for as you climb the hill, my lord, you

must drag Richard Varney up with you, and if he can urge you to the

ascent he means to profit by, believe me he will spare neither whip nor

spur, and for you, my pretty lady, that would be Countess outright, you

were best not thwart my courses, lest you are called to an old reckoning

on a new score. 'Thou shalt be master,' did he say? By my faith, he may

find that he spoke truer than he is aware of; and thus he who, in

the estimation of so many wise-judging men, can match Burleigh and

Walsingham in policy, and Sussex in war, becomes pupil to his own

menial--and all for a hazel eye and a little cunning red and white, and

so falls ambition. And yet if the charms of mortal woman could excuse

a man's politic pate for becoming bewildered, my lord had the excuse

at his right hand on this blessed evening that has last passed over us.

Well--let things roll as they may, he shall make me great, or I will

make myself happy; and for that softer piece of creation, if she speak

not out her interview with Tressilian, as well I think she dare not, she

also must traffic with me for concealment and mutual support, in spite

of all this scorn. I must to the stables. Well, my lord, I order your

retinue now; the time may soon come that my master of the horse shall

order mine own. What was Thomas Cromwell but a smith's son? and he died

my lord--on a scaffold, doubtless, but that, too, was in character.

And what was Ralph Sadler but the clerk of Cromwell? and he has gazed

eighteen fair lordships--VIA! I know my steerage as well as they."

So saying, he left the apartment.

In the meanwhile the Earl had re-entered the bedchamber, bent on taking

a hasty farewell of the lovely Countess, and scarce daring to trust

himself in private with her, to hear requests again urged which he found

it difficult to parry, yet which his recent conversation with his master

of horse had determined him not to grant.

He found her in a white cymar of silk lined with furs, her little

feet unstockinged and hastily thrust into slippers; her unbraided hair

escaping from under her midnight coif, with little array but her own

loveliness, rather augmented than diminished by the grief which she felt

at the approaching moment of separation.

"Now, God be with thee, my dearest and loveliest!" said the Earl, scarce

tearing himself from her embrace, yet again returning to fold her again

and again in his arms, and again bidding farewell, and again returning

to kiss and bid adieu once more. "The sun is on the verge of the blue

horizon--I dare not stay. Ere this I should have been ten miles from

hence."

Such were the words with which at length he strove to cut short their

parting interview. "You will not grant my request, then?" said the

Countess. "Ah, false knight! did ever lady, with bare foot in slipper,

seek boon of a brave knight, yet return with denial?"

"Anything, Amy, anything thou canst ask I will grant," answered the

Earl--"always excepting," he said, "that which might ruin us both."

"Nay," said the Countess, "I urge not my wish to be acknowledged in the

character which would make me the envy of England--as the wife, that

is, of my brave and noble lord, the first as the most fondly beloved of

English nobles. Let me but share the secret with my dear father! Let me

but end his misery on my unworthy account--they say he is ill, the good

old kind-hearted man!"

"They say?" asked the Earl hastily; "who says? Did not Varney convey to

Sir Hugh all we dare at present tell him concerning your happiness and

welfare? and has he not told you that the good old knight was following,

with good heart and health, his favourite and wonted exercise. Who has

dared put other thoughts into your head?"

"Oh, no one, my lord, no one," said the Countess, something alarmed at

the tone, in which the question was put; "but yet, my lord, I would fain

be assured by mine own eyesight that my father is well."

"Be contented, Amy; thou canst not now have communication with thy

father or his house. Were it not a deep course of policy to commit no

secret unnecessarily to the custody of more than must needs be, it were

sufficient reason for secrecy that yonder Cornish man, yonder Trevanion,

or Tressilian, or whatever his name is, haunts the old knight's house,

and must necessarily know whatever is communicated there."

"My lord," answered the Countess, "I do not think it so. My father has

been long noted a worthy and honourable man; and for Tressilian, if

we can pardon ourselves the ill we have wrought him, I will wager the

coronet I am to share with you one day that he is incapable of returning

injury for injury."

"I will not trust him, however, Amy," said her husband--"by my honour,

I will not trust him, I would rather the foul fiend intermingle in our

secret than this Tressilian!"

"And why, my lord?" said the Countess, though she shuddered slightly at

the tone of determination in which he spoke; "let me but know why you

think thus hardly of Tressilian?"

"Madam," replied the Earl, "my will ought to be a sufficient reason. If

you desire more, consider how this Tressilian is leagued, and with whom.

He stands high in the opinion of this Radcliffe, this Sussex, against

whom I am barely able to maintain my ground in the opinion of our

suspicious mistress; and if he had me at such advantage, Amy, as to

become acquainted with the tale of our marriage, before Elizabeth were

fitly prepared, I were an outcast from her grace for ever--a bankrupt at

once in favour and in fortune, perhaps, for she hath in her a touch of

her father Henry--a victim, and it may be a bloody one, to her offended

and jealous resentment."

"But why, my lord," again urged his lady, "should you deem thus

injuriously of a man of whom you know so little? What you do know

of Tressilian is through me, and it is I who assure you that in no

circumstances will be betray your secret. If I did him wrong in your

behalf, my lord, I am now the more concerned you should do him justice.

You are offended at my speaking of him, what would you say had I

actually myself seen him?"

"If you had," replied the Earl, "you would do well to keep that

interview as secret as that which is spoken in a confessional. I seek no

one's ruin; but he who thrusts himself on my secret privacy were better

look well to his future walk. The bear [The Leicester cognizance was the

ancient device adopted by his father, when Earl of Warwick, the bear and

ragged staff.] brooks no one to cross his awful path."

"Awful, indeed!" said the Countess, turning very pale.

"You are ill, my love," said the Earl, supporting her in his arms.

"Stretch yourself on your couch again; it is but an early day for you to

leave it. Have you aught else, involving less than my fame, my fortune,

and my life, to ask of me?"

"Nothing, my lord and love," answered the Countess faintly; "something

there was that I would have told you, but your anger has driven it from

my recollection."

"Reserve it till our next meeting, my love," said the Earl fondly, and

again embracing her; "and barring only those requests which I cannot

and dare not grant, thy wish must be more than England and all its

dependencies can fulfil, if it is not gratified to the letter."

Thus saying, he at length took farewell. At the bottom of the staircase

he received from Varney an ample livery cloak and slouched hat, in which

he wrapped himself so as to disguise his person and completely conceal

his features. Horses were ready in the courtyard for himself and Varney;

for one or two of his train, intrusted with the secret so far as to know

or guess that the Earl intrigued with a beautiful lady at that mansion,

though her name and duality were unknown to them, had already been

dismissed over-night.

Anthony Foster himself had in hand the rein of the Earl's palfrey, a

stout and able nag for the road; while his old serving-man held the

bridle of the more showy and gallant steed which Richard Varney was to

occupy in the character of master.

As the Earl approached, however, Varney advanced to hold his master's

bridle, and to prevent Foster from paying that duty to the Earl which he

probably considered as belonging to his own office. Foster scowled at

an interference which seemed intended to prevent his paying his court

to his patron, but gave place to Varney; and the Earl, mounting without

further observation, and forgetting that his assumed character of a

domestic threw him into the rear of his supposed master, rode pensively

out of the quadrangle, not without waving his hand repeatedly in answer

to the signals which were made by the Countess with her kerchief from

the windows of her apartment.

While his stately form vanished under the dark archway which led out of

the quadrangle, Varney muttered, "There goes fine policy--the servant

before the master!" then as he disappeared, seized the moment to speak a

word with Foster. "Thou look'st dark on me, Anthony," he said, "as if I

had deprived thee of a parting nod of my lord; but I have moved him to

leave thee a better remembrance for thy faithful service. See here!

a purse of as good gold as ever chinked under a miser's thumb and

fore-finger. Ay, count them, lad," said he, as Foster received the gold

with a grim smile, "and add to them the goodly remembrance he gave last

night to Janet."

"How's this? how's this?" said Anthony Foster hastily; "gave he gold to

Janet?"

"Ay, man, wherefore not?--does not her service to his fair lady require

guerdon?"

"She shall have none on't," said Foster; "she shall return it. I know

his dotage on one face is as brief as it is deep. His affections are as

fickle as the moon."

"Why, Foster, thou art mad--thou dost not hope for such good fortune

as that my lord should cast an eye on Janet? Who, in the fiend's name,

would listen to the thrush while the nightingale is singing?"

"Thrush or nightingale, all is one to the fowler; and, Master Varney,

you can sound the quail-pipe most daintily to wile wantons into his

nets. I desire no such devil's preferment for Janet as you have brought

many a poor maiden to. Dost thou laugh? I will keep one limb of my

family, at least, from Satan's clutches, that thou mayest rely on. She

shall restore the gold."

"Ay, or give it to thy keeping, Tony, which will serve as well,"

answered Varney; "but I have that to say which is more serious. Our lord

is returning to court in an evil humour for us."

"How meanest thou?" said Foster. "Is he tired already of his pretty

toy--his plaything yonder? He has purchased her at a monarch's ransom,

and I warrant me he rues his bargain."

"Not a whit, Tony," answered the master of the horse; "he dotes on her,

and will forsake the court for her. Then down go hopes, possessions, and

safety--church-lands are resumed, Tony, and well if the holders be not

called to account in Exchequer."

"That were ruin," said Foster, his brow darkening with apprehensions;

"and all this for a woman! Had it been for his soul's sake, it were

something; and I sometimes wish I myself could fling away the world that

cleaves to me, and be as one of the poorest of our church."

"Thou art like enough to be so, Tony," answered Varney; "but I think

the devil will give thee little credit for thy compelled poverty, and so

thou losest on all hands. But follow my counsel, and Cumnor Place shall

be thy copyhold yet. Say nothing of this Tressilian's visit--not a word

until I give thee notice."

"And wherefore, I pray you?" asked Foster, suspiciously.

"Dull beast!" replied Varney. "In my lord's present humour it were the

ready way to confirm him in his resolution of retirement, should he know

that his lady was haunted with such a spectre in his absence. He would

be for playing the dragon himself over his golden fruit, and then, Tony,

thy occupation is ended. A word to the wise. Farewell! I must follow

him."

He turned his horse, struck him with the spurs, and rode off under the

archway in pursuit of his lord.

"Would thy occupation were ended, or thy neck broken, damned pander!"

said Anthony Foster. "But I must follow his beck, for his interest and

mine are the same, and he can wind the proud Earl to his will. Janet

shall give me those pieces though; they shall be laid out in some way

for God's service, and I will keep them separate in my strong chest,

till I can fall upon a fitting employment for them. No contagious vapour

shall breathe on Janet--she shall remain pure as a blessed spirit, were

it but to pray God for her father. I need her prayers, for I am at a

hard pass. Strange reports are abroad concerning my way of life.

The congregation look cold on me, and when Master Holdforth spoke of

hypocrites being like a whited sepulchre, which within was full of

dead men's bones, methought he looked full at me. The Romish was a

comfortable faith; Lambourne spoke true in that. A man had but to

follow his thrift by such ways as offered--tell his beads, hear a mass,

confess, and be absolved. These Puritans tread a harder and a rougher

path; but I will try--I will read my Bible for an hour ere I again open

mine iron chest."

Varney, meantime, spurred after his lord, whom he found waiting for him

at the postern gate of the park.

"You waste time, Varney," said the Earl, "and it presses. I must be at

Woodstock before I can safely lay aside my disguise, and till then I

journey in some peril."

"It is but two hours' brisk riding, my lord," said Varney. "For me,

I only stopped to enforce your commands of care and secrecy on yonder

Foster, and to inquire about the abode of the gentleman whom I would

promote to your lordship's train, in the room of Trevors."

"Is he fit for the meridian of the antechamber, think'st thou?" said the

Earl.

"He promises well, my lord," replied Varney; "but if your lordship were

pleased to ride on, I could go back to Cumnor, and bring him to your

lordship at Woodstock before you are out of bed."

"Why, I am asleep there, thou knowest, at this moment," said the Earl;

"and I pray you not to spare horse-flesh, that you may be with me at my

levee."

So saying, he gave his horse the spur, and proceeded on his journey,

while Varney rode back to Cumnor by the public road, avoiding the park.

The latter alighted at the door of the bonny Black Bear, and desired to

speak with Master Michael Lambourne, That respectable character was not

long of appearing before his new patron, but it was with downcast looks.

"Thou hast lost the scent," said Varney, "of thy comrade Tressilian.

I know it by thy bang-dog visage. Is this thy alacrity, thou impudent

knave?"

"Cogswounds!" said Lambourne, "there was never a trail so finely

hunted. I saw him to earth at mine uncle's here--stuck to him like

bees'-wax--saw him at supper--watched him to his chamber, and, presto!

he is gone next morning, the very hostler knows not where."

"This sounds like practice upon me, sir," replied Varney; "and if it

proves so, by my soul you shall repent it!"

"Sir, the best hound will be sometimes at fault," answered Lambourne;

"how should it serve me that this fellow should have thus evanished?

You may ask mine host, Giles Gosling--ask the tapster and hostler--ask

Cicely, and the whole household, how I kept eyes on Tressilian while

he was on foot. On my soul, I could not be expected to watch him like a

sick nurse, when I had seen him fairly a-bed in his chamber. That will

be allowed me, surely."

Varney did, in fact, make some inquiry among the household, which

confirmed the truth of Lambourne's statement. Tressilian, it was

unanimously agreed, had departed suddenly and unexpectedly, betwixt

night and morning.

"But I will wrong no one," said mine host; "he left on the table in

his lodging the full value of his reckoning, with some allowance to the

servants of the house, which was the less necessary that he saddled his

own gelding, as it seems, without the hostler's assistance."

Thus satisfied of the rectitude of Lambourne's conduct, Varney began to

talk to him upon his future prospects, and the mode in which he meant

to bestow himself, intimating that he understood from Foster he was not

disinclined to enter into the household of a nobleman.

"Have you," said he, "ever been at court?"

"No," replied Lambourne; "but ever since I was ten years old, I have

dreamt once a week that I was there, and made my fortune."

"It may be your own fault if your dream comes not true," said Varney.

"Are you needy?"

"Um!" replied Lambourne; "I love pleasure."

"That is a sufficient answer, and an honest one," said Varney. "Know

you aught of the requisites expected from the retainer of a rising

courtier?"

"I have imagined them to myself, sir," answered Lambourne; "as, for

example, a quick eye, a close mouth, a ready and bold hand, a sharp wit,

and a blunt conscience."

"And thine, I suppose," said Varney, "has had its edge blunted long

since?"

"I cannot remember, sir, that its edge was ever over-keen," replied

Lambourne. "When I was a youth, I had some few whimsies; but I rubbed

them partly out of my recollection on the rough grindstone of the wars,

and what remained I washed out in the broad waves of the Atlantic."

"Thou hast served, then, in the Indies?"

"In both East and West," answered the candidate for court service, "by

both sea and land. I have served both the Portugal and the Spaniard,

both the Dutchman and the Frenchman, and have made war on our own

account with a crew of jolly fellows, who held there was no peace beyond

the Line." [Sir Francis Drake, Morgan, and many a bold buccaneer of

those days, were, in fact, little better than pirates.]

"Thou mayest do me, and my lord, and thyself, good service," said

Varney, after a pause. "But observe, I know the world--and answer me

truly, canst thou be faithful?"

"Did you not know the world," answered Lambourne, "it were my duty to

say ay, without further circumstance, and to swear to it with life and

honour, and so forth. But as it seems to me that your worship is one who

desires rather honest truth than politic falsehood, I reply to you, that

I can be faithful to the gallows' foot, ay, to the loop that dangles

from it, if I am well used and well recompensed--not otherwise."

"To thy other virtues thou canst add, no doubt," said Varney, in a

jeering tone, "the knack of seeming serious and religious, when the

moment demands it?"

"It would cost me nothing," said Lambourne, "to say yes; but, to speak

on the square, I must needs say no. If you want a hypocrite, you may

take Anthony Foster, who, from his childhood, had some sort of phantom

haunting him, which he called religion, though it was that sort of

godliness which always ended in being great gain. But I have no such

knack of it."

"Well," replied Varney, "if thou hast no hypocrisy, hast thou not a nag

here in the stable?"

"Ay, sir," said Lambourne, "that shall take hedge and ditch with my Lord

Duke's best hunters. Then I made a little mistake on Shooter's Hill,

and stopped an ancient grazier whose pouches were better lined than his

brain-pan, the bonny bay nag carried me sheer off in spite of the whole

hue and cry."

"Saddle him then instantly, and attend me," said Varney. "Leave thy

clothes and baggage under charge of mine host; and I will conduct thee

to a service, in which, if thou do not better thyself, the fault shall

not be fortune's, but thine own."

"Brave and hearty!" said Lambourne, "and I am mounted in an

instant.--Knave, hostler, saddle my nag without the loss of one second,

as thou dost value the safety of thy noddle.--Pretty Cicely, take half

this purse to comfort thee for my sudden departure."

"Gogsnouns!" replied the father, "Cicely wants no such token from thee.

Go away, Mike, and gather grace if thou canst, though I think thou goest

not to the land where it grows."

"Let me look at this Cicely of thine, mine host," said Varney; "I have

heard much talk of her beauty."

"It is a sunburnt beauty," said mine host, "well qualified to stand out

rain and wind, but little calculated to please such critical gallants as

yourself. She keeps her chamber, and cannot encounter the glance of such

sunny-day courtiers as my noble guest."

"Well, peace be with her, my good host," answered Varney; "our horses

are impatient--we bid you good day."

"Does my nephew go with you, so please you?" said Gosling.

"Ay, such is his purpose," answered Richard Varney.

"You are right--fully right," replied mine host--"you are, I say, fully

right, my kinsman. Thou hast got a gay horse; see thou light not unaware

upon a halter--or, if thou wilt needs be made immortal by means of

a rope, which thy purpose of following this gentleman renders not

unlikely, I charge thee to find a gallows as far from Cumnor as thou

conveniently mayest. And so I commend you to your saddle."

The master of the horse and his new retainer mounted accordingly,

leaving the landlord to conclude his ill-omened farewell, to himself

and at leisure; and set off together at a rapid pace, which prevented

conversation until the ascent of a steep sandy hill permitted them to

resume it.

"You are contented, then," said Varney to his companion, "to take court

service?"

"Ay, worshipful sir, if you like my terms as well as I like yours."

"And what are your terms?" demanded Varney.

"If I am to have a quick eye for my patron's interest, he must have a

dull one towards my faults," said Lambourne.

"Ay," said Varney, "so they lie not so grossly open that he must needs

break his shins over them."

"Agreed," said Lambourne. "Next, if I run down game, I must have the

picking of the bones."

"That is but reason," replied Varney, "so that your betters are served

before you."

"Good," said Lambourne; "and it only remains to be said, that if the law

and I quarrel, my patron must bear me out, for that is a chief point."

"Reason again," said Varney, "if the quarrel hath happened in your

master's service."

"For the wage and so forth, I say nothing," proceeded Lambourne; "it is

the secret guerdon that I must live by."

"Never fear," said Varney; "thou shalt have clothes and spending money

to ruffle it with the best of thy degree, for thou goest to a household

where you have gold, as they say, by the eye."

"That jumps all with my humour," replied Michael Lambourne; "and it only

remains that you tell me my master's name."

"My name is Master Richard Varney," answered his companion.

"But I mean," said Lambourne, "the name of the noble lord to whose

service you are to prefer me."

"How, knave, art thou too good to call me master?" said Varney hastily;

"I would have thee bold to others, but not saucy to me."

"I crave your worship's pardon," said Lambourne, "but you seemed

familiar with Anthony Foster; now I am familiar with Anthony myself."

"Thou art a shrewd knave, I see," replied Varney. "Mark me--I do indeed

propose to introduce thee into a nobleman's household; but it is upon

my person thou wilt chiefly wait, and upon my countenance that thou wilt

depend. I am his master of horse. Thou wilt soon know his name--it is

one that shakes the council and wields the state."

"By this light, a brave spell to conjure with," said Lambourne, "if a

man would discover hidden treasures!"

"Used with discretion, it may prove so," replied Varney; "but mark--if

thou conjure with it at thine own hand, it may raise a devil who will

tear thee in fragments."

"Enough said," replied Lambourne; "I will not exceed my limits."

The travellers then resumed the rapid rate of travelling which their

discourse had interrupted, and soon arrived at the Royal Park of

Woodstock. This ancient possession of the crown of England was then very

different from what it had been when it was the residence of the fair

Rosamond, and the scene of Henry the Second's secret and illicit amours;

and yet more unlike to the scene which it exhibits in the present day,

when Blenheim House commemorates the victory of Marlborough, and no less

the genius of Vanbrugh, though decried in his own time by persons of

taste far inferior to his own. It was, in Elizabeth's time, an ancient

mansion in bad repair, which had long ceased to be honoured with the

royal residence, to the great impoverishment of the adjacent village.

The inhabitants, however, had made several petitions to the Queen to

have the favour of the sovereign's countenance occasionally bestowed

upon them; and upon this very business, ostensibly at least, was the

noble lord, whom we have already introduced to our readers, a visitor at

Woodstock.

Varney and Lambourne galloped without ceremony into the courtyard of the

ancient and dilapidated mansion, which presented on that morning a scene

of bustle which it had not exhibited for two reigns. Officers of the

Earl's household, liverymen and retainers, went and came with all the

insolent fracas which attaches to their profession. The neigh of horses

and the baying of hounds were heard; for my lord, in his occupation of

inspecting and surveying the manor and demesne, was of course provided

with the means of following his pleasure in the chase or park, said to

have been the earliest that was enclosed in England, and which was well

stocked with deer that had long roamed there unmolested. Several of the

inhabitants of the village, in anxious hope of a favourable result from

this unwonted visit, loitered about the courtyard, and awaited the great

man's coming forth. Their attention was excited by the hasty arrival of

Varney, and a murmur ran amongst them, "The Earl's master of the

horse!" while they hurried to bespeak favour by hastily unbonneting, and

proffering to hold the bridle and stirrup of the favoured retainer and

his attendant.

"Stand somewhat aloof, my masters!" said Varney haughtily, "and let the

domestics do their office."

The mortified citizens and peasants fell back at the signal; while

Lambourne, who had his eye upon his superior's deportment, repelled

the services of those who offered to assist him, with yet more

discourtesy--"Stand back, Jack peasant, with a murrain to you, and let

these knave footmen do their duty!"

While they gave their nags to the attendants of the household, and

walked into the mansion with an air of superiority which long practice

and consciousness of birth rendered natural to Varney, and which

Lambourne endeavoured to imitate as well as he could, the poor

inhabitants of Woodstock whispered to each other, "Well-a-day! God save

us from all such misproud princoxes! An the master be like the men, why,

the fiend may take all, and yet have no more than his due."

"Silence, good neighbours!" said the bailiff, "keep tongue betwixt

teeth; we shall know more by-and-by. But never will a lord come to

Woodstock so welcome as bluff old King Harry! He would horsewhip a

fellow one day with his own royal hand, and then fling him an handful

of silver groats, with his own broad face on them, to 'noint the sore

withal."

"Ay, rest be with him!" echoed the auditors; "it will be long ere this

Lady Elizabeth horsewhip any of us."

"There is no saying," answered the bailiff. "Meanwhile, patience, good

neighbours, and let us comfort ourselves by thinking that we deserve

such notice at her Grace's hands."

Meanwhile, Varney, closely followed by his new dependant, made his way

to the hall, where men of more note and consequence than those left in

the courtyard awaited the appearance of the Earl, who as yet kept his

chamber. All paid court to Varney, with more or less deference, as

suited their own rank, or the urgency of the business which brought them

to his lord's levee. To the general question of, "When comes my lord

forth, Master Varney?" he gave brief answers, as, "See you not my boots?

I am but just returned from Oxford, and know nothing of it," and the

like, until the same query was put in a higher tone by a personage of

more importance. "I will inquire of the chamberlain, Sir Thomas Copely,"

was the reply. The chamberlain, distinguished by his silver key,

answered that the Earl only awaited Master Varney's return to come down,

but that he would first speak with him in his private chamber. Varney,

therefore, bowed to the company, and took leave, to enter his lord's

apartment.

There was a murmur of expectation which lasted a few minutes, and was

at length hushed by the opening of the folding-doors at the upper end or

the apartment, through which the Earl made his entrance, marshalled by

his chamberlain and the steward of his family, and followed by Richard

Varney. In his noble mien and princely features, men read nothing of

that insolence which was practised by his dependants. His courtesies

were, indeed, measured by the rank of those to whom they were addressed,

but even the meanest person present had a share of his gracious notice.

The inquiries which he made respecting the condition of the manor, of

the Queen's rights there, and of the advantages and disadvantages which

might attend her occasional residence at the royal seat of Woodstock,

seemed to show that he had most earnestly investigated the matter of the

petition of the inhabitants, and with a desire to forward the interest

of the place.

"Now the Lord love his noble countenance!" said the bailiff, who had

thrust himself into the presence-chamber; "he looks somewhat pale. I

warrant him he hath spent the whole night in perusing our memorial.

Master Toughyarn, who took six months to draw it up, said it would take

a week to understand it; and see if the Earl hath not knocked the marrow

out of it in twenty-four hours!"

The Earl then acquainted them that he should move their sovereign

to honour Woodstock occasionally with her residence during her royal

progresses, that the town and its vicinity might derive, from her

countenance and favour, the same advantages as from those of her

predecessors. Meanwhile, he rejoiced to be the expounder of her

gracious pleasure, in assuring them that, for the increase of trade

and encouragement of the worthy burgesses of Woodstock, her Majesty was

minded to erect the town into a Staple for wool.

This joyful intelligence was received with the acclamations not only of

the better sort who were admitted to the audience-chamber, but of the

commons who awaited without.

The freedom of the corporation was presented to the Earl upon knee by

the magistrates of the place, together with a purse of gold pieces,

which the Earl handed to Varney, who, on his part, gave a share to

Lambourne, as the most acceptable earnest of his new service.

The Earl and his retinue took horse soon after to return to court,

accompanied by the shouts of the inhabitants of Woodstock, who made the

old oaks ring with re-echoing, "Long live Queen Elizabeth, and the noble

Earl of Leicester!" The urbanity and courtesy of the Earl even threw a

gleam of popularity over his attendants, as their haughty deportment had

formerly obscured that of their master; and men shouted, "Long life to

the Earl, and to his gallant followers!" as Varney and Lambourne, each

in his rank, rode proudly through the streets of Woodstock.

CHAPTER VIII.

HOST. I will hear you, Master Fenton; and I will, at the least, keep

your counsel.--MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

It becomes necessary to return to the detail of those circumstances

which accompanied, and indeed occasioned, the sudden disappearance

of Tressilian from the sign of the Black Bear at Cumnor. It will be

recollected that this gentleman, after his rencounter with Varney, had

returned to Giles Gosling's caravansary, where he shut himself up in his

own chamber, demanded pen, ink, and paper, and announced his purpose

to remain private for the day. In the evening he appeared again in the

public room, where Michael Lambourne, who had been on the watch for

him, agreeably to his engagement to Varney, endeavoured to renew his

acquaintance with him, and hoped he retained no unfriendly recollection

of the part he had taken in the morning's scuffle.

But Tressilian repelled his advances firmly, though with civility.

"Master Lambourne," said he, "I trust I have recompensed to your

pleasure the time you have wasted on me. Under the show of wild

bluntness which you exhibit, I know you have sense enough to understand

me, when I say frankly that the object of our temporary acquaintance

having been accomplished, we must be strangers to each other in future."

"VOTO!" said Lambourne, twirling his whiskers with one hand, and

grasping the hilt of his weapon with the other; "if I thought that this

usage was meant to insult me--"

"You would bear it with discretion, doubtless," interrupted Tressilian,

"as you must do at any rate. You know too well the distance that is

betwixt us, to require me to explain myself further. Good evening."

So saying, he turned his back upon his former companion, and entered

into discourse with the landlord. Michael Lambourne felt strongly

disposed to bully; but his wrath died away in a few incoherent oaths

and ejaculations, and he sank unresistingly under the ascendency which

superior spirits possess over persons of his habits and description. He

remained moody and silent in a corner of the apartment, paying the most

marked attention to every motion of his late companion, against whom he

began now to nourish a quarrel on his own account, which he trusted to

avenge by the execution of his new master Varney's directions. The hour

of supper arrived, and was followed by that of repose, when Tressilian,

like others, retired to his sleeping apartment.

He had not been in bed long, when the train of sad reveries, which

supplied the place of rest in his disturbed mind, was suddenly

interrupted by the jar of a door on its hinges, and a light was seen to

glimmer in the apartment. Tressilian, who was as brave as steel, sprang

from his bed at this alarm, and had laid hand upon his sword, when he

was prevented from drawing it by a voice which said, "Be not too rash

with your rapier, Master Tressilian. It is I, your host, Giles Gosling."

At the same time, unshrouding the dark lantern, which had hitherto

only emitted an indistinct glimmer, the goodly aspect and figure of

the landlord of the Black Bear was visibly presented to his astonished

guest.

"What mummery is this, mine host?" said Tressilian. "Have you supped as

jollily as last night, and so mistaken your chamber? or is midnight a

time for masquerading it in your guest's lodging?"

"Master Tressilian," replied mine host, "I know my place and my time as

well as e'er a merry landlord in England. But here has been my hang-dog

kinsman watching you as close as ever cat watched a mouse; and here have

you, on the other hand, quarrelled and fought, either with him or with

some other person, and I fear that danger will come of it."

"Go to, thou art but a fool, man," said Tressilian. "Thy kinsman is

beneath my resentment; and besides, why shouldst thou think I had

quarrelled with any one whomsoever?"

"Oh, sir," replied the innkeeper, "there was a red spot on thy very

cheek-bone, which boded of a late brawl, as sure as the conjunction of

Mars and Saturn threatens misfortune; and when you returned, the buckles

of your girdle were brought forward, and your step was quick and

hasty, and all things showed your hand and your hilt had been lately

acquainted."

"Well, good mine host, if I have been obliged to draw my sword," said

Tressilian, "why should such a circumstance fetch thee out of thy warm

bed at this time of night? Thou seest the mischief is all over."

"Under favour, that is what I doubt. Anthony Foster is a dangerous man,

defended by strong court patronage, which hath borne him out in matters

of very deep concernment. And, then, my kinsman--why, I have told

you what he is; and if these two old cronies have made up their old

acquaintance, I would not, my worshipful guest, that it should be at

thy cost. I promise you, Mike Lambourne has been making very particular

inquiries at my hostler when and which way you ride. Now, I would have

you think whether you may not have done or said something for which you

may be waylaid, and taken at disadvantage."

"Thou art an honest man, mine host," said Tressilian, after a moment's

consideration, "and I will deal frankly with thee. If these men's malice

is directed against me--as I deny not but it may--it is because they are

the agents of a more powerful villain than themselves."

"You mean Master Richard Varney, do you not?" said the landlord; "he was

at Cumnor Place yesterday, and came not thither so private but what he

was espied by one who told me."

"I mean the same, mine host."

"Then, for God's sake, worshipful Master Tressilian," said honest

Gosling, "look well to yourself. This Varney is the protector and patron

of Anthony Foster, who holds under him, and by his favour, some lease

of yonder mansion and the park. Varney got a large grant of the lands

of the Abbacy of Abingdon, and Cumnor Place amongst others, from his

master, the Earl of Leicester. Men say he can do everything with him,

though I hold the Earl too good a nobleman to employ him as some men

talk of. And then the Earl can do anything (that is, anything right or

fitting) with the Queen, God bless her! So you see what an enemy you

have made to yourself."

"Well--it is done, and I cannot help it," answered Tressilian.

"Uds precious, but it must be helped in some manner," said the host.

"Richard Varney--why, what between his influence with my lord, and his

pretending to so many old and vexatious claims in right of the abbot

here, men fear almost to mention his name, much more to set themselves

against his practices. You may judge by our discourses the last night.

Men said their pleasure of Tony Foster, but not a word of Richard

Varney, though all men judge him to be at the bottom of yonder mystery

about the pretty wench. But perhaps you know more of that matter than

I do; for women, though they wear not swords, are occasion for many

a blade's exchanging a sheath of neat's leather for one of flesh and

blood."

"I do indeed know more of that poor unfortunate lady than thou dost,

my friendly host; and so bankrupt am I, at this moment, of friends and

advice, that I will willingly make a counsellor of thee, and tell thee

the whole history, the rather that I have a favour to ask when my tale

is ended."

"Good Master Tressilian," said the landlord, "I am but a poor innkeeper,

little able to adjust or counsel such a guest as yourself. But as sure

as I have risen decently above the world, by giving good measure and

reasonable charges, I am an honest man; and as such, if I may not

be able to assist you, I am, at least, not capable to abuse your

confidence. Say away therefore, as confidently as if you spoke to your

father; and thus far at least be certain, that my curiosity--for I will

not deny that which belongs to my calling--is joined to a reasonable

degree of discretion."

"I doubt it not, mine host," answered Tressilian; and while his auditor

remained in anxious expectation, he meditated for an instant how he

should commence his narrative. "My tale," he at length said, "to be

quite intelligible, must begin at some distance back. You have heard of

the battle of Stoke, my good host, and perhaps of old Sir Roger Robsart,

who, in that battle, valiantly took part with Henry VII., the Queen's

grandfather, and routed the Earl of Lincoln, Lord Geraldin and his wild

Irish, and the Flemings whom the Duchess of Burgundy had sent over, in

the quarrel of Lambert Simnel?"

"I remember both one and the other," said Giles Gosling; "it is sung

of a dozen times a week on my ale-bench below. Sir Roger Robsart of

Devon--oh, ay, 'tis him of whom minstrels sing to this hour,--

'He was the flower of Stoke's red field,

When Martin Swart on ground lay slain;

In raging rout he never reel'd,

But like a rock did firm remain.'

[This verse, or something similar, occurs in a long ballad, or

poem, on Flodden Field, reprinted by the late Henry Weber.]

"Ay, and then there was Martin Swart I have heard my grandfather talk

of, and of the jolly Almains whom he commanded, with their slashed

doublets and quaint hose, all frounced with ribands above the

nether-stocks. Here's a song goes of Martin Swart, too, an I had but

memory for it:--

'Martin Swart and his men,

Saddle them, saddle them,

Martin Swart and his men;

Saddle them well.'"

[This verse of an old song actually occurs in an old play where

the singer boasts,

"Courteously I can both counter and knack

Of Martin Swart and all his merry men."]

"True, good mine host--the day was long talked of; but if you sing so

loud, you will awake more listeners than I care to commit my confidence

unto."

"I crave pardon, my worshipful guest," said mine host, "I was oblivious.

When an old song comes across us merry old knights of the spigot, it

runs away with our discretion."

"Well, mine host, my grandfather, like some other Cornishmen, kept a

warm affection to the House of York, and espoused the quarrel of this

Simnel, assuming the title of Earl of Warwick, as the county afterwards,

in great numbers, countenanced the cause of Perkin Warbeck, calling

himself the Duke of York. My grandsire joined Simnel's standard, and was

taken fighting desperately at Stoke, where most of the leaders of that

unhappy army were slain in their harness. The good knight to whom he

rendered himself, Sir Roger Robsart, protected him from the immediate

vengeance of the king, and dismissed him without ransom. But he was

unable to guard him from other penalties of his rashness, being the

heavy fines by which he was impoverished, according to Henry's mode of

weakening his enemies. The good knight did what he might to mitigate the

distresses of my ancestor; and their friendship became so strict, that

my father was bred up as the sworn brother and intimate of the present

Sir Hugh Robsart, the only son of Sir Roger, and the heir of his honest,

and generous, and hospitable temper, though not equal to him in martial

achievements."

"I have heard of good Sir Hugh Robsart," interrupted the host, "many a

time and oft; his huntsman and sworn servant, Will Badger, hath spoken

of him an hundred times in this very house. A jovial knight he is,

and hath loved hospitality and open housekeeping more than the present

fashion, which lays as much gold lace on the seams of a doublet as would

feed a dozen of tall fellows with beef and ale for a twelvemonth, and

let them have their evening at the alehouse once a week, to do good to

the publican."

"If you have seen Will Badger, mine host," said Tressilian, "you have

heard enough of Sir Hugh Robsart; and therefore I will but say, that the

hospitality you boast of hath proved somewhat detrimental to the estate

of his family, which is perhaps of the less consequence, as he has but

one daughter to whom to bequeath it. And here begins my share in the

tale. Upon my father's death, now several years since, the good Sir Hugh

would willingly have made me his constant companion. There was a

time, however, at which I felt the kind knight's excessive love for

field-sports detained me from studies, by which I might have profited

more; but I ceased to regret the leisure which gratitude and hereditary

friendship compelled me to bestow on these rural avocations. The

exquisite beauty of Mistress Amy Robsart, as she grew up from childhood

to woman, could not escape one whom circumstances obliged to be so

constantly in her company--I loved her, in short, mine host, and her

father saw it."

"And crossed your true loves, no doubt?" said mine host. "It is the way

in all such cases; and I judge it must have been so in your instance,

from the heavy sigh you uttered even now."

"The case was different, mine host. My suit was highly approved by

the generous Sir Hugh Robsart; it was his daughter who was cold to my

passion."

"She was the more dangerous enemy of the two," said the innkeeper. "I

fear me your suit proved a cold one."

"She yielded me her esteem," said Tressilian, "and seemed not unwilling

that I should hope it might ripen into a warmer passion. There was

a contract of future marriage executed betwixt us, upon her father's

intercession; but to comply with her anxious request, the execution was

deferred for a twelvemonth. During this period, Richard Varney appeared

in the country, and, availing himself of some distant family connection

with Sir Hugh Robsart, spent much of his time in his company, until, at

length, he almost lived in the family."

"That could bode no good to the place he honoured with his residence,"

said Gosling.

"No, by the rood!" replied Tressilian. "Misunderstanding and misery

followed his presence, yet so strangely that I am at this moment at a

loss to trace the gradations of their encroachment upon a family which

had, till then, been so happy. For a time Amy Robsart received the

attentions of this man Varney with the indifference attached to common

courtesies; then followed a period in which she seemed to regard him

with dislike, and even with disgust; and then an extraordinary species

of connection appeared to grow up betwixt them. Varney dropped those

airs of pretension and gallantry which had marked his former approaches;

and Amy, on the other hand, seemed to renounce the ill-disguised disgust

with which she had regarded them. They seemed to have more of privacy

and confidence together than I fully liked, and I suspected that they

met in private, where there was less restraint than in our presence.

Many circumstances, which I noticed but little at the time--for I deemed

her heart as open as her angelic countenance--have since arisen on my

memory, to convince me of their private understanding. But I need not

detail them--the fact speaks for itself. She vanished from her father's

house; Varney disappeared at the same time; and this very day I have

seen her in the character of his paramour, living in the house of his

sordid dependant Foster, and visited by him, muffled, and by a secret

entrance."

"And this, then, is the cause of your quarrel? Methinks, you should

have been sure that the fair lady either desired or deserved your

interference."

"Mine host," answered Tressilian, "my father--such I must ever consider

Sir Hugh Robsart--sits at home struggling with his grief, or, if so

far recovered, vainly attempting to drown, in the practice of

his field-sports, the recollection that he had once a daughter--a

recollection which ever and anon breaks from him under circumstances the

most pathetic. I could not brook the idea that he should live in misery,

and Amy in guilt; and I endeavoured to-seek her out, with the hope of

inducing her to return to her family. I have found her, and when I have

either succeeded in my attempt, or have found it altogether unavailing,

it is my purpose to embark for the Virginia voyage."

"Be not so rash, good sir," replied Giles Gosling, "and cast not

yourself away because a woman--to be brief--IS a woman, and changes

her lovers like her suit of ribands, with no better reason than mere

fantasy. And ere we probe this matter further, let me ask you what

circumstances of suspicion directed you so truly to this lady's

residence, or rather to her place of concealment?"

"The last is the better chosen word, mine host," answered Tressilian;

"and touching your question, the knowledge that Varney held large grants

of the demesnes formerly belonging to the monks of Abingdon directed me

to this neighbourhood; and your nephew's visit to his old comrade Foster

gave me the means of conviction on the subject."

"And what is now your purpose, worthy sir?--excuse my freedom in asking

the question so broadly."

"I purpose, mine host," said Tressilian, "to renew my visit to the place

of her residence to-morrow, and to seek a more detailed communication

with her than I have had to-day. She must indeed be widely changed from

what she once was, if my words make no impression upon her."

"Under your favour, Master Tressilian," said the landlord, "you can

follow no such course. The lady, if I understand you, has already

rejected your interference in the matter."

"It is but too true," said Tressilian; "I cannot deny it."

"Then, marry, by what right or interest do you process a compulsory

interference with her inclination, disgraceful as it may be to herself

and to her parents? Unless my judgment gulls me, those under whose

protection she has thrown herself would have small hesitation to reject

your interference, even if it were that of a father or brother; but as

a discarded lover, you expose yourself to be repelled with the strong

hand, as well as with scorn. You can apply to no magistrate for aid or

countenance; and you are hunting, therefore, a shadow in water, and will

only (excuse my plainness) come by ducking and danger in attempting to

catch it."

"I will appeal to the Earl of Leicester," said Tressilian, "against

the infamy of his favourite. He courts the severe and strict sect of

Puritans. He dare not, for the sake of his own character, refuse my

appeal, even although he were destitute of the principles of honour and

nobleness with which fame invests him. Or I will appeal to the Queen

herself."

"Should Leicester," said the landlord, "be disposed to protect his

dependant (as indeed he is said to be very confidential with Varney),

the appeal to the Queen may bring them both to reason. Her Majesty is

strict in such matters, and (if it be not treason to speak it) will

rather, it is said, pardon a dozen courtiers for falling in love with

herself, than one for giving preference to another woman. Coragio then,

my brave guest! for if thou layest a petition from Sir Hugh at the foot

of the throne, bucklered by the story of thine own wrongs, the favourite

Earl dared as soon leap into the Thames at the fullest and deepest, as

offer to protect Varney in a cause of this nature. But to do this

with any chance of success, you must go formally to work; and, without

staying here to tilt with the master of horse to a privy councillor, and

expose yourself to the dagger of his cameradoes, you should hie you to

Devonshire, get a petition drawn up for Sir Hugh Robsart, and make as

many friends as you can to forward your interest at court."

"You have spoken well, mine host," said Tressilian, "and I will profit

by your advice, and leave you to-morrow early."

"Nay, leave me to-night, sir, before to-morrow comes," said he landlord.

"I never prayed for a guest's arrival more eagerly than I do to have

you safely gone, My kinsman's destiny is most like to be hanged for

something, but I would not that the cause were the murder of an honoured

guest of mine. 'Better ride safe in the dark,' says the proverb, 'than

in daylight with a cut-throat at your elbow.' Come, sir, I move you for

your own safety. Your horse and all is ready, and here is your score."

"It is somewhat under a noble," said Tressilian, giving one to the host;

"give the balance to pretty Cicely, your daughter, and the servants of

the house."

"They shall taste of your bounty, sir," said Gosling, "and you should

taste of my daughter's lips in grateful acknowledgment, but at this hour

she cannot grace the porch to greet your departure."

"Do not trust your daughter too far with your guests, my good landlord,"

said Tressilian.

"Oh, sir, we will keep measure; but I wonder not that you are jealous

of them all.--May I crave to know with what aspect the fair lady at the

Place yesterday received you?"

"I own," said Tressilian, "it was angry as well as confused, and affords

me little hope that she is yet awakened from her unhappy delusion."

"In that case, sir, I see not why you should play the champion of a

wench that will none of you, and incur the resentment of a favourite's

favourite, as dangerous a monster as ever a knight adventurer

encountered in the old story books."

"You do me wrong in the supposition, mine host--gross wrong," said

Tressilian; "I do not desire that Amy should ever turn thought upon me

more. Let me but see her restored to her father, and all I have to do in

Europe--perhaps in the world--is over and ended."

"A wiser resolution were to drink a cup of sack, and forget her," said

the landlord. "But five-and-twenty and fifty look on those matters with

different eyes, especially when one cast of peepers is set in the skull

of a young gallant, and the other in that of an old publican. I pity

you, Master Tressilian, but I see not how I can aid you in the matter."

"Only thus far, mine host," replied Tressilian--"keep a watch on the

motions of those at the Place, which thou canst easily learn without

suspicion, as all men's news fly to the ale-bench; and be pleased to

communicate the tidings in writing to such person, and to no other,

who shall bring you this ring as a special token. Look at it; it is of

value, and I will freely bestow it on you."

"Nay, sir," said the landlord, "I desire no recompense--but it seems an

unadvised course in me, being in a public line, to connect myself in a

matter of this dark and perilous nature. I have no interest in it."

"You, and every father in the land, who would have his daughter released

from the snares of shame, and sin, and misery, have an interest deeper

than aught concerning earth only could create."

"Well, sir," said the host, "these are brave words; and I do pity from

my soul the frank-hearted old gentleman, who has minished his estate

in good housekeeping for the honour of his country, and now has his

daughter, who should be the stay of his age, and so forth, whisked up

by such a kite as this Varney. And though your part in the matter is

somewhat of the wildest, yet I will e'en be a madcap for company, and

help you in your honest attempt to get back the good man's child, so far

as being your faithful intelligencer can serve. And as I shall be true

to you, I pray you to be trusty to me, and keep my secret; for it were

bad for the custom of the Black Bear should it be said the bear-warder

interfered in such matters. Varney has interest enough with the

justices to dismount my noble emblem from the post on which he swings so

gallantly, to call in my license, and ruin me from garret to cellar."

"Do not doubt my secrecy, mine host," said Tressilian; "I will retain,

besides, the deepest sense of thy service, and of the risk thou dost

run--remember the ring is my sure token. And now, farewell! for it was

thy wise advice that I should tarry here as short a time as may be."

"Follow me, then, Sir Guest," said the landlord, "and tread as gently as

if eggs were under your foot, instead of deal boards. No man must know

when or how you departed."

By the aid of his dark lantern he conducted Tressilian, as soon as he

had made himself ready for his journey, through a long intricacy of

passages, which opened to an outer court, and from thence to a remote

stable, where he had already placed his guest's horse. He then aided

him to fasten on the saddle the small portmantle which contained his

necessaries, opened a postern door, and with a hearty shake of the hand,

and a reiteration of his promise to attend to what went on at Cumnor

Place, he dismissed his guest to his solitary journey.

CHAPTER IX.

Far in the lane a lonely hut he found,

No tenant ventured on the unwholesome ground:

Here smokes his forge, he bares his sinewy arm,

And early strokes the sounding anvil warm;

Around his shop the steely sparkles flew,

As for the steed he shaped the bending shoe.--GAY'S TRIVIA.

As it was deemed proper by the traveller himself, as well as by Giles

Gosling, that Tressilian should avoid being seen in the neighbourhood of

Cumnor by those whom accident might make early risers, the landlord had

given him a route, consisting of various byways and lanes, which he was

to follow in succession, and which, all the turns and short-cuts duly

observed, was to conduct him to the public road to Marlborough.

But, like counsel of every other kind, this species of direction is much

more easily given than followed; and what betwixt the intricacy of the

way, the darkness of the night, Tressilian's ignorance of the country,

and the sad and perplexing thoughts with which he had to contend, his

journey proceeded so slowly, that morning found him only in the vale of

Whitehorse, memorable for the defeat of the Danes in former days, with

his horse deprived of a fore-foot shoe, an accident which threatened to

put a stop to his journey by laming the animal. The residence of a

smith was his first object of inquiry, in which he received little

satisfaction from the dullness or sullenness of one or two peasants,

early bound for their labour, who gave brief and indifferent answers to

his questions on the subject. Anxious, at length, that the partner of

his journey should suffer as little as possible from the unfortunate

accident, Tressilian dismounted, and led his horse in the direction of a

little hamlet, where he hoped either to find or hear tidings of such an

artificer as he now wanted. Through a deep and muddy lane, he at length

waded on to the place, which proved only an assemblage of five or six

miserable huts, about the doors of which one or two persons, whose

appearance seemed as rude as that of their dwellings, were beginning

the toils of the day. One cottage, however, seemed of rather superior

aspect, and the old dame, who was sweeping her threshold, appeared

something less rude than her neighbours. To her Tressilian addressed the

oft-repeated question, whether there was a smith in this neighbourhood,

or any place where he could refresh his horse? The dame looked him in

the face with a peculiar expression as she replied, "Smith! ay, truly is

there a smith--what wouldst ha' wi' un, mon?"

"To shoe my horse, good dame," answered Tressiliany; "you may see that

he has thrown a fore-foot shoe."

"Master Holiday!" exclaimed the dame, without returning any direct

answer--"Master Herasmus Holiday, come and speak to mon, and please

you."

"FAVETE LINGUIS," answered a voice from within; "I cannot now come

forth, Gammer Sludge, being in the very sweetest bit of my morning

studies."

"Nay, but, good now, Master Holiday, come ye out, do ye. Here's a mon

would to Wayland Smith, and I care not to show him way to devil; his

horse hath cast shoe."

"QUID MIHI CUM CABALLO?" replied the man of learning from within; "I

think there is but one wise man in the hundred, and they cannot shoe a

horse without him!"

And forth came the honest pedagogue, for such his dress bespoke him. A

long, lean, shambling, stooping figure was surmounted by a head thatched

with lank, black hair somewhat inclining to grey. His features had the

cast of habitual authority, which I suppose Dionysius carried with him

from the throne to the schoolmaster's pulpit, and bequeathed as a legacy

to all of the same profession, A black buckram cassock was gathered at

his middle with a belt, at which hung, instead of knife or weapon, a

goodly leathern pen-and-ink case. His ferula was stuck on the other

side, like Harlequin's wooden sword; and he carried in his hand the

tattered volume which he had been busily perusing.

On seeing a person of Tressilian's appearance, which he was better

able to estimate than the country folks had been, the schoolmaster

unbonneted, and accosted him with, "SALVE, DOMINE. INTELLIGISNE LINGUAM

LATINAM?"

Tressilian mustered his learning to reply, "LINGUAE LATINAE HAUD PENITUS

IGNARUS, VENIA TUA, DOMINE ERUDITISSIME, VERNACULAM LIBENTIUS LOQUOR."

The Latin reply had upon the schoolmaster the effect which the mason's

sign is said to produce on the brethren of the trowel. He was at once

interested in the learned traveller, listened with gravity to his story

of a tired horse and a lost shoe, and then replied with solemnity, "It

may appear a simple thing, most worshipful, to reply to you that there

dwells, within a brief mile of these TUGURIA, the best FABER FERARIUS,

the most accomplished blacksmith, that ever nailed iron upon horse. Now,

were I to say so, I warrant me you would think yourself COMPOS VOTI, or,

as the vulgar have it, a made man."

"I should at least," said Tressilian, "have a direct answer to a plain

question, which seems difficult to be obtained in this country."

"It is a mere sending of a sinful soul to the evil un," said the old

woman, "the sending a living creature to Wayland Smith."

"Peace, Gammer Sludge!" said the pedagogue; "PAUCA VERBA, Gammer Sludge;

look to the furmity, Gammer Sludge; CURETUR JENTACULUM, Gammer Sludge;

this gentleman is none of thy gossips." Then turning to Tressilian, he

resumed his lofty tone, "And so, most worshipful, you would really think

yourself FELIX BIS TERQUE should I point out to you the dwelling of this

same smith?"

"Sir," replied Tressilian, "I should in that case have all that I want

at present--a horse fit to carry me forward;--out of hearing of your

learning." The last words he muttered to himself.

"O CAECA MENS MORTALIUM!" said the learned man "well was it sung by

Junius Juvenalis, 'NUMINIBUS VOTA EXAUDITA MALIGNIS!'"

"Learned Magister," said Tressilian, "your erudition so greatly exceeds

my poor intellectual capacity that you must excuse my seeking elsewhere

for information which I can better understand."

"There again now," replied the pedagogue, "how fondly you fly from him

that would instruct you! Truly said Quintilian--"

"I pray, sir, let Quintilian be for the present, and answer, in a word

and in English, if your learning can condescend so far, whether there is

any place here where I can have opportunity to refresh my horse until I

can have him shod?"

"Thus much courtesy, sir," said the schoolmaster, "I can readily render

you, that although there is in this poor hamlet (NOSTRA PAUPERA REGNA)

no regular HOSPITIUM, as my namesake Erasmus calleth it, yet, forasmuch

as you are somewhat embued, or at least tinged, as it were, with good

letters, I will use my interest with the good woman of the house to

accommodate you with a platter of furmity--an wholesome food for which

I have found no Latin phrase--your horse shall have a share of the

cow-house, with a bottle of sweet hay, in which the good woman Sludge so

much abounds, that it may be said of her cow, FAENUM HABET IN CORNU;

and if it please you to bestow on me the pleasure of your company, the

banquet shall cost you NE SEMISSEM QUIDEM, so much is Gammer Sludge

bound to me for the pains I have bestowed on the top and bottom of her

hopeful heir Dickie, whom I have painfully made to travel through the

accidence."

"Now, God yield ye for it, Master Herasmus," said the good Gammer, "and

grant that little Dickie may be the better for his accident! And for the

rest, if the gentleman list to stay, breakfast shall be on the board in

the wringing of a dishclout; and for horse-meat, and man's meat, I bear

no such base mind as to ask a penny."

Considering the state of his horse, Tressilian, upon the whole, saw

no better course than to accept the invitation thus learnedly made and

hospitably confirmed, and take chance that when the good pedagogue had

exhausted every topic of conversation, he might possibly condescend to

tell him where he could find the smith they spoke of. He entered the

hut accordingly, and sat down with the learned Magister Erasmus Holiday,

partook of his furmity, and listened to his learned account of himself

for a good half hour, ere he could get him to talk upon any other topic,

The reader will readily excuse our accompanying this man of learning

into all the details with which he favoured Tressilian, of which the

following sketch may suffice.

He was born at Hogsnorton, where, according to popular saying, the pigs

play upon the organ; a proverb which he interpreted allegorically,

as having reference to the herd of Epicurus, of which litter Horace

confessed himself a porker. His name of Erasmus he derived partly from

his father having been the son of a renowned washerwoman, who had held

that great scholar in clean linen all the while he was at Oxford; a task

of some difficulty, as he was only possessed of two shirts, "the one,"

as she expressed herself, "to wash the other," The vestiges of one of

these CAMICIAE, as Master Holiday boasted, were still in his possession,

having fortunately been detained by his grandmother to cover the balance

of her bill. But he thought there was a still higher and overruling

cause for his having had the name of Erasmus conferred on him--namely,

the secret presentiment of his mother's mind that, in the babe to be

christened, was a hidden genius, which should one day lead him to rival

the fame of the great scholar of Amsterdam. The schoolmaster's surname

led him as far into dissertation as his Christian appellative. He was

inclined to think that he bore the name of Holiday QUASI LUCUS A NON

LUCENDO, because he gave such few holidays to his school. "Hence," said

he, "the schoolmaster is termed, classically, LUDI MAGISTER, because he

deprives boys of their play." And yet, on the other hand, he thought

it might bear a very different interpretation, and refer to his own

exquisite art in arranging pageants, morris-dances, May-day festivities,

and such-like holiday delights, for which he assured Tressilian he had

positively the purest and the most inventive brain in England; insomuch,

that his cunning in framing such pleasures had made him known to many

honourable persons, both in country and court, and especially to the

noble Earl of Leicester. "And although he may now seem to forget me,"

he said, "in the multitude of state affairs, yet I am well assured that,

had he some pretty pastime to array for entertainment of the Queen's

Grace, horse and man would be seeking the humble cottage of Erasmus

Holiday. PARVO CONTENTUS, in the meanwhile, I hear my pupils parse and

construe, worshipful sir, and drive away my time with the aid of the

Muses. And I have at all times, when in correspondence with foreign

scholars, subscribed myself Erasmus ab Die Fausto, and have enjoyed the

distinction due to the learned under that title: witness the erudite

Diedrichus Buckerschockius, who dedicated to me under that title his

treatise on the letter TAU. In fine, sir, I have been a happy and

distinguished man."

"Long may it be so, sir!" said the traveller; "but permit me to ask, in

your own learned phrase, QUID HOC AD IPHYCLI BOVES? what has all this to

do with the shoeing of my poor nag?"

"FESTINA LENTE," said the man of learning, "we will presently came to

that point. You must know that some two or three years past there came

to these parts one who called himself Doctor Doboobie, although it may

be he never wrote even MAGISTER ARTIUM, save in right of his hungry

belly. Or it may be, that if he had any degrees, they were of the

devil's giving; for he was what the vulgar call a white witch, a cunning

man, and such like.--Now, good sir, I perceive you are impatient; but if

a man tell not his tale his own way, how have you warrant to think that

he can tell it in yours?"

"Well, then, learned sir, take your way," answered Tressilian; "only let

us travel at a sharper pace, for my time is somewhat of the shortest."

"Well, sir," resumed Erasmus Holiday, with the most provoking

perseverance, "I will not say that this same Demetrius for so he wrote

himself when in foreign parts, was an actual conjurer, but certain it

is that he professed to be a brother of the mystical Order of the Rosy

Cross, a disciple of Geber (EX NOMINE CUJUS VENIT VERBUM VERNACULUM,

GIBBERISH). He cured wounds by salving the weapon instead of the sore;

told fortunes by palmistry; discovered stolen goods by the sieve and

shears; gathered the right maddow and the male fern seed, through use of

which men walk invisible; pretended some advances towards the panacea,

or universal elixir; and affected to convert good lead into sorry

silver."

"In other words," said Tressilian, "he was a quacksalver and common

cheat; but what has all this to do with my nag, and the shoe which he

has lost?"

"With your worshipful patience," replied the diffusive man of letters,

"you shall understand that presently--PATENTIA then, right worshipful,

which word, according to our Marcus Tullius, is 'DIFFICILIUM RERUM

DIURNA PERPESSIO.' This same Demetrius Doboobie, after dealing with the

country, as I have told you, began to acquire fame INTER MAGNATES, among

the prime men of the land, and there is likelihood he might have aspired

to great matters, had not, according to vulgar fame (for I aver not the

thing as according with my certain knowledge), the devil claimed his

right, one dark night, and flown off with Demetrius, who was never seen

or heard of afterwards. Now here comes the MEDULLA, the very marrow,

of my tale. This Doctor Doboobie had a servant, a poor snake, whom

he employed in trimming his furnace, regulating it by just

measure--compounding his drugs--tracing his circles--cajoling his

patients, ET SIC ET CAETERIS. Well, right worshipful, the Doctor being

removed thus strangely, and in a way which struck the whole country with

terror, this poor Zany thinks to himself, in the words of Maro, 'UNO

AVULSO, NON DEFICIT ALTER;' and, even as a tradesman's apprentice sets

himself up in his master's shop when he is dead or hath retired from

business, so doth this Wayland assume the dangerous trade of his defunct

master. But although, most worshipful sir, the world is ever prone to

listen to the pretensions of such unworthy men, who are, indeed, mere

SALTIM BANQUI and CHARLATANI, though usurping the style and skill

of doctors of medicine, yet the pretensions of this poor Zany, this

Wayland, were too gross to pass on them, nor was there a mere rustic,

a villager, who was not ready to accost him in the sense of Persius,

though in their own rugged words,--

DILIUS HELLEBORUM CERTO COMPESCERE PUNCTO

NESCIUS EXAMEN? VETAT HOC NATURA VEDENDI;

which I have thus rendered in a poor paraphrase of mine own,--

Wilt thou mix hellebore, who dost not know

How many grains should to the mixture go?

The art of medicine this forbids, I trow.

"Moreover, the evil reputation of the master, and his strange and

doubtful end, or at least sudden disappearance, prevented any, excepting

the most desperate of men, to seek any advice or opinion from the

servant; wherefore, the poor vermin was likely at first to swarf for

very hunger. But the devil that serves him, since the death of Demetrius

or Doboobie, put him on a fresh device. This knave, whether from the

inspiration of the devil, or from early education, shoes horses better

than e'er a man betwixt us and Iceland; and so he gives up his practice

on the bipeds, the two-legged and unfledged species called mankind, and

betakes him entirely to shoeing of horses."

"Indeed! and where does he lodge all this time?" said Tressilian. "And

does he shoe horses well? Show me his dwelling presently."

The interruption pleased not the Magister, who exclaimed, "O CAECA MENS

MORTALIUM!--though, by the way, I used that quotation before. But I

would the classics could afford me any sentiment of power to stop those

who are so willing to rush upon their own destruction. Hear but, I pray

you, the conditions of this man," said he, in continuation, "ere you are

so willing to place yourself within his danger--"

"A' takes no money for a's work," said the dame, who stood by,

enraptured as it were with the line words and learned apophthegms which

glided so fluently from her erudite inmate, Master Holiday. But this

interruption pleased not the Magister more than that of the traveller.

"Peace," said he, "Gammer Sludge; know your place, if it be your will.

SUFFLAMINA, Gammer Sludge, and allow me to expound this matter to our

worshipful guest.--Sir," said he, again addressing Tressilian, "this

old woman speaks true, though in her own rude style; for certainly this

FABER FERRARIUS, or blacksmith, takes money of no one."

"And that is a sure sign he deals with Satan," said Dame Sludge; "since

no good Christian would ever refuse the wages of his labour."

"The old woman hath touched it again," said the pedagogue; "REM ACU

TETIGIT--she hath pricked it with her needle's point. This Wayland takes

no money, indeed; nor doth he show himself to any one."

"And can this madman, for such I hold him," said the traveller, "know

aught like good skill of his trade?"

"Oh, sir, in that let us give the devil his due--Mulciber himself, with

all his Cyclops, could hardly amend him. But assuredly there is little

wisdom in taking counsel or receiving aid from one who is but too

plainly in league with the author of evil."

"I must take my chance of that, good Master Holiday," said Tressilian,

rising; "and as my horse must now have eaten his provender, I must

needs thank you for your good cheer, and pray you to show me this man's

residence, that I may have the means of proceeding on my journey."

"Ay, ay, do ye show him, Master Herasmus," said the old dame, who was,

perhaps, desirous to get her house freed of her guest; "a' must needs go

when the devil drives."

"DO MANUS," said the Magister, "I submit--taking the world to witness,

that I have possessed this honourable gentleman with the full injustice

which he has done and shall do to his own soul, if he becomes thus a

trinketer with Satan. Neither will I go forth with our guest myself, but

rather send my pupil.--RICARDE! ADSIS, NEBULO."

"Under your favour, not so," answered the old woman; "you may peril your

own soul, if you list, but my son shall budge on no such errand. And I

wonder at you, Dominie Doctor, to propose such a piece of service for

little Dickie."

"Nay, my good Gammer Sludge," answered the preceptor, "Ricardus shall go

but to the top of the hill, and indicate with his digit to the stranger

the dwelling of Wayland Smith. Believe not that any evil can come to

him, he having read this morning, fasting, a chapter of the Septuagint,

and, moreover, having had his lesson in the Greek Testament."

"Ay," said his mother, "and I have sewn a sprig of witch's elm in the

neck of un's doublet, ever since that foul thief has begun his practices

on man and beast in these parts."

"And as he goes oft (as I hugely suspect) towards this conjurer for his

own pastime, he may for once go thither, or near it, to pleasure us,

and to assist this stranger.--ERGO, HEUS RICARDE! ADSIS, QUAESO, MI

DIDASCULE."

The pupil, thus affectionately invoked, at length came stumbling into

the room; a queer, shambling, ill-made urchin, who, by his stunted

growth, seemed about twelve or thirteen years old, though he was

probably, in reality, a year or two older, with a carroty pate in huge

disorder, a freckled, sunburnt visage, with a snub nose, a long

chin, and two peery grey eyes, which had a droll obliquity of vision,

approaching to a squint, though perhaps not a decided one. It was

impossible to look at the little man without some disposition to laugh,

especially when Gammer Sludge, seizing upon and kissing him, in spite of

his struggling and kicking in reply to her caresses, termed him her own

precious pearl of beauty.

"RICARDE," said the preceptor, "you must forthwith (which is PROFECTO)

set forth so far as the top of the hill, and show this man of worship

Wayland Smith's workshop."

"A proper errand of a morning," said the boy, in better language than

Tressilian expected; "and who knows but the devil may fly away with me

before I come back?"

"Ay, marry may un," said Dame Sludge; "and you might have thought twice,

Master Domine, ere you sent my dainty darling on arrow such errand. It

is not for such doings I feed your belly and clothe your back, I warrant

you!"

"Pshaw--NUGAE, good Gammer Sludge," answered the preceptor; "I ensure

you that Satan, if there be Satan in the case, shall not touch a thread

of his garment; for Dickie can say his PATER with the best, and may defy

the foul fiend--EUMENIDES, STYGIUMQUE NEFAS."

"Ay, and I, as I said before, have sewed a sprig of the mountain-ash

into his collar," said the good woman, "which will avail more than your

clerkship, I wus; but for all that, it is ill to seek the devil or his

mates either."

"My good boy," said Tressilian, who saw, from a grotesque sneer on

Dickie's face, that he was more likely to act upon his own bottom than

by the instructions of his elders, "I will give thee a silver groat, my

pretty fellow, if you will but guide me to this man's forge."

The boy gave him a knowing side-look, which seemed to promise

acquiescence, while at the same time he exclaimed, "I be your guide to

Wayland Smith's! Why, man, did I not say that the devil might fly off

with me, just as the kite there" (looking to the window) "is flying off

with one of grandam's chicks?"

"The kite! the kite!" exclaimed the old woman in return, and forgetting

all other matters in her alarm, hastened to the rescue of her chickens

as fast as her old legs could carry her.

"Now for it," said the urchin to Tressilian; "snatch your beaver, get

out your horse, and have at the silver groat you spoke of."

"Nay, but tarry, tarry," said the preceptor--"SUFFLAMINA, RICARDE!"

"Tarry yourself," said Dickie, "and think what answer you are to make to

granny for sending me post to the devil."

The teacher, aware of the responsibility he was incurring, bustled up in

great haste to lay hold of the urchin and to prevent his departure; but

Dickie slipped through his fingers, bolted from the cottage, and sped

him to the top of a neighbouring rising ground, while the preceptor,

despairing, by well-taught experience, of recovering his pupil by speed

of foot, had recourse to the most honied epithets the Latin vocabulary

affords to persuade his return. But to MI ANIME, CORCULUM MEUM, and

all such classical endearments, the truant turned a deaf ear, and kept

frisking on the top of the rising ground like a goblin by moonlight,

making signs to his new acquaintance, Tressilian, to follow him.

The traveller lost no time in getting out his horse and departing to

join his elvish guide, after half-forcing on the poor, deserted teacher

a recompense for the entertainment he had received, which partly allayed

that terror he had for facing the return of the old lady of the mansion.

Apparently this took place soon afterwards; for ere Tressilian and his

guide had proceeded far on their journey, they heard the screams of a

cracked female voice, intermingled with the classical objurgations of

Master Erasmus Holiday. But Dickie Sludge, equally deaf to the voice

of maternal tenderness and of magisterial authority, skipped on

unconsciously before Tressilian, only observing that "if they cried

themselves hoarse, they might go lick the honey-pot, for he had eaten up

all the honey-comb himself on yesterday even."

CHAPTER X.

There entering in, they found the goodman selfe

Full busylie unto his work ybent,

Who was to weet a wretched wearish elf,

With hollow eyes and rawbone cheeks forspent,

As if he had been long in prison pent.--THE FAERY QUEENE.

"Are we far from the dwelling of this smith, my pretty lad?" said

Tressilian to his young guide.

"How is it you call me?" said the boy, looking askew at him with his

sharp, grey eyes.

"I call you my pretty lad--is there any offence in that, my boy?"

"No; but were you with my grandam and Dominie Holiday, you might sing

chorus to the old song of

'We three

Tom-fools be.'"

"And why so, my little man?" said Tressilian.

"Because," answered the ugly urchin, "you are the only three ever called

me pretty lad. Now my grandam does it because she is parcel blind by

age, and whole blind by kindred; and my master, the poor Dominie, does

it to curry favour, and have the fullest platter of furmity and the

warmest seat by the fire. But what you call me pretty lad for, you know

best yourself."

"Thou art a sharp wag at least, if not a pretty one. But what do thy

playfellows call thee?"

"Hobgoblin," answered the boy readily; "but for all that, I would rather

have my own ugly viznomy than any of their jolter-heads, that have no

more brains in them than a brick-bat."

"Then you fear not this smith whom you are going to see?"

"Me fear him!" answered the boy. "If he were the devil folk think him, I

would not fear him; but though there is something queer about him, he's

no more a devil than you are, and that's what I would not tell to every

one."

"And why do you tell it to me, then, my boy?" said Tressilian.

"Because you are another guess gentleman than those we see here every

day," replied Dickie; "and though I am as ugly as sin, I would not have

you think me an ass, especially as I may have a boon to ask of you one

day."

"And what is that, my lad, whom I must not call pretty?" replied

Tressilian.

"Oh, if I were to ask it just now," said the boy, "you would deny it me;

but I will wait till we meet at court."

"At court, Richard! are you bound for court?" said Tressilian.

"Ay, ay, that's just like the rest of them," replied the boy. "I warrant

me, you think, what should such an ill-favoured, scrambling urchin do at

court? But let Richard Sludge alone; I have not been cock of the roost

here for nothing. I will make sharp wit mend foul feature."

"But what will your grandam say, and your tutor, Dominie Holiday?"

"E'en what they like," replied Dickie; "the one has her chickens to

reckon, and the other has his boys to whip. I would have given them the

candle to hold long since, and shown this trumpery hamlet a fair pair of

heels, but that Dominie promises I should go with him to bear share in

the next pageant he is to set forth, and they say there are to be great

revels shortly."

"And whereabouts are they to be held, my little friend?" said

Tressilian.

"Oh, at some castle far in the north," answered his guide--"a world's

breadth from Berkshire. But our old Dominie holds that they cannot go

forward without him; and it may be he is right, for he has put in order

many a fair pageant. He is not half the fool you would take him for,

when he gets to work he understands; and so he can spout verses like

a play-actor, when, God wot, if you set him to steal a goose's egg, he

would be drubbed by the gander."

"And you are to play a part in his next show?" said Tressilian, somewhat

interested by the boy's boldness of conversation and shrewd estimate of

character.

"In faith," said Richard Sludge, in answer, "he hath so promised me; and

if he break his word, it will be the worse for him, for let me take the

bit between my teeth, and turn my head downhill, and I will shake him

off with a fall that may harm his bones. And I should not like much to

hurt him neither," said he, "for the tiresome old fool has painfully

laboured to teach me all he could. But enough of that--here are we at

Wayland Smith's forge-door."

"You jest, my little friend," said Tressilian; "here is nothing but a

bare moor, and that ring of stones, with a great one in the midst, like

a Cornish barrow."

"Ay, and that great flat stone in the midst, which lies across the top

of these uprights," said the boy, "is Wayland Smith's counter, that you

must tell down your money upon."

"What do you mean by such folly?" said the traveller, beginning to be

angry with the boy, and vexed with himself for having trusted such a

hare-brained guide.

"Why," said Dickie, with a grin, "you must tie your horse to that

upright stone that has the ring in't, and then you must whistle three

times, and lay me down your silver groat on that other flat stone, walk

out of the circle, sit down on the west side of that little thicket

of bushes, and take heed you look neither to right nor to left for ten

minutes, or so long as you shall hear the hammer clink, and whenever

it ceases, say your prayers for the space you could tell a hundred--or

count over a hundred, which will do as well--and then come into the

circle; you will find your money gone and your horse shod."

"My money gone to a certainty!" said Tressilian; "but as for the

rest--Hark ye, my lad, I am not your school-master, but if you play off

your waggery on me, I will take a part of his task off his hands, and

punish you to purpose."

"Ay, when you catch me!" said the boy; and presently took to his

heels across the heath, with a velocity which baffled every attempt of

Tressilian to overtake him, loaded as he was with his heavy boots. Nor

was it the least provoking part of the urchin's conduct, that he did not

exert his utmost speed, like one who finds himself in danger, or who is

frightened, but preserved just such a rate as to encourage Tressilian to

continue the chase, and then darted away from him with the swiftness of

the wind, when his pursuer supposed he had nearly run him down, doubling

at the same time, and winding, so as always to keep near the place from

which he started.

This lasted until Tressilian, from very weariness, stood still, and was

about to abandon the pursuit with a hearty curse on the ill-favoured

urchin, who had engaged him in an exercise so ridiculous. But the boy,

who had, as formerly, planted himself on the top of a hillock close

in front, began to clap his long, thin hands, point with his skinny

fingers, and twist his wild and ugly features into such an extravagant

expression of laughter and derision, that Tressilian began half to doubt

whether he had not in view an actual hobgoblin.

Provoked extremely, yet at the same time feeling an irresistible desire

to laugh, so very odd were the boy's grimaces and gesticulations, the

Cornishman returned to his horse, and mounted him with the purpose of

pursuing Dickie at more advantage.

The boy no sooner saw him mount his horse, than he holloed out to him

that, rather than he should spoil his white-footed nag, he would come to

him, on condition he would keep his fingers to himself.

"I will make no conditions with thee, thou ugly varlet!" said

Tressilian; "I will have thee at my mercy in a moment."

"Aha, Master Traveller," said the boy, "there is a marsh hard by would

swallow all the horses of the Queen's guard. I will into it, and

see where you will go then. You shall hear the bittern bump, and the

wild-drake quack, ere you get hold of me without my consent, I promise

you."

Tressilian looked out, and, from the appearance of the ground behind

the hillock, believed it might be as the boy said, and accordingly

determined to strike up a peace with so light-footed and ready-witted an

enemy. "Come down," he said, "thou mischievous brat! Leave thy mopping

and mowing, and, come hither. I will do thee no harm, as I am a

gentleman."

The boy answered his invitation with the utmost confidence, and danced

down from his stance with a galliard sort of step, keeping his eye at

the same time fixed on Tressilian's, who, once more dismounted, stood

with his horse's bridle in his hand, breathless, and half exhausted with

his fruitless exercise, though not one drop of moisture appeared on the

freckled forehead of the urchin, which looked like a piece of dry and

discoloured parchment, drawn tight across the brow of a fleshless skull.

"And tell me," said Tressilian, "why you use me thus, thou mischievous

imp? or what your meaning is by telling me so absurd a legend as you

wished but now to put on me? Or rather show me, in good earnest, this

smith's forge, and I will give thee what will buy thee apples through

the whole winter."

"Were you to give me an orchard of apples," said Dickie Sludge, "I can

guide thee no better than I have done. Lay down the silver token on the

flat stone--whistle three times--then come sit down on the western side

of the thicket of gorse. I will sit by you, and give you free leave to

wring my head off, unless you hear the smith at work within two minutes

after we are seated."

"I may be tempted to take thee at thy word," said Tressilian, "if you

make me do aught half so ridiculous for your own mischievous sport;

however, I will prove your spell. Here, then, I tie my horse to this

upright stone. I must lay my silver groat here, and whistle three times,

sayest thou?"

"Ay, but thou must whistle louder than an unfledged ousel," said the

boy, as Tressilian, having laid down his money, and half ashamed of the

folly he practised, made a careless whistle--"you must whistle louder

than that, for who knows where the smith is that you call for? He may be

in the King of France's stables for what I know."

"Why, you said but now he was no devil," replied Tressilian.

"Man or devil," said Dickie, "I see that I must summon him for you;"

and therewithal he whistled sharp and shrill, with an acuteness of sound

that almost thrilled through Tressilian's brain. "That is what I call

whistling," said he, after he had repeated the signal thrice; "and now

to cover, to cover, or Whitefoot will not be shod this day."

Tressilian, musing what the upshot of this mummery was to be, yet

satisfied there was to be some serious result, by the confidence with

which the boy had put himself in his power, suffered himself to be

conducted to that side of the little thicket of gorse and brushwood

which was farthest from the circle of stones, and there sat down; and as

it occurred to him that, after all, this might be a trick for stealing

his horse, he kept his hand on the boy's collar, determined to make him

hostage for its safety.

"Now, hush and listen," said Dickie, in a low whisper; "you will soon

hear the tack of a hammer that was never forged of earthly iron, for the

stone it was made of was shot from the moon." And in effect Tressilian

did immediately hear the light stroke of a hammer, as when a farrier

is at work. The singularity of such a sound, in so very lonely a place,

made him involuntarily start; but looking at the boy, and discovering,

by the arch malicious expression of his countenance, that the urchin saw

and enjoyed his slight tremor, he became convinced that the whole was

a concerted stratagem, and determined to know by whom, or for what

purpose, the trick was played off.

Accordingly, he remained perfectly quiet all the time that the hammer

continued to sound, being about the space usually employed in fixing

a horse-shoe. But the instant the sound ceased, Tressilian, instead of

interposing the space of time which his guide had required, started up

with his sword in his hand, ran round the thicket, and confronted a man

in a farrier's leathern apron, but otherwise fantastically attired in a

bear-skin dressed with the fur on, and a cap of the same, which almost

hid the sooty and begrimed features of the wearer. "Come back, come

back!" cried the boy to Tressilian, "or you will be torn to pieces; no

man lives that looks on him." In fact, the invisible smith (now fully

visible) heaved up his hammer, and showed symptoms of doing battle.

But when the boy observed that neither his own entreaties nor the

menaces of the farrier appeared to change Tressilian's purpose, but

that, on the contrary, he confronted the hammer with his drawn sword,

he exclaimed to the smith in turn, "Wayland, touch him not, or you will

come by the worse!--the gentleman is a true gentleman, and a bold."

"So thou hast betrayed me, Flibbertigibbet?" said the smith; "it shall

be the worse for thee!"

"Be who thou wilt," said Tressilian, "thou art in no danger from me,

so thou tell me the meaning of this practice, and why thou drivest thy

trade in this mysterious fashion."

The smith, however, turning to Tressilian, exclaimed, in a threatening

tone, "Who questions the Keeper of the Crystal Castle of Light, the Lord

of the Green Lion, the Rider of the Red Dragon? Hence!--avoid thee, ere

I summon Talpack with his fiery lance, to quell, crush, and consume!"

These words he uttered with violent gesticulation, mouthing, and

flourishing his hammer.

"Peace, thou vile cozener, with thy gipsy cant!" replied Tressilian

scornfully, "and follow me to the next magistrate, or I will cut thee

over the pate."

"Peace, I pray thee, good Wayland!" said the boy. "Credit me, the

swaggering vein will not pass here; you must cut boon whids." ["Give

good words."--SLANG DIALECT.]

"I think, worshipful sir," said the smith, sinking his hammer, and

assuming a more gentle and submissive tone of voice, "that when so poor

a man does his day's job, he might be permitted to work it out after his

own fashion. Your horse is shod, and your farrier paid--what need you

cumber yourself further than to mount and pursue your journey?"

"Nay, friend, you are mistaken," replied Tressilian; "every man has a

right to take the mask from the face of a cheat and a juggler; and your

mode of living raises suspicion that you are both."

"If you are so determined; sir," said the smith, "I cannot help myself

save by force, which I were unwilling to use towards you, Master

Tressilian; not that I fear your weapon, but because I know you to be

a worthy, kind, and well-accomplished gentleman, who would rather help

than harm a poor man that is in a strait."

"Well said, Wayland," said the boy, who had anxiously awaited the issue

of their conference. "But let us to thy den, man, for it is ill for thy

health to stand here talking in the open air."

"Thou art right, Hobgoblin," replied the smith; and going to the little

thicket of gorse on the side nearest to the circle, and opposite to that

at which his customer had so lately crouched, he discovered a trap-door

curiously covered with bushes, raised it, and, descending into the

earth, vanished from their eyes. Notwithstanding Tressilian's curiosity,

he had some hesitation at following the fellow into what might be a den

of robbers, especially when he heard the smith's voice, issuing from the

bowels of the earth, call out, "Flibertigibbet, do you come last, and be

sure to fasten the trap!"

"Have you seen enough of Wayland Smith now?" whispered the urchin

to Tressilian, with an arch sneer, as if marking his companion's

uncertainty.

"Not yet," said Tressilian firmly; and shaking off his momentary

irresolution, he descended into the narrow staircase, to which the

entrance led, and was followed by Dickie Sludge, who made fast the

trap-door behind him, and thus excluded every glimmer of daylight. The

descent, however, was only a few steps, and led to a level passage of

a few yards' length, at the end of which appeared the reflection of a

lurid and red light. Arrived at this point, with his drawn sword in

his hand, Tressilian found that a turn to the left admitted him and

Hobgoblin, who followed closely, into a small, square vault, containing

a smith's forge, glowing with charcoal, the vapour of which filled the

apartment with an oppressive smell, which would have been altogether

suffocating, but that by some concealed vent the smithy communicated

with the upper air. The light afforded by the red fuel, and by a lamp

suspended in an iron chain, served to show that, besides an anvil,

bellows, tongs, hammers, a quantity of ready-made horse-shoes, and other

articles proper to the profession of a farrier, there were also stoves,

alembics, crucibles, retorts, and other instruments of alchemy. The

grotesque figure of the smith, and the ugly but whimsical features of

the boy, seen by the gloomy and imperfect light of the charcoal fire and

the dying lamp, accorded very well with all this mystical apparatus,

and in that age of superstition would have made some impression on the

courage of most men.

But nature had endowed Tressilian with firm nerves, and his education,

originally good, had been too sedulously improved by subsequent study to

give way to any imaginary terrors; and after giving a glance around him,

he again demanded of the artist who he was, and by what accident he came

to know and address him by his name.

"Your worship cannot but remember," said the smith, "that about three

years since, upon Saint Lucy's Eve, there came a travelling juggler to a

certain hall in Devonshire, and exhibited his skill before a worshipful

knight and a fair company.--I see from your worship's countenance, dark

as this place is, that my memory has not done me wrong."

"Thou hast said enough," said Tressilian, turning away, as wishing

to hide from the speaker the painful train of recollections which his

discourse had unconsciously awakened.

"The juggler," said the smith, "played his part so bravely that the

clowns and clown-like squires in the company held his art to be little

less than magical; but there was one maiden of fifteen, or thereby, with

the fairest face I ever looked upon, whose rosy cheek grew pale, and her

bright eyes dim, at the sight of the wonders exhibited."

"Peace, I command thee, peace!" said Tressilian.

"I mean your worship no offence," said the fellow; "but I have cause to

remember how, to relieve the young maiden's fears, you condescended

to point out the mode in which these deceptions were practised, and to

baffle the poor juggler by laying bare the mysteries of his art, as ably

as if you had been a brother of his order.--She was indeed so fair a

maiden that, to win a smile of her, a man might well--"

"Not a word more of her, I charge thee!" said Tressilian. "I do well

remember the night you speak of--one of the few happy evenings my life

has known."

"She is gone, then," said the smith, interpreting after his own fashion

the sigh with which Tressilian uttered these words--"she is gone, young,

beautiful, and beloved as she was!--I crave your worship's pardon--I

should have hammered on another theme. I see I have unwarily driven the

nail to the quick."

This speech was made with a mixture of rude feeling which inclined

Tressilian favourably to the poor artisan, of whom before he was

inclined to judge very harshly. But nothing can so soon attract the

unfortunate as real or seeming sympathy with their sorrows.

"I think," proceeded Tressilian, after a minute's silence, "thou wert in

those days a jovial fellow, who could keep a company merry by song, and

tale, and rebeck, as well as by thy juggling tricks--why do I find thee

a laborious handicraftsman, plying thy trade in so melancholy a dwelling

and under such extraordinary circumstances?"

"My story is not long," said the artist, "but your honour had better

sit while you listen to it." So saying, he approached to the fire a

three-footed stool, and took another himself; while Dickie Sludge, or

Flibbertigibbet, as he called the boy, drew a cricket to the smith's

feet, and looked up in his face with features which, as illuminated by

the glow of the forge, seemed convulsed with intense curiosity. "Thou

too," said the smith to him, "shalt learn, as thou well deservest at my

hand, the brief history of my life; and, in troth, it were as well tell

it thee as leave thee to ferret it out, since Nature never packed a

shrewder wit into a more ungainly casket.--Well, sir, if my poor story

may pleasure you, it is at your command, But will you not taste a stoup

of liquor? I promise you that even in this poor cell I have some in

store."

"Speak not of it," said Tressilian, "but go on with thy story, for my

leisure is brief."

"You shall have no cause to rue the delay," said the smith, "for

your horse shall be better fed in the meantime than he hath been this

morning, and made fitter for travel."

With that the artist left the vault, and returned after a few minutes'

interval. Here, also, we pause, that the narrative may commence in

another chapter.

CHAPTER XI.

I say, my lord, can such a subtilty

(But all his craft ye must not wot of me,

And somewhat help I yet to his working),

That all the ground on which we ben riding,

Till that we come to Canterbury town,

He can all clean turnen so up so down,

And pave it all of silver and of gold.

--THE CANON'S YEOMAN'S PROLOGUE, CANTERBURY TALES.

THE artist commenced his narrative in the following terms:--

"I was bred a blacksmith, and knew my art as well as e'er a

black-thumbed, leathern-aproned, swart-faced knave of that noble

mystery. But I tired of ringing hammer-tunes on iron stithies, and went

out into the world, where I became acquainted with a celebrated juggler,

whose fingers had become rather too stiff for legerdemain, and who

wished to have the aid of an apprentice in his noble mystery. I served

him for six years, until I was master of my trade--I refer myself to

your worship, whose judgment cannot be disputed, whether I did not learn

to ply the craft indifferently well?"

"Excellently," said Tressilian; "but be brief."

"It was not long after I had performed at Sir Hugh Robsart's, in your

worship's presence," said the artist, "that I took myself to the stage,

and have swaggered with the bravest of them all, both at the Black Bull,

the Globe, the Fortune, and elsewhere; but I know not how--apples were

so plenty that year that the lads in the twopenny gallery never took

more than one bite out of them, and threw the rest of the pippin at

whatever actor chanced to be on the stage. So I tired of it--renounced

my half share in the company, gave my foil to my comrade, my buskins to

the wardrobe, and showed the theatre a clean pair of heels."

"Well, friend, and what," said Tressilian, "was your next shift?"

"I became," said the smith, "half partner, half domestic to a man

of much skill and little substance, who practised the trade of a

physicianer."

"In other words," said Tressilian, "you were Jack Pudding to a

quacksalver."

"Something beyond that, let me hope, my good Master Tressilian," replied

the artist; "and yet to say truth, our practice was of an adventurous

description, and the pharmacy which I had acquired in my first studies

for the benefit of horses was frequently applied to our human patients.

But the seeds of all maladies are the same; and if turpentine, tar,

pitch, and beef-suet, mingled with turmerick, gum-mastick, and one bead

of garlick, can cure the horse that hath been grieved with a nail, I see

not but what it may benefit the man that hath been pricked with a sword.

But my master's practice, as well as his skill, went far beyond

mine, and dealt in more dangerous concerns. He was not only a bold,

adventurous practitioner in physic, but also, if your pleasure so

chanced to be, an adept who read the stars, and expounded the fortunes

of mankind, genethliacally, as he called it, or otherwise. He was a

learned distiller of simples, and a profound chemist--made several

efforts to fix mercury, and judged himself to have made a fair hit at

the philosopher's stone. I have yet a programme of his on that subject,

which, if your honour understandeth, I believe you have the better, not

only of all who read, but also of him who wrote it."

He gave Tressilian a scroll of parchment, bearing at top and bottom, and

down the margin, the signs of the seven planets, curiously intermingled

with talismanical characters and scraps of Greek and Hebrew. In the

midst were some Latin verses from a cabalistical author, written out so

fairly, that even the gloom of the place did not prevent Tressilian from

reading them. The tenor of the original ran as follows:--

"Si fixum solvas, faciasque volare solutum,

Et volucrem figas, facient te vivere tutum;

Si pariat ventum, valet auri pondere centum;

Ventus ubi vult spirat--Capiat qui capere potest."

"I protest to you," said Tressilian, "all I understand of this jargon is

that the last words seem to mean 'Catch who catch can.'"

"That," said the smith, "is the very principle that my worthy friend and

master, Doctor Doboobie, always acted upon; until, being besotted with

his own imaginations, and conceited of his high chemical skill, he

began to spend, in cheating himself, the money which he had acquired

in cheating others, and either discovered or built for himself, I could

never know which, this secret elaboratory, in which he used to seclude

himself both from patients and disciples, who doubtless thought his

long and mysterious absences from his ordinary residence in the town of

Farringdon were occasioned by his progress in the mystic sciences, and

his intercourse with the invisible world. Me also he tried to deceive;

but though I contradicted him not, he saw that I knew too much of his

secrets to be any longer a safe companion. Meanwhile, his name waxed

famous--or rather infamous, and many of those who resorted to him did so

under persuasion that he was a sorcerer. And yet his supposed advance in

the occult sciences drew to him the secret resort of men too powerful

to be named, for purposes too dangerous to be mentioned. Men cursed

and threatened him, and bestowed on me, the innocent assistant of his

studies, the nickname of the Devil's foot-post, which procured me a

volley of stones as soon as ever I ventured to show my face in the

street of the village. At length my master suddenly disappeared,

pretending to me that he was about to visit his elaboratory in this

place, and forbidding me to disturb him till two days were past. When

this period had elapsed, I became anxious, and resorted to this vault,

where I found the fires extinguished and the utensils in confusion,

with a note from the learned Doboobius, as he was wont to style himself,

acquainting me that we should never meet again, bequeathing me his

chemical apparatus, and the parchment which I have just put into your

hands, advising me strongly to prosecute the secret which it

contained, which would infallibly lead me to the discovery of the grand

magisterium."

"And didst thou follow this sage advice?" said Tressilian.

"Worshipful sir, no," replied the smith; "for, being by nature cautious,

and suspicious from knowing with whom I had to do, I made so many

perquisitions before I ventured even to light a fire, that I at length

discovered a small barrel of gunpowder, carefully hid beneath the

furnace, with the purpose, no doubt, that as soon as I should commence

the grand work of the transmutation of metals, the explosion should

transmute the vault and all in it into a heap of ruins, which might

serve at once for my slaughter-house and my grave. This cured me of

alchemy, and fain would I have returned to the honest hammer and anvil;

but who would bring a horse to be shod by the Devil's post? Meantime, I

had won the regard of my honest Flibbertigibbet here, he being then at

Farringdon with his master, the sage Erasmus Holiday, by teaching him

a few secrets, such as please youth at his age; and after much counsel

together, we agreed that, since I could get no practice in the ordinary

way, I should try how I could work out business among these

ignorant boors, by practising upon their silly fears; and, thanks to

Flibbertigibbet, who hath spread my renown, I have not wanted custom.

But it is won at too great risk, and I fear I shall be at length taken

up for a wizard; so that I seek but an opportunity to leave this vault,

when I can have the protection of some worshipful person against the

fury of the populace, in case they chance to recognize me."

"And art thou," said Tressilian, "perfectly acquainted with the roads in

this country?"

"I could ride them every inch by midnight," answered Wayland Smith,

which was the name this adept had assumed.

"Thou hast no horse to ride upon," said Tressilian.

"Pardon me," replied Wayland; "I have as good a tit as ever yeoman

bestrode; and I forgot to say it was the best part of the mediciner's

legacy to me, excepting one or two of the choicest of his medical

secrets, which I picked up without his knowledge and against his will."

"Get thyself washed and shaved, then," said Tressilian; "reform thy

dress as well as thou canst, and fling away these grotesque trappings;

and, so thou wilt be secret and faithful, thou shalt follow me for a

short time, till thy pranks here are forgotten. Thou hast, I think, both

address and courage, and I have matter to do that may require both."

Wayland Smith eagerly embraced the proposal, and protested his devotion

to his new master. In a very few minutes he had made so great an

alteration in his original appearance, by change of dress, trimming his

beard and hair, and so forth, that Tressilian could not help remarking

that he thought he would stand in little need of a protector, since none

of his old acquaintance were likely to recognize him.

"My debtors would not pay me money," said Wayland, shaking his head;

"but my creditors of every kind would be less easily blinded. And,

in truth, I hold myself not safe, unless under the protection of a

gentleman of birth and character, as is your worship."

So saying, he led the way out of the cavern. He then called loudly for

Hobgoblin, who, after lingering for an instant, appeared with the horse

furniture, when Wayland closed and sedulously covered up the trap-door,

observing it might again serve him at his need, besides that the tools

were worth somewhat. A whistle from the owner brought to his side a nag

that fed quietly on the common, and was accustomed to the signal.

While he accoutred him for the journey, Tressilian drew his own girths

tighter, and in a few minutes both were ready to mount.

At this moment Sludge approached to bid them farewell.

"You are going to leave me, then, my old playfellow," said the boy; "and

there is an end of all our game at bo-peep with the cowardly lubbards

whom I brought hither to have their broad-footed nags shed by the devil

and his imps?"

"It is even so," said Wayland Smith, "the best friends must part,

Flibbertigibbet; but thou, my boy, art the only thing in the Vale of

Whitehorse which I shall regret to leave behind me."

"Well, I bid thee not farewell," said Dickie Sludge, "for you will be

at these revels, I judge, and so shall I; for if Dominie Holiday take me

not thither, by the light of day, which we see not in yonder dark hole,

I will take myself there!"

"In good time," said Wayland; "but I pray you to do nought rashly."

"Nay, now you would make a child, a common child of me, and tell me of

the risk of walking without leading-strings. But before you are a mile

from these stones, you shall know by a sure token that I have more of

the hobgoblin about me than you credit; and I will so manage that, if

you take advantage, you may profit by my prank."

"What dost thou mean, boy?" said Tressilian; but Flibbertigibbet only

answered with a grin and a caper, and bidding both of them farewell,

and, at the same time, exhorting them to make the best of their way from

the place, he set them the example by running homeward with the same

uncommon velocity with which he had baffled Tressilian's former attempts

to get hold of him.

"It is in vain to chase him," said Wayland Smith; "for unless your

worship is expert in lark-hunting, we should never catch hold of

him--and besides, what would it avail? Better make the best of our way

hence, as he advises."

They mounted their horses accordingly, and began to proceed at a round

pace, as soon as Tressilian had explained to his guide the direction in

which he desired to travel.

After they had trotted nearly a mile, Tressilian could not help

observing to his companion that his horse felt more lively under him

than even when he mounted in the morning.

"Are you avised of that?" said Wayland Smith, smiling. "That is owing

to a little secret of mine. I mixed that with an handful of oats which

shall save your worship's heels the trouble of spurring these six hours

at least. Nay, I have not studied medicine and pharmacy for nought."

"I trust," said Tressilian, "your drugs will do my horse no harm?"

"No more than the mare's milk; which foaled him," answered the artist,

and was proceeding to dilate on the excellence of his recipe when he

was interrupted by an explosion as loud and tremendous as the mine which

blows up the rampart of a beleaguered city. The horses started, and the

riders were equally surprised. They turned to gaze in the direction from

which the thunder-clap was heard, and beheld, just over the spot they

had left so recently, a huge pillar of dark smoke rising high into the

clear, blue atmosphere. "My habitation is gone to wreck," said Wayland,

immediately conjecturing the cause of the explosion. "I was a fool to

mention the doctor's kind intentions towards my mansion before that limb

of mischief, Flibbertigibbet; I might have guessed he would long to put

so rare a frolic into execution. But let us hasten on, for the sound

will collect the country to the spot."

So saying, he spurred his horse, and Tressilian also quickening his

speed, they rode briskly forward.

"This, then, was the meaning of the little imp's token which he promised

us?" said Tressilian. "Had we lingered near the spot, we had found it a

love-token with a vengeance."

"He would have given us warning," said the smith. "I saw him look back

more than once to see if we were off--'tis a very devil for mischief,

yet not an ill-natured devil either. It were long to tell your honour

how I became first acquainted with him, and how many tricks he played

me. Many a good turn he did me too, especially in bringing me customers;

for his great delight was to see them sit shivering behind the bushes

when they heard the click of my hammer. I think Dame Nature, when she

lodged a double quantity of brains in that misshapen head of his, gave

him the power of enjoying other people's distresses, as she gave them

the pleasure of laughing at his ugliness."

"It may be so," said Tressilian; "those who find themselves severed from

society by peculiarities of form, if they do not hate the common bulk of

mankind, are at least not altogether indisposed to enjoy their mishaps

and calamities."

"But Flibbertigibbet," answered Wayland, "hath that about him which

may redeem his turn for mischievous frolic; for he is as faithful when

attached as he is tricky and malignant to strangers, and, as I said

before, I have cause to say so."

Tressilian pursued the conversation no further, and they continued

their journey towards Devonshire without further adventure, until they

alighted at an inn in the town of Marlborough, since celebrated for

having given title to the greatest general (excepting one) whom Britain

ever produced. Here the travellers received, in the same breath, an

example of the truth of two old proverbs--namely, that ILL NEWS FLY

FAST, and that LISTENERS SELDOM HEAR A GOOD TALE OF THEMSELVES.

The inn-yard was in a sort of combustion when they alighted; insomuch,

that they could scarce get man or boy to take care of their horses, so

full were the whole household of some news which flew from tongue to

tongue, the import of which they were for some time unable to discover.

At length, indeed, they found it respected matters which touched them

nearly.

"What is the matter, say you, master?" answered, at length, the head

hostler, in reply to Tressilian's repeated questions.--"Why, truly,

I scarce know myself. But here was a rider but now, who says that the

devil hath flown away with him they called Wayland Smith, that won'd

about three miles from the Whitehorse of Berkshire, this very blessed

morning, in a flash of fire and a pillar of smoke, and rooted up the

place he dwelt in, near that old cockpit of upright stones, as cleanly

as if it had all been delved up for a cropping."

"Why, then," said an old farmer, "the more is the pity; for that Wayland

Smith (whether he was the devil's crony or no I skill not) had a good

notion of horses' diseases, and it's to be thought the bots will spread

in the country far and near, an Satan has not gien un time to leave his

secret behind un."

"You may say that, Gaffer Grimesby," said the hostler in return; "I have

carried a horse to Wayland Smith myself, for he passed all farriers in

this country."

"Did you see him?" said Dame Alison Crane, mistress of the inn

bearing that sign, and deigning to term HUSBAND the owner thereof, a

mean-looking hop-o'-my-thumb sort or person, whose halting gait, and

long neck, and meddling, henpecked insignificance are supposed to have

given origin to the celebrated old English tune of "My name hath a lame

tame Crane."

On this occasion he chirped out a repetition of his wife's question,

"Didst see the devil, Jack Hostler, I say?"

"And what if I did see un, Master Crane?" replied Jack Hostler, for,

like all the rest of the household, he paid as little respect to his

master as his mistress herself did.

"Nay, nought, Jack Hostler," replied the pacific Master Crane; "only if

you saw the devil, methinks I would like to know what un's like?"

"You will know that one day, Master Crane," said his helpmate, "an ye

mend not your manners, and mind your business, leaving off such idle

palabras.--But truly, Jack Hostler, I should be glad to know myself what

like the fellow was."

"Why, dame," said the hostler, more respectfully, "as for what he was

like I cannot tell, nor no man else, for why I never saw un."

"And how didst thou get thine errand done," said Gaffer Grimesby, "if

thou seedst him not?"

"Why, I had schoolmaster to write down ailment o' nag," said Jack

Hostler; "and I went wi' the ugliest slip of a boy for my guide as ever

man cut out o' lime-tree root to please a child withal."

"And what was it?--and did it cure your nag, Jack Hostler?" was uttered

and echoed by all who stood around.

"Why, how can I tell you what it was?" said the hostler; "simply it

smelled and tasted--for I did make bold to put a pea's substance into

my mouth--like hartshorn and savin mixed with vinegar; but then no

hartshorn and savin ever wrought so speedy a cure. And I am dreading

that if Wayland Smith be gone, the bots will have more power over horse

and cattle."

The pride of art, which is certainly not inferior in its influence to

any other pride whatever, here so far operated on Wayland Smith, that,

notwithstanding the obvious danger of his being recognized, he could not

help winking to Tressilian, and smiling mysteriously, as if triumphing

in the undoubted evidence of his veterinary skill. In the meanwhile, the

discourse continued.

"E'en let it be so," said a grave man in black, the companion of Gaffer

Grimesby; "e'en let us perish under the evil God sends us, rather than

the devil be our doctor."

"Very true," said Dame Crane; "and I marvel at Jack Hostler that he

would peril his own soul to cure the bowels of a nag."

"Very true, mistress," said Jack Hostler, "but the nag was my master's;

and had it been yours, I think ye would ha' held me cheap enow an I had

feared the devil when the poor beast was in such a taking. For the rest,

let the clergy look to it. Every man to his craft, says the proverb--the

parson to the prayer-book, and the groom to his curry-comb.

"I vow," said Dame Crane, "I think Jack Hostler speaks like a good

Christian and a faithful servant, who will spare neither body nor soul

in his master's service. However, the devil has lifted him in time, for

a Constable of the Hundred came hither this morning to get old Gaffer

Pinniewinks, the trier of witches, to go with him to the Vale of

Whitehorse to comprehend Wayland Smith, and put him to his probation. I

helped Pinniewinks to sharpen his pincers and his poking-awl, and I saw

the warrant from Justice Blindas."

"Pooh--pooh--the devil would laugh both at Blindas and his warrant,

constable and witch-finder to boot," said old Dame Crank, the Papist

laundress; "Wayland Smith's flesh would mind Pinniewinks' awl no

more than a cambric ruff minds a hot piccadilloe-needle. But tell me,

gentlefolks, if the devil ever had such a hand among ye, as to snatch

away your smiths and your artists from under your nose, when the good

Abbots of Abingdon had their own? By Our Lady, no!--they had their

hallowed tapers; and their holy water, and their relics, and what not,

could send the foulest fiends a-packing. Go ask a heretic parson to do

the like. But ours were a comfortable people."

"Very true, Dame Crank," said the hostler; "so said Simpkins of

Simonburn when the curate kissed his wife,--'They are a comfortable

people,' said he."

"Silence, thou foul-mouthed vermin," said Dame Crank; "is it fit for

a heretic horse-boy like thee to handle such a text as the Catholic

clergy?"

"In troth no, dame," replied the man of oats; "and as you yourself are

now no text for their handling, dame, whatever may have been the case in

your day, I think we had e'en better leave un alone."

At this last exchange of sarcasm, Dame Crank set up her throat, and

began a horrible exclamation against Jack Hostler, under cover of which

Tressilian and his attendant escaped into the house.

They had no sooner entered a private chamber, to which Goodman Crane

himself had condescended to usher them, and dispatched their worthy and

obsequious host on the errand of procuring wine and refreshment, than

Wayland Smith began to give vent to his self-importance.

"You see, sir," said he, addressing Tressilian, "that I nothing fabled

in asserting that I possessed fully the mighty mystery of a farrier, or

mareschal, as the French more honourably term us. These dog-hostlers,

who, after all, are the better judges in such a case, know what credit

they should attach to my medicaments. I call you to witness, worshipful

Master Tressilian, that nought, save the voice of calumny and the hand

of malicious violence, hath driven me forth from a station in which I

held a place alike useful and honoured."

"I bear witness, my friend, but will reserve my listening," answered

Tressilian, "for a safer time; unless, indeed, you deem it essential

to your reputation to be translated, like your late dwelling, by the

assistance of a flash of fire. For you see your best friends reckon you

no better than a mere sorcerer."

"Now, Heaven forgive them," said the artist, "who confounded learned

skill with unlawful magic! I trust a man may be as skilful, or more so,

than the best chirurgeon ever meddled with horse-flesh, and yet may be

upon the matter little more than other ordinary men, or at the worst no

conjurer."

"God forbid else!" said Tressilian. "But be silent just for the present,

since here comes mine host with an assistant, who seems something of the

least."

Everybody about the inn, Dame Crane herself included, had been indeed

so interested and agitated by the story they had heard of Wayland Smith,

and by the new, varying, and more marvellous editions of the incident

which arrived from various quarters, that mine host, in his righteous

determination to accommodate his guests, had been able to obtain the

assistance of none of his household, saving that of a little boy, a

junior tapster, of about twelve years old, who was called Sampson.

"I wish," he said, apologizing to his guests, as he set down a flagon

of sack, and promised some food immediately--"I wish the devil had flown

away with my wife and my whole family instead of this Wayland Smith,

who, I daresay, after all said and done, was much less worthy of the

distinction which Satan has done him."

"I hold opinion with you, good fellow," replied Wayland Smith; "and I

will drink to you upon that argument."

"Not that I would justify any man who deals with the devil," said mine

host, after having pledged Wayland in a rousing draught of sack, "but

that--saw ye ever better sack, my masters?--but that, I say, a man had

better deal with a dozen cheats and scoundrel fellows, such as this

Wayland Smith, than with a devil incarnate, that takes possession of

house and home, bed and board."

The poor fellow's detail of grievances was here interrupted by the

shrill voice of his helpmate, screaming from the kitchen, to which he

instantly hobbled, craving pardon of his guests. He was no sooner gone

than Wayland Smith expressed, by every contemptuous epithet in the

language, his utter scorn for a nincompoop who stuck his head under

his wife's apron-string; and intimated that, saving for the sake of

the horses, which required both rest and food, he would advise his

worshipful Master Tressilian to push on a stage farther, rather than pay

a reckoning to such a mean-spirited, crow-trodden, henpecked coxcomb, as

Gaffer Crane.

The arrival of a large dish of good cow-heel and bacon something soothed

the asperity of the artist, which wholly vanished before a choice capon,

so delicately roasted that the lard frothed on it, said Wayland, like

May-dew on a lily; and both Gaffer Crane and his good dame became, in

his eyes, very painstaking, accommodating, obliging persons.

According to the manners of the times, the master and his attendant

sat at the same table, and the latter observed, with regret, how little

attention Tressilian paid to his meal. He recollected, indeed, the pain

he had given by mentioning the maiden in whose company he had first seen

him; but, fearful of touching upon a topic too tender to be tampered

with, he chose to ascribe his abstinence to another cause.

"This fare is perhaps too coarse for your worship," said Wayland, as the

limbs of the capon disappeared before his own exertions; "but had you

dwelt as long as I have done in yonder dungeon, which Flibbertigibbet

has translated to the upper element, a place where I dared hardly broil

my food, lest the smoke should be seen without, you would think a fair

capon a more welcome dainty."

"If you are pleased, friend," said Tressilian, "it is well.

Nevertheless, hasten thy meal if thou canst, For this place is

unfriendly to thy safety, and my concerns crave travelling."

Allowing, therefore, their horses no more rest than was absolutely

necessary for them, they pursued their journey by a forced march as far

as Bradford, where they reposed themselves for the night.

The next morning found them early travellers. And, not to fatigue the

reader with unnecessary particulars, they traversed without adventure

the counties of Wiltshire and Somerset, and about noon of the third day

after Tressilian's leaving Cumnor, arrived at Sir Hugh Robsart's seat,

called Lidcote Hall, on the frontiers of Devonshire.

CHAPTER XII.

Ah me! the flower and blossom of your house,

The wind hath blown away to other towers.

--JOANNA BAILLIE'S FAMILY LEGEND.

The ancient seat of Lidcote Hall was situated near the village of

the same name, and adjoined the wild and extensive forest of Exmoor,

plentifully stocked with game, in which some ancient rights belonging to

the Robsart family entitled Sir Hugh to pursue his favourite amusement

of the chase. The old mansion was a low, venerable building, occupying

a considerable space of ground, which was surrounded by a deep moat. The

approach and drawbridge were defended by an octagonal tower, of ancient

brickwork, but so clothed with ivy and other creepers that it was

difficult to discover of what materials it was constructed. The angles

of this tower were each decorated with a turret, whimsically various

in form and in size, and, therefore, very unlike the monotonous stone

pepperboxes which, in modern Gothic architecture, are employed for

the same purpose. One of these turrets was square, and occupied as

a clock-house. But the clock was now standing still; a circumstance

peculiarly striking to Tressilian, because the good old knight, among

other harmless peculiarities, had a fidgety anxiety about the exact

measurement of time, very common to those who have a great deal of that

commodity to dispose of, and find it lie heavy upon their hands--just

as we see shopkeepers amuse themselves with taking an exact account of

their stock at the time there is least demand for it.

The entrance to the courtyard of the old mansion lay through an archway,

surmounted by the foresaid tower; but the drawbridge was down, and one

leaf of the iron-studded folding-doors stood carelessly open. Tressilian

hastily rode over the drawbridge, entered the court, and began to

call loudly on the domestics by their names. For some time he was only

answered by the echoes and the howling of the hounds, whose kennel lay

at no great distance from the mansion, and was surrounded by the same

moat. At length Will Badger, the old and favourite attendant of the

knight, who acted alike as squire of his body and superintendent of his

sports, made his appearance. The stout, weather-beaten forester showed

great signs of joy when he recognized Tressilian.

"Lord love you," he said, "Master Edmund, be it thou in flesh and fell?

Then thou mayest do some good on Sir Hugh, for it passes the wit of

man--that is, of mine own, and the curate's, and Master Mumblazen's--to

do aught wi'un."

"Is Sir Hugh then worse since I went away, Will?" demanded Tressilian.

"For worse in body--no; he is much better," replied the domestic; "but

he is clean mazed as it were--eats and drinks as he was wont--but sleeps

not, or rather wakes not, for he is ever in a sort of twilight, that is

neither sleeping nor waking. Dame Swineford thought it was like the dead

palsy. But no, no, dame, said I, it is the heart, it is the heart."

"Can ye not stir his mind to any pastimes?" said Tressilian.

"He is clean and quite off his sports," said Will Badger; "hath neither

touched backgammon or shovel-board, nor looked on the big book of

harrowtry wi' Master Mumblazen. I let the clock run down, thinking the

missing the bell might somewhat move him--for you know, Master Edmund,

he was particular in counting time--but he never said a word on't, so

I may e'en set the old chime a-towling again. I made bold to tread on

Bungay's tail too, and you know what a round rating that would ha' cost

me once a-day; but he minded the poor tyke's whine no more than a madge

howlet whooping down the chimney--so the case is beyond me."

"Thou shalt tell me the rest within doors, Will. Meanwhile, let this

person be ta'en to the buttery, and used with respect. He is a man of

art."

"White art or black art, I would," said Will Badger, "that he had any

art which could help us.--Here, Tom Butler, look to the man of art;--and

see that he steals none of thy spoons, lad," he added in a whisper to

the butler, who showed himself at a low window, "I have known as honest

a faced fellow have art enough to do that."

He then ushered Tressilian into a low parlour, and went, at his desire,

to see in what state his master was, lest the sudden return of his

darling pupil and proposed son-in-law should affect him too strongly.

He returned immediately, and said that Sir Hugh was dozing in his

elbow-chair, but that Master Mumblazen would acquaint Master Tressilian

the instant he awaked.

"But it is chance if he knows you," said the huntsman, "for he has

forgotten the name of every hound in the pack. I thought, about a week

since, he had gotten a favourable turn. 'Saddle me old Sorrel,' said he

suddenly, after he had taken his usual night-draught out of the great

silver grace-cup, 'and take the hounds to Mount Hazelhurst to-morrow.'

Glad men were we all, and out we had him in the morning, and he rode to

cover as usual, with never a word spoken but that the wind was south,

and the scent would lie. But ere we had uncoupled'the hounds, he began

to stare round him, like a man that wakes suddenly out of a dream--turns

bridle, and walks back to Hall again, and leaves us to hunt at leisure

by ourselves, if we listed."

"You tell a heavy tale, Will," replied Tressilian; "but God must help

us--there is no aid in man."

"Then you bring us no news of young Mistress Amy? But what need I

ask--your brow tells the story. Ever I hoped that if any man could or

would track her, it must be you. All's over and lost now. But if ever I

have that Varney within reach of a flight-shot, I will bestow a forked

shaft on him; and that I swear by salt and bread."

As he spoke, the door opened, and Master Mumblazen appeared--a withered,

thin, elderly gentleman, with a cheek like a winter apple, and his

grey hair partly concealed by a small, high hat, shaped like a cone,

or rather like such a strawberry-basket as London fruiterers exhibit at

their windows. He was too sententious a person to waste words on mere

salutation; so, having welcomed Tressilian with a nod and a shake of the

hand, he beckoned him to follow to Sir Hugh's great chamber, which the

good knight usually inhabited. Will Badger followed, unasked, anxious to

see whether his master would be relieved from his state of apathy by the

arrival of Tressilian.

In a long, low parlour, amply furnished with implements of the chase,

and with silvan trophies, by a massive stone chimney, over which hung

a sword and suit of armour somewhat obscured by neglect, sat Sir Hugh

Robsart of Lidcote, a man of large size, which had been only kept within

moderate compass by the constant use of violent exercise, It seemed to

Tressilian that the lethargy, under which his old friend appeared to

labour, had, even during his few weeks' absence, added bulk to his

person--at least it had obviously diminished the vivacity of his eye,

which, as they entered, first followed Master Mumblazen slowly to a

large oaken desk, on which a ponderous volume lay open, and then rested,

as if in uncertainty, on the stranger who had entered along with him.

The curate, a grey-headed clergyman, who had been a confessor in the

days of Queen Mary, sat with a book in his hand in another recess in the

apartment. He, too, signed a mournful greeting to Tressilian, and laid

his book aside, to watch the effect his appearance should produce on the

afflicted old man.

As Tressilian, his own eyes filling fast with tears, approached more

and more nearly to the father of his betrothed bride, Sir Hugh's

intelligence seemed to revive. He sighed heavily, as one who awakens

from a state of stupor; a slight convulsion passed over his features;

he opened his arms without speaking a word, and, as Tressilian threw

himself into them, he folded him to his bosom.

"There is something left to live for yet," were the first words he

uttered; and while he spoke, he gave vent to his feelings in a paroxysm

of weeping, the tears chasing each other down his sunburnt cheeks and

long white beard.

"I ne'er thought to have thanked God to see my master weep," said Will

Badger; "but now I do, though I am like to weep for company."

"I will ask thee no questions," said the old knight; "no

questions--none, Edmund. Thou hast not found her--or so found her, that

she were better lost."

Tressilian was unable to reply otherwise than by putting his hands

before his face.

"It is enough--it is enough. But do not thou weep for her, Edmund. I

have cause to weep, for she was my daughter; thou hast cause to rejoice,

that she did not become thy wife.--Great God! thou knowest best what is

good for us. It was my nightly prayer that I should see Amy and Edmund

wedded,--had it been granted, it had now been gall added to bitterness."

"Be comforted, my friend," said the curate, addressing Sir Hugh, "it

cannot be that the daughter of all our hopes and affections is the vile

creature you would bespeak her."

"Oh, no," replied Sir Hugh impatiently, "I were wrong to name broadly

the base thing she is become--there is some new court name for it, I

warrant me. It is honour enough for the daughter of an old Devonshire

clown to be the leman of a gay courtier--of Varney too--of Varney, whose

grandsire was relieved by my father, when his fortune was broken, at

the battle of--the battle of--where Richard was slain--out on my

memory!--and I warrant none of you will help me--"

"The battle of Bosworth," said Master Mumblazen--"stricken between

Richard Crookback and Henry Tudor, grandsire of the Queen that now is,

PRIMO HENRICI SEPTIMI; and in the year one thousand four hundred and

eighty-five, POST CHRISTUM NATUM."

"Ay, even so," said the old knight; "every child knows it. But my poor

head forgets all it should remember, and remembers only what it would

most willingly forget. My brain has been at fault, Tressilian, almost

ever since thou hast been away, and even yet it hunts counter."

"Your worship," said the good clergyman, "had better retire to your

apartment, and try to sleep for a little space. The physician left

a composing draught; and our Great Physician has commanded us to use

earthly means, that we may be strengthened to sustain the trials He

sends us."

"True, true, old friend," said Sir Hugh; "and we will bear our trials

manfully--we have lost but a woman.--See, Tressilian,"--he drew from

his bosom a long ringlet of glossy hair,--"see this lock! I tell thee,

Edmund, the very night she disappeared, when she bid me good even, as

she was wont, she hung about my neck, and fondled me more than usual;

and I, like an old fool, held her by this lock, until she took her

scissors, severed it, and left it in my hand--as all I was ever to see

more of her!"

Tressilian was unable to reply, well judging what a complication of

feelings must have crossed the bosom of the unhappy fugitive at that

cruel moment. The clergyman was about to speak, but Sir Hugh interrupted

him.

"I know what you would say, Master Curate,--After all, it is but a lock

of woman's tresses; and by woman, shame, and sin, and death came into

an innocent world.--And learned Master Mumblazen, too, can say scholarly

things of their inferiority."

"C'EST L'HOMME," said Master Mumblazen, "QUI SE BAST, ET QUI CONSEILLE."

"True," said Sir Hugh, "and we will bear us, therefore, like men who

have both mettle and wisdom in us.--Tressilian, thou art as welcome

as if thou hadst brought better news. But we have spoken too long

dry-lipped.--Amy, fill a cup of wine to Edmund, and another to me." Then

instantly recollecting that he called upon her who could not hear,

he shook his head, and said to the clergyman, "This grief is to my

bewildered mind what the church of Lidcote is to our park: we may lose

ourselves among the briers and thickets for a little space, but from

the end of each avenue we see the old grey steeple and the grave of my

forefathers. I would I were to travel that road tomorrow!"

Tressilian and the curate joined in urging the exhausted old man to lay

himself to rest, and at length prevailed. Tressilian remained by his

pillow till he saw that slumber at length sunk down on him, and then

returned to consult with the curate what steps should be adopted in

these unhappy circumstances.

They could not exclude from these deliberations Master Michael

Mumblazen; and they admitted him the more readily, that besides what

hopes they entertained from his sagacity, they knew him to be so great

a friend to taciturnity, that there was no doubt of his keeping counsel.

He was an old bachelor, of good family, but small fortune, and distantly

related to the House of Robsart; in virtue of which connection, Lidcote

Hall had been honoured with his residence for the last twenty years. His

company was agreeable to Sir Hugh, chiefly on account of his profound

learning, which, though it only related to heraldry and genealogy, with

such scraps of history as connected themselves with these subjects,

was precisely of a kind to captivate the good old knight; besides the

convenience which he found in having a friend to appeal to when his

own memory, as frequently happened, proved infirm and played him false

concerning names and dates, which, and all similar deficiencies, Master

Michael Mumblazen supplied with due brevity and discretion. And,

indeed, in matters concerning the modern world, he often gave, in his

enigmatical and heraldic phrase, advice which was well worth attending

to, or, in Will Badger's language, started the game while others beat

the bush.

"We have had an unhappy time of it with the good knight, Master Edmund,"

said the curate. "I have not suffered so much since I was torn away from

my beloved flock, and compelled to abandon them to the Romish wolves."

"That was in TERTIO MARIAE," said Master Mumblazen.

"In the name of Heaven," continued the curate, "tell us, has your

time been better spent than ours, or have you any news of that

unhappy maiden, who, being for so many years the principal joy of this

broken-down house, is now proved our greatest unhappiness? Have you not

at least discovered her place of residence?"

"I have," replied Tressilian. "Know you Cumnor Place, near Oxford?"

"Surely," said the clergyman; "it was a house of removal for the monks

of Abingdon."

"Whose arms," said Master Michael, "I have seen over a stone chimney in

the hall,--a cross patonce betwixt four martlets."

"There," said Tressilian, "this unhappy maiden resides, in company with

the villain Varney. But for a strange mishap, my sword had revenged all

our injuries, as well as hers, on his worthless head."

"Thank God, that kept thine hand from blood-guiltiness, rash young man!"

answered the curate. "Vengeance is mine, saith the Lord, and I will

repay it. It were better study to free her from the villain's nets of

infamy."

"They are called, in heraldry, LAQUEI AMORIS, or LACS D'AMOUR," said

Mumblazen.

"It is in that I require your aid, my friends," said Tressilian. "I

am resolved to accuse this villain, at the very foot of the throne, of

falsehood, seduction, and breach of hospitable laws. The Queen shall

hear me, though the Earl of Leicester, the villain's patron, stood at

her right hand."

"Her Grace," said the curate, "hath set a comely example of continence

to her subjects, and will doubtless do justice on this inhospitable

robber. But wert thou not better apply to the Earl of Leicester, in the

first place, for justice on his servant? If he grants it, thou dost save

the risk of making thyself a powerful adversary, which will certainly

chance if, in the first instance, you accuse his master of the horse and

prime favourite before the Queen."

"My mind revolts from your counsel," said Tressilian. "I cannot brook

to plead my noble patron's cause the unhappy Amy's cause--before any one

save my lawful Sovereign. Leicester, thou wilt say, is noble. Be it so;

he is but a subject like ourselves, and I will not carry my plaint to

him, if I can do better. Still, I will think on what thou hast said; but

I must have your assistance to persuade the good Sir Hugh to make me his

commissioner and fiduciary in this matter, for it is in his name I must

speak, and not in my own. Since she is so far changed as to dote upon

this empty profligate courtier, he shall at least do her the justice

which is yet in his power."

"Better she died CAELEBS and SINE PROLE," said Mumblazen, with more

animation than he usually expressed, "than part, PER PALE, the noble

coat of Robsart with that of such a miscreant!"

"If it be your object, as I cannot question," said the clergyman, "to

save, as much as is yet possible, the credit of this unhappy young

woman, I repeat, you should apply, in the first instance, to the Earl

of Leicester. He is as absolute in his household as the Queen in her

kingdom, and if he expresses to Varney that such is his pleasure, her

honour will not stand so publicly committed."

"You are right, you are right!" said Tressilian eagerly, "and I thank

you for pointing out what I overlooked in my haste. I little thought

ever to have besought grace of Leicester; but I could kneel to the proud

Dudley, if doing so could remove one shade of shame from this unhappy

damsel. You will assist me then to procure the necessary powers from Sir

Hugh Robsart?"

The curate assured him of his assistance, and the herald nodded assent.

"You must hold yourselves also in readiness to testify, in case you are

called upon, the openhearted hospitality which our good patron exercised

towards this deceitful traitor, and the solicitude with which he

laboured to seduce his unhappy daughter."

"At first," said the clergyman, "she did not, as it seemed to me, much

affect his company; but latterly I saw them often together."

"SEIANT in the parlour," said Michael Mumblazen, "and PASSANT in the

garden."

"I once came on them by chance," said the priest, "in the South wood,

in a spring evening. Varney was muffled in a russet cloak, so that I saw

not his face. They separated hastily, as they heard me rustle amongst

the leaves; and I observed she turned her head and looked long after

him."

"With neck REGUARDANT," said the herald. "And on the day of her flight,

and that was on Saint Austen's Eve, I saw Varney's groom, attired in his

liveries, hold his master's horse and Mistress Amy's palfrey, bridled

and saddled PROPER, behind the wall of the churchyard."

"And now is she found mewed up in his secret place of retirement," said

Tressilian. "The villain is taken in the manner, and I well wish he may

deny his crime, that I may thrust conviction down his false throat! But

I must prepare for my journey. Do you, gentlemen, dispose my patron to

grant me such powers as are needful to act in his name."

So saying, Tressilian left the room.

"He is too hot," said the curate; "and I pray to God that He may grant

him the patience to deal with Varney as is fitting."

"Patience and Varney," said Mumblazen, "is worse heraldry than metal

upon metal. He is more false than a siren, more rapacious than a

griffin, more poisonous than a wyvern, and more cruel than a lion

rampant."

"Yet I doubt much," said the curate, "whether we can with propriety ask

from Sir Hugh Robsart, being in his present condition, any deed deputing

his paternal right in Mistress Amy to whomsoever--"

"Your reverence need not doubt that," said Will Badger, who entered as

he spoke, "for I will lay my life he is another man when he wakes than

he has been these thirty days past."

"Ay, Will," said the curate, "hast thou then so much confidence in

Doctor Diddleum's draught?"

"Not a whit," said Will, "because master ne'er tasted a drop on't,

seeing it was emptied out by the housemaid. But here's a gentleman, who

came attending on Master Tressilian, has given Sir Hugh a draught that

is worth twenty of yon un. I have spoken cunningly with him, and a

better farrier or one who hath a more just notion of horse and dog

ailment I have never seen; and such a one would never be unjust to a

Christian man."

"A farrier! you saucy groom--and by whose authority, pray?" said the

curate, rising in surprise and indignation; "or who will be warrant for

this new physician?"

"For authority, an it like your reverence, he had mine; and for warrant,

I trust I have not been five-and-twenty years in this house without

having right to warrant the giving of a draught to beast or body--I who

can gie a drench, and a ball, and bleed, or blister, if need, to my very

self."

The counsellors of the house of Robsart thought it meet to carry this

information instantly to Tressilian, who as speedily summoned before

him Wayland Smith, and demanded of him (in private, however) by what

authority he had ventured to administer any medicine to Sir Hugh

Robsart?

"Why," replied the artist, "your worship cannot but remember that I told

you I had made more progress into my master's--I mean the learned Doctor

Doboobie's--mystery than he was willing to own; and indeed half of his

quarrel and malice against me was that, besides that I got something too

deep into his secrets, several discerning persons, and particularly a

buxom young widow of Abingdon, preferred my prescriptions to his."

"None of thy buffoonery, sir," said Tressilian sternly. "If thou hast

trifled with us--much more, if thou hast done aught that may prejudice

Sir Hugh Robsart's health, thou shalt find thy grave at the bottom of a

tin-mine."

"I know too little of the great ARCANUM to convert the ore to

gold," said Wayland firmly. "But truce to your apprehensions, Master

Tressilian. I understood the good knight's case from what Master William

Badger told me; and I hope I am able enough to administer a poor dose

of mandragora, which, with the sleep that must needs follow, is all that

Sir Hugh Robsart requires to settle his distraught brains."

"I trust thou dealest fairly with me, Wayland?" said Tressilian.

"Most fairly and honestly, as the event shall show," replied the artist.

"What would it avail me to harm the poor old man for whom you are

interested?--you, to whom I owe it that Gaffer Pinniewinks is not even

now rending my flesh and sinews with his accursed pincers, and probing

every mole in my body with his sharpened awl (a murrain on the hands

which forged it!) in order to find out the witch's mark?--I trust to

yoke myself as a humble follower to your worship's train, and I only

wish to have my faith judged of by the result of the good knight's

slumbers."

Wayland Smith was right in his prognostication. The sedative draught

which his skill had prepared, and Will Badger's confidence had

administered, was attended with the most beneficial effects. The

patient's sleep was long and healthful, and the poor old knight awoke,

humbled indeed in thought and weak in frame, yet a much better judge of

whatever was subjected to his intellect than he had been for some time

past. He resisted for a while the proposal made by his friends that

Tressilian should undertake a journey to court, to attempt the recovery

of his daughter, and the redress of her wrongs, in so far as they might

yet be repaired. "Let her go," he said; "she is but a hawk that goes

down the wind; I would not bestow even a whistle to reclaim her." But

though he for some time maintained this argument, he was at length

convinced it was his duty to take the part to which natural affection

inclined him, and consent that such efforts as could yet be made

should be used by Tressilian in behalf of his daughter. He subscribed,

therefore, a warrant of attorney, such as the curate's skill enabled him

to draw up; for in those simple days the clergy were often the advisers

of their flock in law as well as in gospel.

All matters were prepared for Tressilian's second departure, within

twenty-four hours after he had returned to Lidcote Hall; but one

material circumstance had been forgotten, which was first called to the

remembrance of Tressilian by Master Mumblazen. "You are going to

court, Master Tressilian," said he; "you will please remember that your

blazonry must be ARGENT and OR--no other tinctures will pass current."

The remark was equally just and embarrassing. To prosecute a suit at

court, ready money was as indispensable even in the golden days of

Elizabeth as at any succeeding period; and it was a commodity little at

the command of the inhabitants of Lidcote Hall. Tressilian was himself

poor; the revenues of good Sir Hugh Robsart were consumed, and even

anticipated, in his hospitable mode of living; and it was finally

necessary that the herald who started the doubt should himself solve it.

Master Michael Mumblazen did so by producing a bag of money, containing

nearly three hundred pounds in gold and silver of various coinage, the

savings of twenty years, which he now, without speaking a syllable upon

the subject, dedicated to the service of the patron whose shelter

and protection had given him the means of making this little hoard.

Tressilian accepted it without affecting a moment's hesitation, and a

mutual grasp of the hand was all that passed betwixt them, to express

the pleasure which the one felt in dedicating his all to such a purpose,

and that which the other received from finding so material an obstacle

to the success of his journey so suddenly removed, and in a manner so

unexpected.

While Tressilian was making preparations for his departure early

the ensuing morning, Wayland Smith desired to speak with him, and,

expressing his hope that he had been pleased with the operation of his

medicine in behalf of Sir Hugh Robsart, added his desire to accompany

him to court. This was indeed what Tressilian himself had several times

thought of; for the shrewdness, alertness of understanding, and variety

of resource which this fellow had exhibited during the time they had

travelled together, had made him sensible that his assistance might be

of importance. But then Wayland was in danger from the grasp of law; and

of this Tressilian reminded him, mentioning something, at the same time,

of the pincers of Pinniewinks and the warrant of Master Justice Blindas.

Wayland Smith laughed both to scorn.

"See you, sir!" said he, "I have changed my garb from that of a farrier

to a serving-man; but were it still as it was, look at my moustaches.

They now hang down; I will but turn them up, and dye them with a

tincture that I know of, and the devil would scarce know me again."

He accompanied these words with the appropriate action, and in less

than a minute, by setting up, his moustaches and his hair, he seemed

a different person from him that had but now entered the room. Still,

however, Tressilian hesitated to accept his services, and the artist

became proportionably urgent.

"I owe you life and limb," he said, "and I would fain pay a part of the

debt, especially as I know from Will Badger on what dangerous service

your worship is bound. I do not, indeed, pretend to be what is called

a man of mettle, one of those ruffling tear-cats who maintain their

master's quarrel with sword and buckler. Nay, I am even one of those who

hold the end of a feast better than the beginning of a fray. But I know

that I can serve your worship better, in such quest as yours, than any

of these sword-and-dagger men, and that my head will be worth an hundred

of their hands."

Tressilian still hesitated. He knew not much of this strange fellow, and

was doubtful how far he could repose in him the confidence necessary

to render him a useful attendant upon the present emergency. Ere he

had come to a determination, the trampling of a horse was heard in the

courtyard, and Master Mumblazen and Will Badger both entered hastily

into Tressilian's chamber, speaking almost at the same moment.

"Here is a serving-man on the bonniest grey tit I ever see'd in my

life," said Will Badger, who got the start--"having on his arm a silver

cognizance, being a fire-drake holding in his mouth a brickbat, under

a coronet of an Earl's degree," said Master Mumblazen, "and bearing a

letter sealed of the same."

Tressilian took the letter, which was addressed "To the worshipful

Master Edmund Tressilian, our loving kinsman--These--ride, ride,

ride--for thy life, for thy life, for thy life." He then opened it, and

found the following contents:--

"MASTER TRESSILIAN, OUR GOOD FRIEND AND COUSIN, "We are at present

so ill at ease, and otherwise so unhappily circumstanced, that we are

desirous to have around us those of our friends on whose loving-kindness

we can most especially repose confidence; amongst whom we hold our good

Master Tressilian one of the foremost and nearest, both in good will and

good ability. We therefore pray you, with your most convenient speed, to

repair to our poor lodging, at Sayes Court, near Deptford, where we will

treat further with you of matters which we deem it not fit to commit

unto writing. And so we bid you heartily farewell, being your loving

kinsman to command,

"RATCLIFFE, EARL OF SUSSEX." "Send up the messenger instantly, Will

Badger," said Tressilian; and as the man entered the room, he exclaimed,

"Ah, Stevens, is it you? how does my good lord?"

"Ill, Master Tressilian," was the messenger's reply, "and having

therefore the more need of good friends around him."

"But what is my lord's malady?" said Tressilian anxiously; "I heard

nothing of his being ill."

"I know not, sir," replied the man; "he is very ill at ease. The

leeches are at a stand, and many of his household suspect foul

practice-witchcraft, or worse."

"What are the symptoms?" said Wayland Smith, stepping forward hastily.

"Anan?" said the messenger, not comprehending his meaning.

"What does he ail?" said Wayland; "where lies his disease?"

The man looked at Tressilian, as if to know whether he should

answer these inquiries from a stranger, and receiving a sign in the

affirmative, he hastily enumerated gradual loss of strength, nocturnal

perspiration, and loss of appetite, faintness, etc.

"Joined," said Wayland, "to a gnawing pain in the stomach, and a low

fever?"

"Even so," said the messenger, somewhat surprised.

"I know how the disease is caused," said the artist, "and I know the

cause. Your master has eaten of the manna of Saint Nicholas. I know

the cure too--my master shall not say I studied in his laboratory for

nothing."

"How mean you?" said Tressilian, frowning; "we speak of one of the first

nobles of England. Bethink you, this is no subject for buffoonery."

"God forbid!" said Wayland Smith. "I say that I know this disease, and

can cure him. Remember what I did for Sir Hugh Robsart."

"We will set forth instantly," said Tressilian. "God calls us."

Accordingly, hastily mentioning this new motive for his instant

departure, though without alluding to either the suspicions of Stevens,

or the assurances of Wayland Smith, he took the kindest leave of Sir

Hugh and the family at Lidcote Hall, who accompanied him with prayers

and blessings, and, attended by Wayland and the Earl of Sussex's

domestic, travelled with the utmost speed towards London.

CHAPTER XIII.

Ay, I know you have arsenic,

Vitriol, sal-tartre, argaile, alkaly,

Cinoper: I know all.--This fellow, Captain,

Will come in time to be a great distiller,

And give a say (I will not say directly,

But very near) at the philosopher's stone. THE ALCHEMIST.

Tressilian and his attendants pressed their route with all dispatch.

He had asked the smith, indeed, when their departure was resolved on,

whether he would not rather choose to avoid Berkshire, in which he had

played a part so conspicuous? But Wayland returned a confident answer.

He had employed the short interval they passed at Lidcote Hall in

transforming himself in a wonderful manner. His wild and overgrown

thicket of beard was now restrained to two small moustaches on the

upper lip, turned up in a military fashion. A tailor from the village

of Lidcote (well paid) had exerted his skill, under his customer's

directions, so as completely to alter Wayland's outward man, and take

off from his appearance almost twenty years of age. Formerly, besmeared

with soot and charcoal, overgrown with hair, and bent double with the

nature of his labour, disfigured too by his odd and fantastic dress,

he seemed a man of fifty years old. But now, in a handsome suit of

Tressilian's livery, with a sword by his side and a buckler on his

shoulder, he looked like a gay ruffling serving-man, whose age might

be betwixt thirty and thirty-five, the very prime of human life.

His loutish, savage-looking demeanour seemed equally changed, into a

forward, sharp, and impudent alertness of look and action.

When challenged by Tressilian, who desired to know the cause of a

metamorphosis so singular and so absolute, Wayland only answered by

singing a stave from a comedy, which was then new, and was supposed,

among the more favourable judges, to augur some genius on the part of

the author. We are happy to preserve the couplet, which ran exactly

thus,--

"Ban, ban, ca Caliban--

Get a new master--Be a new man."

Although Tressilian did not recollect the verses, yet they reminded

him that Wayland had once been a stage player, a circumstance which,

of itself, accounted indifferently well for the readiness with which

he could assume so total a change of personal appearance. The artist

himself was so confident of his disguise being completely changed, or

of his having completely changed his disguise, which may be the more

correct mode of speaking, that he regretted they were not to pass near

his old place of retreat.

"I could venture," he said, "in my present dress, and with your

worship's backing, to face Master Justice Blindas, even on a day of

Quarter Sessions; and I would like to know what is become of Hobgoblin,

who is like to play the devil in the world, if he can once slip the

string, and leave his granny and his dominie.--Ay, and the scathed

vault!" he said; "I would willingly have seen what havoc the explosion

of so much gunpowder has made among Doctor Demetrius Doboobie's retorts

and phials. I warrant me, my fame haunts the Vale of the Whitehorse long

after my body is rotten; and that many a lout ties up his horse, lays

down his silver groat, and pipes like a sailor whistling in a calm for

Wayland Smith to come and shoe his tit for him. But the horse will catch

the founders ere the smith answers the call."

In this particular, indeed, Wayland proved a true prophet; and so easily

do fables rise, that an obscure tradition of his extraordinary practice

in farriery prevails in the Vale of Whitehorse even unto this day; and

neither the tradition of Alfred's Victory, nor of the celebrated Pusey

Horn, are better preserved in Berkshire than the wild legend of Wayland

Smith. [See Note 2, Legend of Wayland Smith.]

The haste of the travellers admitted their making no stay upon their

journey, save what the refreshment of the horses required; and as many

of the places through which they passed were under the influence of the

Earl of Leicester, or persons immediately dependent on him, they thought

it prudent to disguise their names and the purpose of their journey.

On such occasions the agency of Wayland Smith (by which name we shall

continue to distinguish the artist, though his real name was Lancelot

Wayland) was extremely serviceable. He seemed, indeed, to have a

pleasure in displaying the alertness with which he could baffle

investigation, and amuse himself by putting the curiosity of tapsters

and inn-keepers on a false scent. During the course of their brief

journey, three different and inconsistent reports were circulated by him

on their account--namely, first, that Tressilian was the Lord Deputy of

Ireland, come over in disguise to take the Queen's pleasure concerning

the great rebel Rory Oge MacCarthy MacMahon; secondly, that the said

Tressilian was an agent of Monsieur, coming to urge his suit to the

hand of Elizabeth; thirdly, that he was the Duke of Medina, come over,

incognito, to adjust the quarrel betwixt Philip and that princess.

Tressilian was angry, and expostulated with the artist on the various

inconveniences, and, in particular, the unnecessary degree of attention

to which they were subjected by the figments he thus circulated; but

he was pacified (for who could be proof against such an argument?) by

Wayland's assuring him that a general importance was attached to his own

(Tressilian's) striking presence, which rendered it necessary to give an

extraordinary reason for the rapidity and secrecy of his journey.

At length they approached the metropolis, where, owing to the more

general recourse of strangers, their appearance excited neither

observation nor inquiry, and finally they entered London itself.

It was Tressilian's purpose to go down directly to Deptford, where Lord

Sussex resided, in order to be near the court, then held at Greenwich,

the favourite residence of Elizabeth, and honoured as her birthplace.

Still a brief halt in London was necessary; and it was somewhat

prolonged by the earnest entreaties of Wayland Smith, who desired

permission to take a walk through the city.

"Take thy sword and buckler, and follow me, then," said Tressilian; "I

am about to walk myself, and we will go in company."

This he said, because he was not altogether so secure of the fidelity

of his new retainer as to lose sight of him at this interesting moment,

when rival factions at the court of Elizabeth were running so high.

Wayland Smith willingly acquiesced in the precaution, of which he

probably conjectured the motive, but only stipulated that his master

should enter the shops of such chemists or apothecaries as he should

point out, in walking through Fleet Street, and permit him to make some

necessary purchases. Tressilian agreed, and obeying the signal of his

attendant, walked successively into more than four or five shops, where

he observed that Wayland purchased in each only one single drug, in

various quantities. The medicines which he first asked for were readily

furnished, each in succession, but those which he afterwards required

were less easily supplied; and Tressilian observed that Wayland more

than once, to the surprise of the shopkeeper, returned the gum or herb

that was offered to him, and compelled him to exchange it for the right

sort, or else went on to seek it elsewhere. But one ingredient, in

particular, seemed almost impossible to be found. Some chemists plainly

admitted they had never seen it; others denied that such a drug existed,

excepting in the imagination of crazy alchemists; and most of them

attempted to satisfy their customer, by producing some substitute,

which, when rejected by Wayland, as not being what he had asked

for, they maintained possessed, in a superior degree, the self-same

qualities. In general they all displayed some curiosity concerning the

purpose for which he wanted it. One old, meagre chemist, to whom

the artist put the usual question, in terms which Tressilian neither

understood nor could recollect, answered frankly, there was none of that

drug in London, unless Yoglan the Jew chanced to have some of it upon

hand.

"I thought as much," said Wayland. And as soon as they left the shop,

he said to Tressilian, "I crave your pardon, sir, but no artist can work

without his tools. I must needs go to this Yoglan's; and I promise you,

that if this detains you longer than your leisure seems to permit, you

shall, nevertheless, be well repaid by the use I will make of this rare

drug. Permit me," he added, "to walk before you, for we are now to quit

the broad street and we will make double speed if I lead the way."

Tressilian acquiesced, and, following the smith down a lane which turned

to the left hand towards the river, he found that his guide walked on

with great speed, and apparently perfect knowledge of the town, through

a labyrinth of by-streets, courts, and blind alleys, until at length

Wayland paused in the midst of a very narrow lane, the termination

of which showed a peep of the Thames looking misty and muddy, which

background was crossed saltierwise, as Mr. Mumblazen might have said, by

the masts of two lighters that lay waiting for the tide. The shop under

which he halted had not, as in modern days, a glazed window, but a

paltry canvas screen surrounded such a stall as a cobbler now occupies,

having the front open, much in the manner of a fishmonger's booth of the

present day. A little old smock-faced man, the very reverse of a Jew in

complexion, for he was very soft-haired as well as beardless, appeared,

and with many courtesies asked Wayland what he pleased to want. He had

no sooner named the drug, than the Jew started and looked surprised.

"And vat might your vorship vant vith that drug, which is not named,

mein God, in forty years as I have been chemist here?"

"These questions it is no part of my commission to answer," said

Wayland; "I only wish to know if you have what I want, and having it,

are willing to sell it?"

"Ay, mein God, for having it, that I have, and for selling it, I am a

chemist, and sell every drug." So saying, he exhibited a powder, and

then continued, "But it will cost much moneys. Vat I ave cost its weight

in gold--ay, gold well-refined--I vill say six times. It comes from

Mount Sinai, where we had our blessed Law given forth, and the plant

blossoms but once in one hundred year."

"I do not know how often it is gathered on Mount Sinai," said Wayland,

after looking at the drug offered him with great disdain, "but I will

wager my sword and buckler against your gaberdine, that this trash you

offer me, instead of what I asked for, may be had for gathering any day

of the week in the castle ditch of Aleppo."

"You are a rude man," said the Jew; "and, besides, I ave no better than

that--or if I ave, I will not sell it without order of a physician, or

without you tell me vat you make of it."

The artist made brief answer in a language of which Tressilian could not

understand a word, and which seemed to strike the Jew with the

utmost astonishment. He stared upon Wayland like one who has suddenly

recognized some mighty hero or dreaded potentate, in the person of an

unknown and unmarked stranger. "Holy Elias!" he exclaimed, when he had

recovered the first stunning effects of his surprise; and then passing

from his former suspicious and surly manner to the very extremity of

obsequiousness, he cringed low to the artist, and besought him to enter

his poor house, to bless his miserable threshold by crossing it.

"Vill you not taste a cup vith the poor Jew, Zacharias Yoglan?--Vill you

Tokay ave?--vill you Lachrymae taste?--vill you--"

"You offend in your proffers," said Wayland; "minister to me in what I

require of you, and forbear further discourse."

The rebuked Israelite took his bunch of keys, and opening with

circumspection a cabinet which seemed more strongly secured than the

other cases of drugs and medicines amongst which it stood, he drew out a

little secret drawer, having a glass lid, and containing a small portion

of a black powder. This he offered to Wayland, his manner conveying

the deepest devotion towards him, though an avaricious and jealous

expression, which seemed to grudge every grain of what his customer was

about to possess himself, disputed ground in his countenance with the

obsequious deference which he desired it should exhibit.

"Have you scales?" said Wayland.

The Jew pointed to those which lay ready for common use in the shop,

but he did so with a puzzled expression of doubt and fear, which did not

escape the artist.

"They must be other than these," said Wayland sternly. "Know you not

that holy things lose their virtue if weighed in an unjust balance?"

The Jew hung his head, took from a steel-plated casket a pair of scales

beautifully mounted, and said, as he adjusted them for the artist's

use, "With these I do mine own experiment--one hair of the high-priest's

beard would turn them."

"It suffices," said the artist, and weighed out two drachms for himself

of the black powder, which he very carefully folded up, and put into his

pouch with the other drugs. He then demanded the price of the Jew, who

answered, shaking his head and bowing,--

"No price--no, nothing at all from such as you. But you will see the

poor Jew again? you will look into his laboratory, where, God help him,

he hath dried himself to the substance of the withered gourd of Jonah,

the holy prophet. You will ave pity on him, and show him one little step

on the great road?"

"Hush!" said Wayland, laying his finger mysteriously on his mouth; "it

may be we shall meet again. Thou hast already the SCHAHMAJM, as thine

own Rabbis call it--the general creation; watch, therefore, and pray,

for thou must attain the knowledge of Alchahest Elixir Samech ere I

may commune further with thee." Then returning with a slight nod the

reverential congees of the Jew, he walked gravely up the lane, followed

by his master, whose first observation on the scene he had just

witnessed was, that Wayland ought to have paid the man for his drug,

whatever it was.

"I pay him?" said the artist. "May the foul fiend pay me if I do! Had

it not been that I thought it might displease your worship, I would have

had an ounce or two of gold out of him, in exchange of the same just

weight of brick dust."

"I advise you to practise no such knavery while waiting upon me," said

Tressilian.

"Did I not say," answered the artist, "that for that reason alone I

forbore him for the present?--Knavery, call you it? Why, yonder wretched

skeleton hath wealth sufficient to pave the whole lane he lives in with

dollars, and scarce miss them out of his own iron chest; yet he goes mad

after the philosopher's stone. And besides, he would have cheated a poor

serving-man, as he thought me at first, with trash that was not worth

a penny. Match for match, quoth the devil to the collier; if his false

medicine was worth my good crowns, my true brick dust is as well worth

his good gold."

"It may be so, for aught I know," said Tressilian, "in dealing amongst

Jews and apothecaries; but understand that to have such tricks of

legerdemain practised by one attending on me diminishes my honour, and

that I will not permit them. I trust thou hast made up thy purchases?"

"I have, sir," replied Wayland; "and with these drugs will I, this very

day, compound the true orvietan, that noble medicine which is so seldom

found genuine and effective within these realms of Europe, for want

of that most rare and precious drug which I got but now from Yoglan."

[Orvietan, or Venice treacle, as it was sometimes called, was understood

to be a sovereign remedy against poison; and the reader must be

contented, for the time he peruses these pages, to hold the same

opinion, which was once universally received by the learned as well as

the vulgar.]

"But why not have made all your purchases at one shop?" said his master;

"we have lost nearly an hour in running from one pounder of simples to

another."

"Content you, sir," said Wayland. "No man shall learn my secret; and

it would not be mine long, were I to buy all my materials from one

chemist."

They now returned to their inn (the famous Bell-Savage); and while the

Lord Sussex's servant prepared the horses for their journey, Wayland,

obtaining from the cook the service of a mortar, shut himself up in

a private chamber, where he mixed, pounded, and amalgamated the drugs

which he had bought, each in its due proportion, with a readiness

and address that plainly showed him well practised in all the manual

operations of pharmacy.

By the time Wayland's electuary was prepared the horses were ready, and

a short hour's riding brought them to the present habitation of Lord

Sussex, an ancient house, called Sayes Court, near Deptford, which

had long pertained to a family of that name, but had for upwards of a

century been possessed by the ancient and honourable family of Evelyn.

The present representative of that ancient house took a deep interest

in the Earl of Sussex, and had willingly accommodated both him and his

numerous retinue in his hospitable mansion. Sayes Court was afterwards

the residence of the celebrated Mr. Evelyn, whose "Silva" is still the

manual of British planters; and whose life, manners, and principles, as

illustrated in his Memoirs, ought equally to be the manual of English

gentlemen.

CHAPTER XIV.

This is rare news thou tell'st me, my good fellow;

There are two bulls fierce battling on the green

For one fair heifer--if the one goes down,

The dale will be more peaceful, and the herd,

Which have small interest in their brulziement,

May pasture there in peace. --OLD PLAY.

Sayes Court was watched like a beleaguered fort; and so high rose the

suspicions of the time, that Tressilian and his attendants were stopped

and questioned repeatedly by sentinels, both on foot and horseback,

as they approached the abode of the sick Earl. In truth, the high rank

which Sussex held in Queen Elizabeth's favour, and his known and avowed

rivalry of the Earl of Leicester, caused the utmost importance to be

attached to his welfare; for, at the period we treat of, all men doubted

whether he or the Earl of Leicester might ultimately have the higher

rank in her regard.

Elizabeth, like many of her sex, was fond of governing by factions, so

as to balance two opposing interests, and reserve in her own hand the

power of making either predominate, as the interest of the state, or

perhaps as her own female caprice (for to that foible even she was not

superior), might finally determine. To finesse--to hold the cards--to

oppose one interest to another--to bridle him who thought himself

highest in her esteem, by the fears he must entertain of another equally

trusted, if not equally beloved, were arts which she used throughout

her reign, and which enabled her, though frequently giving way to the

weakness of favouritism, to prevent most of its evil effects on her

kingdom and government.

The two nobles who at present stood as rivals in her favour possessed

very different pretensions to share it; yet it might be in general said

that the Earl of Sussex had been most serviceable to the Queen, while

Leicester was most dear to the woman. Sussex was, according to the

phrase of the times, a martialist--had done good service in Ireland and

in Scotland, and especially in the great northern rebellion, in 1569,

which was quelled, in a great measure, by his military talents. He was,

therefore, naturally surrounded and looked up to by those who wished to

make arms their road to distinction. The Earl of Sussex, moreover, was

of more ancient and honourable descent than his rival, uniting in

his person the representation of the Fitz-Walters, as well as of

the Ratcliffes; while the scutcheon of Leicester was stained by the

degradation of his grandfather, the oppressive minister of Henry VII.,

and scarce improved by that of his father, the unhappy Dudley, Duke of

Northumberland, executed on Tower Hill, August 22, 1553. But in person,

features, and address, weapons so formidable in the court of a

female sovereign, Leicester had advantages more than sufficient to

counterbalance the military services, high blood, and frank bearing of

the Earl of Sussex; and he bore, in the eye of the court and kingdom,

the higher share in Elizabeth's favour, though (for such was her uniform

policy) by no means so decidedly expressed as to warrant him against the

final preponderance of his rival's pretensions. The illness of Sussex

therefore happened so opportunely for Leicester, as to give rise to

strange surmises among the public; while the followers of the one Earl

were filled with the deepest apprehensions, and those of the other with

the highest hopes of its probable issue. Meanwhile--for in that old time

men never forgot the probability that the matter might be determined

by length of sword--the retainers of each noble flocked around their

patron, appeared well armed in the vicinity of the court itself, and

disturbed the ear of the sovereign by their frequent and alarming

debates, held even within the precincts of her palace. This preliminary

statement is necessary, to render what follows intelligible to the

reader. [See Note 3. Leicester and Sussex.]

On Tressilian's arrival at Sayes Court, he found the place filled with

the retainers of the Earl of Sussex, and of the gentlemen who came to

attend their patron in his illness. Arms were in every hand, and a deep

gloom on every countenance, as if they had apprehended an immediate

and violent assault from the opposite faction. In the hall, however,

to which Tressilian was ushered by one of the Earl's attendants,

while another went to inform Sussex of his arrival, he found only two

gentlemen in waiting. There was a remarkable contrast in their dress,

appearance, and manners. The attire of the elder gentleman, a person

as it seemed of quality and in the prime of life, was very plain and

soldierlike, his stature low, his limbs stout, his bearing ungraceful,

and his features of that kind which express sound common sense, without

a grain of vivacity or imagination. The younger, who seemed about

twenty, or upwards, was clad in the gayest habit used by persons of

quality at the period, wearing a crimson velvet cloak richly ornamented

with lace and embroidery, with a bonnet of the same, encircled with a

gold chain turned three times round it, and secured by a medal. His hair

was adjusted very nearly like that of some fine gentlemen of our own

time--that is, it was combed upwards, and made to stand as it were on

end; and in his ears he wore a pair of silver earrings, having each a

pearl of considerable size. The countenance of this youth, besides being

regularly handsome and accompanied by a fine person, was animated and

striking in a degree that seemed to speak at once the firmness of

a decided and the fire of an enterprising character, the power of

reflection, and the promptitude of determination.

Both these gentlemen reclined nearly in the same posture on benches

near each other; but each seeming engaged in his own meditations, looked

straight upon the wall which was opposite to them, without speaking to

his companion. The looks of the elder were of that sort which convinced

the beholder that, in looking on the wall, he saw no more than the side

of an old hall hung around with cloaks, antlers, bucklers, old pieces

of armour, partisans, and the similar articles which were usually the

furniture of such a place. The look of the younger gallant had in it

something imaginative; he was sunk in reverie, and it seemed as if the

empty space of air betwixt him and the wall were the stage of a theatre

on which his fancy was mustering his own DRAMATIS PERSONAE, and treating

him with sights far different from those which his awakened and earthly

vision could have offered.

At the entrance of Tressilian both started from their musing, and

made him welcome--the younger, in particular, with great appearance of

animation and cordiality.

"Thou art welcome, Tressilian," said the youth. "Thy philosophy stole

thee from us when this household had objects of ambition to offer; it

is an honest philosophy, since it returns thee to us when there are only

dangers to be shared."

"Is my lord, then, so greatly indisposed?" said Tressilian.

"We fear the very worst," answered the elder gentleman, "and by the

worst practice."

"Fie," replied Tressilian, "my Lord of Leicester is honourable."

"What doth he with such attendants, then, as he hath about him?" said

the younger gallant. "The man who raises the devil may be honest, but he

is answerable for the mischief which the fiend does, for all that."

"And is this all of you, my mates," inquired Tressilian, "that are about

my lord in his utmost straits?"

"No, no," replied the elder gentleman, "there are Tracy, Markham, and

several more; but we keep watch here by two at once, and some are weary

and are sleeping in the gallery above."

"And some," said the young man, "are gone down to the Dock yonder at

Deptford, to look out such a hull; as they may purchase by clubbing

their broken fortunes; and as soon as all is over, we will lay our noble

lord in a noble green grave, have a blow at those who have hurried him

thither, if opportunity suits, and then sail for the Indies with heavy

hearts and light purses."

"It may be," said Tressilian, "that I will embrace the same purpose, so

soon as I have settled some business at court."

"Thou business at court!" they both exclaimed at once, "and thou make

the Indian voyage!"

"Why, Tressilian," said the younger man, "art thou not wedded, and

beyond these flaws of fortune, that drive folks out to sea when their

bark bears fairest for the haven?--What has become of the lovely

Indamira that was to match my Amoret for truth and beauty?"

"Speak not of her!" said Tressilian, averting his face.

"Ay, stands it so with you?" said the youth, taking his hand very

affectionately; "then, fear not I will again touch the green wound.

But it is strange as well as sad news. Are none of our fair and merry

fellowship to escape shipwreck of fortune and happiness in this sudden

tempest? I had hoped thou wert in harbour, at least, my dear Edmund. But

truly says another dear friend of thy name,

'What man that sees the ever whirling wheel

Of Chance, the which all mortal things doth sway,

But that thereby doth find and plainly feel,

How Mutability in them doth play

Her cruel sports to many men's decay.'"

The elder gentleman had risen from his bench, and was pacing the

hall with some impatience, while the youth, with much earnestness

and feeling, recited these lines. When he had done, the other wrapped

himself in his cloak, and again stretched himself down, saying, "I

marvel, Tressilian, you will feed the lad in this silly humour. If there

were ought to draw a judgment upon a virtuous and honourable household

like my lord's, renounce me if I think not it were this piping,

whining, childish trick of poetry, that came among us with Master Walter

Wittypate here and his comrades, twisting into all manner of uncouth and

incomprehensible forms of speech, the honest plain English phrase which

God gave us to express our meaning withal."

"Blount believes," said his comrade, laughing, "the devil woo'd Eve

in rhyme, and that the mystic meaning of the Tree of Knowledge refers

solely to the art of clashing rhymes and meting out hexameters." [See

Note 4. Sir Walter Raleigh.]

At this moment the Earl's chamberlain entered, and informed Tressilian

that his lord required to speak with him.

He found Lord Sussex dressed, but unbraced, and lying on his couch, and

was shocked at the alteration disease had made in his person. The Earl

received him with the most friendly cordiality, and inquired into the

state of his courtship. Tressilian evaded his inquiries for a moment,

and turning his discourse on the Earl's own health, he discovered, to

his surprise, that the symptoms of his disorder corresponded minutely

with those which Wayland had predicated concerning it. He hesitated not,

therefore, to communicate to Sussex the whole history of his attendant,

and the pretensions he set up to cure the disorder under which he

laboured. The Earl listened with incredulous attention until the name

of Demetrius was mentioned, and then suddenly called to his secretary to

bring him a certain casket which contained papers of importance. "Take

out from thence," he said, "the declaration of the rascal cook whom we

had under examination, and look heedfully if the name of Demetrius be

not there mentioned."

The secretary turned to the passage at once, and read, "And said

declarant, being examined, saith, That he remembers having made the

sauce to the said sturgeon-fish, after eating of which the said noble

Lord was taken ill; and he put the usual ingredients and condiments

therein, namely--"

"Pass over his trash," said the Earl, "and see whether he had not been

supplied with his materials by a herbalist called Demetrius."

"It is even so," answered the secretary. "And he adds, he has not since

seen the said Demetrius."

"This accords with thy fellow's story, Tressilian," said the Earl; "call

him hither."

On being summoned to the Earl's presence, Wayland Smith told his former

tale with firmness and consistency.

"It may be," said the Earl, "thou art sent by those who have begun this

work, to end it for them; but bethink, if I miscarry under thy medicine,

it may go hard with thee."

"That were severe measure," said Wayland, "since the issue of medicine,

and the end of life, are in God's disposal. But I will stand the risk. I

have not lived so long under ground to be afraid of a grave."

"Nay, if thou be'st so confident," said the Earl of Sussex, "I will take

the risk too, for the learned can do nothing for me. Tell me how this

medicine is to be taken."

"That will I do presently," said Wayland; "but allow me to condition

that, since I incur all the risk of this treatment, no other physician

shall be permitted to interfere with it."

"That is but fair," replied the Earl; "and now prepare your drug."

While Wayland obeyed the Earl's commands, his servants, by the artist's

direction, undressed their master, and placed him in bed.

"I warn you," he said, "that the first operation of this medicine will

be to produce a heavy sleep, during which time the chamber must be kept

undisturbed, as the consequences may otherwise he fatal. I myself will

watch by the Earl with any of the gentlemen of his chamber."

"Let all leave the room, save Stanley and this good fellow," said the

Earl.

"And saving me also," said Tressilian. "I too am deeply interested in

the effects of this potion."

"Be it so, good friend," said the Earl. "And now for our experiment; but

first call my secretary and chamberlain."

"Bear witness," he continued, when these officers arrived--"bear witness

for me, gentlemen, that our honourable friend Tressilian is in no way

responsible for the effects which this medicine may produce upon me, the

taking it being my own free action and choice, in regard I believe it to

be a remedy which God has furnished me by unexpected means to recover me

of my present malady. Commend me to my noble and princely Mistress;

and say that I live and die her true servant, and wish to all about her

throne the same singleness of heart and will to serve her, with more

ability to do so than hath been assigned to poor Thomas Ratcliffe."

He then folded his hands, and seemed for a second or two absorbed

in mental devotion, then took the potion in his hand, and, pausing,

regarded Wayland with a look that seemed designed to penetrate his very

soul, but which caused no anxiety or hesitation in the countenance or

manner of the artist.

"Here is nothing to be feared," said Sussex to Tressilian, and swallowed

the medicine without further hesitation.

"I am now to pray your lordship," said Wayland, "to dispose yourself

to rest as commodiously as you can; and of you, gentlemen, to remain as

still and mute as if you waited at your mother's deathbed."

The chamberlain and secretary then withdrew, giving orders that all

doors should be bolted, and all noise in the house strictly prohibited.

Several gentlemen were voluntary watchers in the hall, but none remained

in the chamber of the sick Earl, save his groom of the chamber, the

artist, and Tressilian.--Wayland Smith's predictions were speedily

accomplished, and a sleep fell upon the Earl, so deep and sound that

they who watched his bedside began to fear that, in his weakened state,

he might pass away without awakening from his lethargy. Wayland Smith

himself appeared anxious, and felt the temples of the Earl slightly,

from time to time, attending particularly to the state of his

respiration, which was full and deep, but at the same time easy and

uninterrupted.

CHAPTER XV.

You loggerheaded and unpolish'd grooms,

What, no attendance, no regard, no duty?

Where is the foolish knave I sent before?

--TAMING OF THE SHREW.

There is no period at which men look worse in the eyes of each other, or

feel more uncomfortable, than when the first dawn of daylight finds them

watchers. Even a beauty of the first order, after the vigils of a ball

are interrupted by the dawn, would do wisely to withdraw herself from

the gaze of her fondest and most partial admirers. Such was the pale,

inauspicious, and ungrateful light which began to beam upon those who

kept watch all night in the hall at Sayes Court, and which mingled its

cold, pale, blue diffusion with the red, yellow, and smoky beams of

expiring lamps and torches. The young gallant, whom we noticed in our

last chapter, had left the room for a few minutes, to learn the cause of

a knocking at the outward gate, and on his return was so struck with

the forlorn and ghastly aspects of his companions of the watch that

he exclaimed, "Pity of my heart, my masters, how like owls you look!

Methinks, when the sun rises, I shall see you flutter off with your eyes

dazzled, to stick yourselves into the next ivy-tod or ruined steeple."

"Hold thy peace, thou gibing fool," said Blount; "hold thy peace. Is

this a time for jeering, when the manhood of England is perchance dying

within a wall's breadth of thee?"

"There thou liest," replied the gallant.

"How, lie!" exclaimed Blount, starting up, "lie! and to me?"

"Why, so thou didst, thou peevish fool," answered the youth; "thou didst

lie on that bench even now, didst thou not? But art thou not a hasty

coxcomb to pick up a wry word so wrathfully? Nevertheless, loving and,

honouring my lord as truly as thou, or any one, I do say that, should

Heaven take him from us, all England's manhood dies not with him."

"Ay," replied Blount, "a good portion will survive with thee,

doubtless."

"And a good portion with thyself, Blount, and with stout Markham here,

and Tracy, and all of us. But I am he will best employ the talent Heaven

has given to us all."

"As how, I prithee?" said Blount; "tell us your mystery of multiplying."

"Why, sirs," answered the youth, "ye are like goodly land, which bears

no crop because it is not quickened by manure; but I have that rising

spirit in me which will make my poor faculties labour to keep pace with

it. My ambition will keep my brain at work, I warrant thee."

"I pray to God it does not drive thee mad," said Blount; "for my part,

if we lose our noble lord, I bid adieu to the court and to the camp

both. I have five hundred foul acres in Norfolk, and thither will I, and

change the court pantoufle for the country hobnail."

"O base transmutation!" exclaimed his antagonist; "thou hast already got

the true rustic slouch--thy shoulders stoop, as if thine hands were at

the stilts of the plough; and thou hast a kind of earthy smell about

thee, instead of being perfumed with essence, as a gallant and courtier

should. On my soul, thou hast stolen out to roll thyself on a hay mow!

Thy only excuse will be to swear by thy hilts that the farmer had a fair

daughter."

"I pray thee, Walter," said another of the company, "cease thy raillery,

which suits neither time nor place, and tell us who was at the gate just

now."

"Doctor Masters, physician to her Grace in ordinary, sent by her

especial orders to inquire after the Earl's health," answered Walter.

"Ha! what?" exclaimed Tracy; "that was no slight mark of favour. If the

Earl can but come through, he will match with Leicester yet. Is Masters

with my lord at present?"

"Nay," replied Walter, "he is half way back to Greenwich by this time,

and in high dudgeon."

"Thou didst not refuse him admittance?" exclaimed Tracy.

"Thou wert not, surely, so mad?" ejaculated Blount.

"I refused him admittance as flatly, Blount, as you would refuse a penny

to a blind beggar--as obstinately, Tracy, as thou didst ever deny access

to a dun."

"Why, in the fiend's name, didst thou trust him to go to the gate?" said

Blount to Tracy.

"It suited his years better than mine," answered Tracy; "but he has

undone us all now thoroughly. My lord may live or die, he will never

have a look of favour from her Majesty again."

"Nor the means of making fortunes for his followers," said the young

gallant, smiling contemptuously;--"there lies the sore point that will

brook no handling. My good sirs, I sounded my lamentations over my lord

somewhat less loudly than some of you; but when the point comes of

doing him service, I will yield to none of you. Had this learned leech

entered, think'st thou not there had been such a coil betwixt him and

Tressilian's mediciner, that not the sleeper only, but the very dead

might have awakened? I know what larurm belongs to the discord of

doctors."

"And who is to take the blame of opposing the Queen's orders?" said

Tracy; "for, undeniably, Doctor Masters came with her Grace's positive

commands to cure the Earl."

"I, who have done the wrong, will bear the blame," said Walter.

"Thus, then, off fly the dreams of court favour thou hast nourished,"

said Blount, "and despite all thy boasted art and ambition, Devonshire

will see thee shine a true younger brother, fit to sit low at the board,

carve turn about with the chaplain, look that the hounds be fed, and see

the squire's girths drawn when he goes a-hunting."

"Not so," said the young man, colouring, "not while Ireland and the

Netherlands have wars, and not while the sea hath pathless waves. The

rich West hath lands undreamed of, and Britain contains bold hearts to

venture on the quest of them. Adieu for a space, my masters. I go to

walk in the court and look to the sentinels."

"The lad hath quicksilver in his veins, that is certain," said Blount,

looking at Markham.

"He hath that both in brain and blood," said Markham, "which may either

make or mar him. But in closing the door against Masters, he hath done

a daring and loving piece of service; for Tressilian's fellow hath ever

averred that to wake the Earl were death, and Masters would wake the

Seven Sleepers themselves, if he thought they slept not by the regular

ordinance of medicine."

Morning was well advanced when Tressilian, fatigued and over-watched,

came down to the hall with the joyful intelligence that the Earl

had awakened of himself, that he found his internal complaints much

mitigated, and spoke with a cheerfulness, and looked round with a

vivacity, which of themselves showed a material and favourable change

had taken place. Tressilian at the same time commanded the attendance of

one or two of his followers, to report what had passed during the night,

and to relieve the watchers in the Earl's chamber.

When the message of the Queen was communicated to the Earl of Sussex, he

at first smiled at the repulse which the physician had received from his

zealous young follower; but instantly recollecting himself, he commanded

Blount, his master of the horse, instantly to take boat, and go down

the river to the Palace of Greenwich, taking young Walter and Tracy with

him, and make a suitable compliment, expressing his grateful thanks to

his Sovereign, and mentioning the cause why he had not been enabled to

profit by the assistance of the wise and learned Doctor Masters.

"A plague on it!" said Blount, as he descended the stairs; "had he sent

me with a cartel to Leicester I think I should have done his errand

indifferently well. But to go to our gracious Sovereign, before whom all

words must be lacquered over either with gilding or with sugar, is such

a confectionary matter as clean baffles my poor old English brain.--Come

with me, Tracy, and come you too, Master Walter Wittypate, that art the

cause of our having all this ado. Let us see if thy neat brain, that

frames so many flashy fireworks, can help out a plain fellow at need

with some of thy shrewd devices."

"Never fear, never fear," exclaimed the youth, "it is I will help you

through; let me but fetch my cloak."

"Why, thou hast it on thy shoulders," said Blount,--"the lad is mazed."

"No, No, this is Tracy's old mantle," answered Walter. "I go not with

thee to court unless as a gentleman should."

"Why," Said Blount, "thy braveries are like to dazzle the eyes of none

but some poor groom or porter."

"I know that," said the youth; "but I am resolved I will have my own

cloak, ay, and brush my doublet to boot, ere I stir forth with you."

"Well, well," said Blount, "here is a coil about a doublet and a cloak.

Get thyself ready, a God's name!"

They were soon launched on the princely bosom of the broad Thames, upon

which the sun now shone forth in all its splendour.

"There are two things scarce matched in the universe," said Walter to

Blount--"the sun in heaven, and the Thames on the earth."

"The one will light us to Greenwich well enough," said Blount, "and the

other would take us there a little faster if it were ebb-tide."

"And this is all thou thinkest--all thou carest--all thou deemest the

use of the King of Elements and the King of Rivers--to guide three such

poor caitiffs as thyself, and me, and Tracy, upon an idle journey of

courtly ceremony!"

"It is no errand of my seeking, faith," replied Blount, "and I could

excuse both the sun and the Thames the trouble of carrying me where

I have no great mind to go, and where I expect but dog's wages for my

trouble--and by my honour," he added, looking out from the head of the

boat, "it seems to me as if our message were a sort of labour in vain,

for, see, the Queen's barge lies at the stairs as if her Majesty were

about to take water."

It was even so. The royal barge, manned with the Queen's watermen

richly attired in the regal liveries, and having the Banner of England

displayed, did indeed lie at the great stairs which ascended from the

river, and along with it two or three other boats for transporting such

part of her retinue as were not in immediate attendance on the royal

person. The yeomen of the guard, the tallest and most handsome men whom

England could produce, guarded with their halberds the passage from

the palace-gate to the river side, and all seemed in readiness for the

Queen's coming forth, although the day was yet so early.

"By my faith, this bodes us no good," said Blount; "it must be some

perilous cause puts her Grace in motion thus untimeously, By my counsel,

we were best put back again, and tell the Earl what we have seen."

"Tell the Earl what we have seen!" said Walter; "why what have we seen

but a boat, and men with scarlet jerkins, and halberds in their hands?

Let us do his errand, and tell him what the Queen says in reply."

So saying, he caused the boat to be pulled towards a landing-place

at some distance from the principal one, which it would not, at that

moment, have been thought respectful to approach, and jumped on shore,

followed, though with reluctance, by his cautious and timid companions.

As they approached the gate of the palace, one of the sergeant porters

told them they could not at present enter, as her Majesty was in the act

of coming forth. The gentlemen used the name of the Earl of Sussex; but

it proved no charm to subdue the officer, who alleged, in reply, that

it was as much as his post was worth to disobey in the least tittle the

commands which he had received.

"Nay, I told you as much before," said Blount; "do, I pray you, my dear

Walter, let us take boat and return."

"Not till I see the Queen come forth," returned the youth composedly.

"Thou art mad, stark mad, by the Mass!" answered Blount.

"And thou," said Walter, "art turned coward of the sudden. I have seen

thee face half a score of shag-headed Irish kerns to thy own share of

them; and now thou wouldst blink and go back to shun the frown of a fair

lady!"

At this moment the gates opened, and ushers began to issue forth in

array, preceded and flanked by the band of Gentlemen Pensioners. After

this, amid a crowd of lords and ladies, yet so disposed around her that

she could see and be seen on all sides, came Elizabeth herself, then in

the prime of womanhood, and in the full glow of what in a Sovereign was

called beauty, and who would in the lowest rank of life have been truly

judged a noble figure, joined to a striking and commanding physiognomy.

She leant on the arm of Lord Hunsdon, whose relation to her by her

mother's side often procured him such distinguished marks of Elizabeth's

intimacy.

The young cavalier we have so often mentioned had probably never yet

approached so near the person of his Sovereign, and he pressed forward

as far as the line of warders permitted, in order to avail himself of

the present opportunity. His companion, on the contrary, cursing his

imprudence, kept pulling him backwards, till Walter shook him off

impatiently, and letting his rich cloak drop carelessly from one

shoulder; a natural action, which served, however, to display to the

best advantage his well-proportioned person. Unbonneting at the same

time, he fixed his eager gaze on the Queen's approach, with a mixture of

respectful curiosity and modest yet ardent admiration, which suited

so well with his fine features that the warders, struck with his rich

attire and noble countenance, suffered him to approach the ground over

which the Queen was to pass, somewhat closer than was permitted

to ordinary spectators. Thus the adventurous youth stood full in

Elizabeth's eye--an eye never indifferent to the admiration which she

deservedly excited among her subjects, or to the fair proportions of

external form which chanced to distinguish any of her courtiers.

Accordingly, she fixed her keen glance on the youth, as she approached

the place where he stood, with a look in which surprise at his boldness

seemed to be unmingled with resentment, while a trifling accident

happened which attracted her attention towards him yet more strongly.

The night had been rainy, and just where the young gentleman stood a

small quantity of mud interrupted the Queen's passage. As she hesitated

to pass on, the gallant, throwing his cloak from his shoulders, laid

it on the miry spot, so as to ensure her stepping over it dry-shod.

Elizabeth looked at the young man, who accompanied this act of devoted

courtesy with a profound reverence, and a blush that overspread his

whole countenance. The Queen was confused, and blushed in her turn,

nodded her head, hastily passed on, and embarked in her barge without

saying a word.

"Come along, Sir Coxcomb," said Blount; "your gay cloak will need the

brush to-day, I wot. Nay, if you had meant to make a footcloth of your

mantle, better have kept Tracy's old drab-debure, which despises all

colours."

"This cloak," said the youth, taking it up and folding it, "shall never

be brushed while in my possession."

"And that will not be long, if you learn not a little more economy; we

shall have you in CUERPO soon, as the Spaniard says."

Their discourse was here interrupted by one of the band of Pensioners.

"I was sent," said he, after looking at them attentively, "to a

gentleman who hath no cloak, or a muddy one.--You, sir, I think,"

addressing the younger cavalier, "are the man; you will please to follow

me."

"He is in attendance on me," said Blount--"on me, the noble Earl of

Sussex's master of horse."

"I have nothing to say to that," answered the messenger; "my orders are

directly from her Majesty, and concern this gentleman only."

So saying, he walked away, followed by Walter, leaving the others

behind, Blount's eyes almost starting from his head with the excess of

his astonishment. At length he gave vent to it in an exclamation, "Who

the good jere would have thought this!" And shaking his head with a

mysterious air, he walked to his own boat, embarked, and returned to

Deptford.

The young cavalier was in the meanwhile guided to the water-side by the

Pensioner, who showed him considerable respect; a circumstance which,

to persons in his situation, may be considered as an augury of no small

consequence. He ushered him into one of the wherries which lay ready to

attend the Queen's barge, which was already proceeding; up the river,

with the advantage of that flood-tide of which, in the course of their

descent, Blount had complained to his associates.

The two rowers used their oars with such expedition at the signal of

the Gentleman Pensioner, that they very soon brought their little skiff

under the stern of the Queen's boat, where she sat beneath an awning,

attended by two or three ladies, and the nobles of her household. She

looked more than once at the wherry in which the young adventurer was

seated, spoke to those around her, and seemed to laugh. At length one

of the attendants, by the Queen's order apparently, made a sign for the

wherry to come alongside, and the young man was desired to step from

his own skiff into the Queen's barge, which he performed with graceful

agility at the fore part of the boat, and was brought aft to the Queen's

presence, the wherry at the same time dropping into the rear. The

youth underwent the gaze of Majesty, not the less gracefully that his

self-possession was mingled with embarrassment. The muddled cloak still

hung upon his arm, and formed the natural topic with which the Queen

introduced the conversation.

"You have this day spoiled a gay mantle in our behalf, young man.

We thank you for your service, though the manner of offering it was

unusual, and something bold."

"In a sovereign's need," answered the youth, "it is each liegeman's duty

to be bold."

"God's pity! that was well said, my lord," said the Queen, turning to

a grave person who sat by her, and answered with a grave inclination

of the head, and something of a mumbled assent.--"Well, young man, your

gallantry shall not go unrewarded. Go to the wardrobe keeper, and he

shall have orders to supply the suit which you have cast away in our

service. Thou shalt have a suit, and that of the newest cut, I promise

thee, on the word of a princess."

"May it please your Grace," said Walter, hesitating, "it is not for so

humble a servant of your Majesty to measure out your bounties; but if it

became me to choose--"

"Thou wouldst have gold, I warrant me," said the Queen, interrupting

him. "Fie, young man! I take shame to say that in our capital such and

so various are the means of thriftless folly, that to give gold to

youth is giving fuel to fire, and furnishing them with the means of

self-destruction. If I live and reign, these means of unchristian excess

shall be abridged. Yet thou mayest be poor," she added, "or thy parents

may be. It shall be gold, if thou wilt, but thou shalt answer to me for

the use on't."

Walter waited patiently until the Queen had done, and then modestly

assured her that gold was still less in his wish than the raiment her

Majesty had before offered.

"How, boy!" said the Queen, "neither gold nor garment? What is it thou

wouldst have of me, then?"

"Only permission, madam--if it is not asking too high an

honour--permission to wear the cloak which did you this trifling

service."

"Permission to wear thine own cloak, thou silly boy!" said the Queen.

"It is no longer mine," said Walter; "when your Majesty's foot touched

it, it became a fit mantle for a prince, but far too rich a one for its

former owner."

The Queen again blushed, and endeavoured to cover, by laughing, a slight

degree of not unpleasing surprise and confusion.

"Heard you ever the like, my lords? The youth's head is turned with

reading romances. I must know something of him, that I may send him safe

to his friends.--What art thou?"

"A gentleman of the household of the Earl of Sussex, so please your

Grace, sent hither with his master of horse upon message to your

Majesty."

In a moment the gracious expression which Elizabeth's face had hitherto

maintained, gave way to an expression of haughtiness and severity.

"My Lord of Sussex," she said, "has taught us how to regard his messages

by the value he places upon ours. We sent but this morning the physician

in ordinary of our chamber, and that at no usual time, understanding his

lordship's illness to be more dangerous than we had before apprehended.

There is at no court in Europe a man more skilled in this holy and most

useful science than Doctor Masters, and he came from Us to our subject.

Nevertheless, he found the gate of Sayes Court defended by men with

culverins, as if it had been on the borders of Scotland, not in the

vicinity of our court; and when he demanded admittance in our name, it

was stubbornly refused. For this slight of a kindness, which had but too

much of condescension in it, we will receive, at present at least, no

excuse; and some such we suppose to have been the purport of my Lord of

Sussex's message."

This was uttered in a tone and with a gesture which made Lord Sussex's

friends who were within hearing tremble. He to whom the speech was

addressed, however, trembled not; but with great deference and humility,

as soon as the Queen's passion gave him an opportunity, he replied, "So

please your most gracious Majesty, I was charged with no apology from

the Earl of Sussex."

"With what were you then charged, sir?" said the Queen, with the

impetuosity which, amid nobler qualities, strongly marked her character.

"Was it with a justification?--or, God's death! with a defiance?"

"Madam," said the young man, "my Lord of Sussex knew the offence

approached towards treason, and could think of nothing save of securing

the offender, and placing him in your Majesty's hands, and at your

mercy. The noble Earl was fast asleep when your most gracious message

reached him, a potion having been administered to that purpose by his

physician; and his Lordship knew not of the ungracious repulse your

Majesty's royal and most comfortable message had received, until after

he awoke this morning."

"And which of his domestics, then, in the name of Heaven, presumed

to reject my message, without even admitting my own physician to

the presence of him whom I sent him to attend?" said the Queen, much

surprised.

"The offender, madam, is before you," replied Walter, bowing very low;

"the full and sole blame is mine; and my lord has most justly sent me

to abye the consequences of a fault, of which he is as innocent as a

sleeping man's dreams can be of a waking man's actions."

"What! was it thou?--thou thyself, that repelled my messenger and my

physician from Sayes Court?" said the Queen. "What could occasion such

boldness in one who seems devoted--that is, whose exterior bearing shows

devotion--to his Sovereign?"

"Madam," said the youth--who, notwithstanding an assumed appearance

of severity, thought that he saw something in the Queen's face that

resembled not implacability--"we say in our country, that the physician

is for the time the liege sovereign of his patient. Now, my noble master

was then under dominion of a leech, by whose advice he hath greatly

profited, who had issued his commands that his patient should not that

night be disturbed, on the very peril of his life."

"Thy master hath trusted some false varlet of an empiric," said the

Queen.

"I know not, madam, but by the fact that he is now--this very

morning--awakened much refreshed and strengthened from the only sleep he

hath had for many hours."

The nobles looked at each other, but more with the purpose to see what

each thought of this news, than to exchange any remarks on what had

happened. The Queen answered hastily, and without affecting to disguise

her satisfaction, "By my word, I am glad he is better. But thou wert

over-bold to deny the access of my Doctor Masters. Knowest thou not the

Holy Writ saith, 'In the multitude of counsel there is safety'?"

"Ay, madam," said Walter; "but I have heard learned men say that the

safety spoken of is for the physicians, not for the patient."

"By my faith, child, thou hast pushed me home," said the Queen,

laughing; "for my Hebrew learning does not come quite at a call.--How

say you, my Lord of Lincoln? Hath the lad given a just interpretation of

the text?"

"The word SAFETY, most gracious madam," said the Bishop of Lincoln, "for

so hath been translated, it may be somewhat hastily, the Hebrew word,

being--"

"My lord," said the Queen, interrupting him, "we said we had forgotten

our Hebrew.--But for thee, young man, what is thy name and birth?"

"Raleigh is my name, most gracious Queen, the youngest son of a large

but honourable family of Devonshire."

"Raleigh?" said Elizabeth, after a moment's recollection. "Have we not

heard of your service in Ireland?"

"I have been so fortunate as to do some service there, madam," replied

Raleigh; "scarce, however, of consequence sufficient to reach your

Grace's ears."

"They hear farther than you think of," said the Queen graciously, "and

have heard of a youth who defended a ford in Shannon against a whole

band of wild Irish rebels, until the stream ran purple with their blood

and his own."

"Some blood I may have lost," said the youth, looking down, "but it was

where my best is due, and that is in your Majesty's service."

The Queen paused, and then said hastily, "You are very young to have

fought so well, and to speak so well. But you must not escape your

penance for turning back Masters. The poor man hath caught cold on the

river for our order reached him when he was just returned from certain

visits in London, and he held it matter of loyalty and conscience

instantly to set forth again. So hark ye, Master Raleigh, see thou fail

not to wear thy muddy cloak, in token of penitence, till our pleasure be

further known. And here," she added, giving him a jewel of gold, in the

form of a chess-man, "I give thee this to wear at the collar."

Raleigh, to whom nature had taught intuitively, as it were, those

courtly arts which many scarce acquire from long experience, knelt, and,

as he took from her hand the jewel, kissed the fingers which gave it.

He knew, perhaps, better than almost any of the courtiers who surrounded

her, how to mingle the devotion claimed by the Queen with the gallantry

due to her personal beauty; and in this, his first attempt to unite

them, he succeeded so well as at once to gratify Elizabeth's personal

vanity and her love of power. [See Note 5. Court favour of Sir Walter

Raleigh.]

His master, the Earl of Sussex, had the full advantage of the

satisfaction which Raleigh had afforded Elizabeth, on their first

interview.

"My lords and ladies," said the Queen, looking around to the retinue by

whom she was attended, "methinks, since we are upon the river, it were

well to renounce our present purpose of going to the city, and surprise

this poor Earl of Sussex with a visit. He is ill, and suffering

doubtless under the fear of our displeasure, from which he hath been

honestly cleared by the frank avowal of this malapert boy. What think

ye? were it not an act of charity to give him such consolation as

the thanks of a Queen, much bound to him for his loyal service, may

perchance best minister?"

It may be readily supposed that none to whom this speech was addressed

ventured to oppose its purport.

"Your Grace," said the Bishop of Lincoln, "is the breath of our

nostrils." The men of war averred that the face of the Sovereign was a

whetstone to the soldier's sword; while the men of state were not less

of opinion that the light of the Queen's countenance was a lamp to the

paths of her councillors; and the ladies agreed, with one voice, that no

noble in England so well deserved the regard of England's Royal Mistress

as the Earl of Sussex--the Earl of Leicester's right being reserved

entire, so some of the more politic worded their assent, an exception

to which Elizabeth paid no apparent attention. The barge had, therefore,

orders to deposit its royal freight at Deptford, at the nearest and most

convenient point of communication with Sayes Court, in order that

the Queen might satisfy her royal and maternal solicitude, by making

personal inquiries after the health of the Earl of Sussex.

Raleigh, whose acute spirit foresaw and anticipated important

consequences from the most trifling events, hastened to ask the Queen's

permission to go in the skiff; and announce the royal visit to his

master; ingeniously suggesting that the joyful surprise might prove

prejudicial to his health, since the richest and most generous cordials

may sometimes be fatal to those who have been long in a languishing

state.

But whether the Queen deemed it too presumptuous in so young a courtier

to interpose his opinion unasked, or whether she was moved by a

recurrence of the feeling of jealousy which had been instilled into her

by reports that the Earl kept armed men about his person, she desired

Raleigh, sharply, to reserve his counsel till it was required of him,

and repeated her former orders to be landed at Deptford, adding, "We

will ourselves see what sort of household my Lord of Sussex keeps about

him."

"Now the Lord have pity on us!" said the young courtier to himself.

"Good hearts, the Earl hath many a one round him; but good heads are

scarce with us--and he himself is too ill to give direction. And Blount

will be at his morning meal of Yarmouth herrings and ale, and Tracy

will have his beastly black puddings and Rhenish; those thorough-paced

Welshmen, Thomas ap Rice and Evan Evans, will be at work on their leek

porridge and toasted cheese;--and she detests, they say, all coarse

meats, evil smells, and strong wines. Could they but think of burning

some rosemary in the great hall! but VOGUE LA GALERE, all must now be

trusted to chance. Luck hath done indifferent well for me this morning;

for I trust I have spoiled a cloak, and made a court fortune. May she do

as much for my gallant patron!"

The royal barge soon stopped at Deptford, and, amid the loud shouts of

the populace, which her presence never failed to excite, the Queen,

with a canopy borne over her head, walked, accompanied by her retinue,

towards Sayes Court, where the distant acclamations of the people gave

the first notice of her arrival. Sussex, who was in the act of advising

with Tressilian how he should make up the supposed breach in the Queen's

favour, was infinitely surprised at learning her immediate approach.

Not that the Queen's custom of visiting her more distinguished nobility,

whether in health or sickness, could be unknown to him; but the

suddenness of the communication left no time for those preparations with

which he well knew Elizabeth loved to be greeted, and the rudeness and

confusion of his military household, much increased by his late illness,

rendered him altogether unprepared for her reception.

Cursing internally the chance which thus brought her gracious visitation

on him unaware, he hastened down with Tressilian, to whose eventful and

interesting story he had just given an attentive ear.

"My worthy friend," he said, "such support as I can give your accusation

of Varney, you have a right to expect, alike from justice and gratitude.

Chance will presently show whether I can do aught with our Sovereign,

or whether, in very deed, my meddling in your affair may not rather

prejudice than serve you."

Thus spoke Sussex while hastily casting around him a loose robe of

sables, and adjusting his person in the best manner he could to meet the

eye of his Sovereign. But no hurried attention bestowed on his apparel

could remove the ghastly effects of long illness on a countenance which

nature had marked with features rather strong than pleasing. Besides, he

was low of stature, and, though broad-shouldered, athletic, and fit for

martial achievements, his presence in a peaceful hall was not such as

ladies love to look upon; a personal disadvantage, which was supposed to

give Sussex, though esteemed and honoured by his Sovereign, considerable

disadvantage when compared with Leicester, who was alike remarkable for

elegance of manners and for beauty of person.

The Earl's utmost dispatch only enabled him to meet the Queen as she

entered the great hall, and he at once perceived there was a cloud

on her brow. Her jealous eye had noticed the martial array of armed

gentlemen and retainers with which the mansion-house was filled, and her

first words expressed her disapprobation. "Is this a royal garrison, my

Lord of Sussex, that it holds so many pikes and calivers? or have we by

accident overshot Sayes Court, and landed at Our Tower of London?"

Lord Sussex hastened to offer some apology.

"It needs not," she said. "My lord, we intend speedily to take up a

certain quarrel between your lordship and another great lord of our

household, and at the same time to reprehend this uncivilized and

dangerous practice of surrounding yourselves with armed, and even with

ruffianly followers, as if, in the neighbourhood of our capital, nay in

the very verge of our royal residence, you were preparing to wage civil

war with each other.--We are glad to see you so well recovered, my lord,

though without the assistance of the learned physician whom we sent

to you. Urge no excuse; we know how that matter fell out, and we have

corrected for it the wild slip, young Raleigh. By the way, my lord, we

will speedily relieve your household of him, and take him into our own.

Something there is about him which merits to be better nurtured than he

is like to be amongst your very military followers."

To this proposal Sussex, though scarce understanding how the Queen

came to make it could only bow and express his acquiescence. He then

entreated her to remain till refreshment could be offered, but in this

he could not prevail. And after a few compliments of a much colder and

more commonplace character than might have been expected from a step so

decidedly favourable as a personal visit, the Queen took her leave

of Sayes Court, having brought confusion thither along with her, and

leaving doubt and apprehension behind.

CHAPTER XVI.

Then call them to our presence. Face to face,

And frowning brow to brow, ourselves will hear

The accuser and accused freely speak;--

High-stomach'd are they both, and full of ire,

In rage deaf as the sea, hasty as fire.--RICHARD II.

"I am ordered to attend court to-morrow," said Leicester, speaking to

Varney, "to meet, as they surmise, my Lord of Sussex. The Queen intends

to take up matters betwixt us. This comes of her visit to Sayes Court,

of which you must needs speak so lightly."

"I maintain it was nothing," said Varney; "nay, I know from a sure

intelligencer, who was within earshot of much that was said, that Sussex

has lost rather than gained by that visit. The Queen said, when she

stepped into the boat, that Sayes Court looked like a guard-house, and

smelt like an hospital. 'Like a cook's shop in Ram's Alley, rather,'

said the Countess of Rutland, who is ever your lordship's good friend.

And then my Lord of Lincoln must needs put in his holy oar, and say

that my Lord of Sussex must be excused for his rude and old-world

housekeeping, since he had as yet no wife."

"And what said the Queen?" asked Leicester hastily.

"She took him up roundly," said Varney, "and asked what my Lord Sussex

had to do with a wife, or my Lord Bishop to speak on such a subject. 'If

marriage is permitted,' she said, 'I nowhere read that it is enjoined.'"

"She likes not marriages, or speech of marriage, among churchmen," said

Leicester.

"Nor among courtiers neither," said Varney; but, observing that

Leicester changed countenance, he instantly added, "that all the ladies

who were present had joined in ridiculing Lord Sussex's housekeeping,

and in contrasting it with the reception her Grace would have assuredly

received at my Lord of Leicester's."

"You have gathered much tidings," said Leicester, "but you have

forgotten or omitted the most important of all. She hath added another

to those dangling satellites whom it is her pleasure to keep revolving

around her."

"Your lordship meaneth that Raleigh, the Devonshire youth," said

Varney--"the Knight of the Cloak, as they call him at court?"

"He may be Knight of the Garter one day, for aught I know," said

Leicester, "for he advances rapidly--she hath capped verses with him,

and such fooleries. I would gladly abandon, of my own free will, the

part--I have in her fickle favour; but I will not be elbowed out of

it by the clown Sussex, or this new upstart. I hear Tressilian is

with Sussex also, and high in his favour. I would spare him for

considerations, but he will thrust himself on his fate. Sussex, too, is

almost as well as ever in his health."

"My lord," replied Varney, "there will be rubs in the smoothest road,

specially when it leads uphill. Sussex's illness was to us a godsend,

from which I hoped much. He has recovered, indeed, but he is not now

more formidable than ere he fell ill, when he received more than one

foil in wrestling with your lordship. Let not your heart fail you, my

lord, and all shall be well."

"My heart never failed me, sir," replied Leicester.

"No, my lord," said Varney; "but it has betrayed you right often. He

that would climb a tree, my lord, must grasp by the branches, not by the

blossom."

"Well, well, well!" said Leicester impatiently; "I understand thy

meaning--my heart shall neither fail me nor seduce me. Have my retinue

in order--see that their array be so splendid as to put down, not only

the rude companions of Ratcliffe, but the retainers of every other

nobleman and courtier. Let them be well armed withal, but without any

outward display of their weapons, wearing them as if more for fashion's

sake than for use. Do thou thyself keep close to me, I may have business

for you."

The preparations of Sussex and his party were not less anxious than

those of Leicester.

"Thy Supplication, impeaching Varney of seduction," said the Earl to

Tressilian, "is by this time in the Queen's hand--I have sent it through

a sure channel. Methinks your suit should succeed, being, as it is,

founded in justice and honour, and Elizabeth being the very muster of

both. But--I wot not how--the gipsy" (so Sussex was wont to call his

rival on account of his dark complexion) "hath much to say with her in

these holyday times of peace. Were war at the gates, I should be one of

her white boys; but soldiers, like their bucklers and Bilboa blades, get

out of fashion in peace time, and satin sleeves and walking rapiers bear

the bell. Well, we must be gay, since such is the fashion.--Blount, hast

thou seen our household put into their new braveries? But thou knowest

as little of these toys as I do; thou wouldst be ready enow at disposing

a stand of pikes."

"My good lord," answered Blount, "Raleigh hath been here, and taken that

charge upon him--your train will glitter like a May morning. Marry, the

cost is another question. One might keep an hospital of old soldiers at

the charge of ten modern lackeys."

"He must not count cost to-day, Nicholas," said the Earl in reply. "I

am beholden to Raleigh for his care. I trust, though, he has remembered

that I am an old soldier, and would have no more of these follies than

needs must."

"Nay, I understand nought about it," said Blount; "but here are your

honourable lordship's brave kinsmen and friends coming in by scores to

wait upon you to court, where, methinks, we shall bear as brave a front

as Leicester, let him ruffle it as he will."

"Give them the strictest charges," said Sussex, "that they suffer no

provocation short of actual violence to provoke them into quarrel. They

have hot bloods, and I would not give Leicester the advantage over me by

any imprudence of theirs."

The Earl of Sussex ran so hastily through these directions, that it was

with difficulty Tressilian at length found opportunity to express his

surprise that he should have proceeded so far in the affair of Sir Hugh

Robsart as to lay his petition at once before the Queen. "It was the

opinion of the young lady's friends," he said, "that Leicester's

sense of justice should be first appealed to, as the offence had been

committed by his officer, and so he had expressly told to Sussex."

"This could have been done without applying to me," said Sussex,

somewhat haughtily. "I at least, ought not to have been a counsellor

when the object was a humiliating reference to Leicester; and I am

suprised that you, Tressilian, a man of honour, and my friend, would

assume such a mean course. If you said so, I certainly understood you

not in a matter which sounded so unlike yourself."

"My lord," said Tressilian, "the course I would prefer, for my own sake,

is that you have adopted; but the friends of this most unhappy lady--"

"Oh, the friends--the friends," said Sussex, interrupting him; "they

must let us manage this cause in the way which seems best. This is the

time and the hour to accumulate every charge against Leicester and his

household, and yours the Queen will hold a heavy one. But at all events

she hath the complaint before her."

Tressilian could not help suspecting that, in his eagerness to

strengthen himself against his rival, Sussex had purposely adopted the

course most likely to throw odium on Leicester, without considering

minutely whether it were the mode of proceeding most likely to be

attended with success. But the step was irrevocable, and Sussex escaped

from further discussing it by dismissing his company, with the command,

"Let all be in order at eleven o'clock; I must be at court and in the

presence by high noon precisely."

While the rival statesmen were thus anxiously preparing for their

approaching meeting in the Queen's presence, even Elizabeth herself was

not without apprehension of what might chance from the collision of

two such fiery spirits, each backed by a strong and numerous body of

followers, and dividing betwixt them, either openly or in secret, the

hopes and wishes of most of her court. The band of Gentlemen Pensioners

were all under arms, and a reinforcement of the yeomen of the guard

was brought down the Thames from London. A royal proclamation was sent

forth, strictly prohibiting nobles of whatever degree to approach the

Palace with retainers or followers armed with shot or with long weapons;

and it was even whispered that the High Sheriff of Kent had secret

instructions to have a part of the array of the county ready on the

shortest notice.

The eventful hour, thus anxiously prepared for on all sides, at length

approached, and, each followed by his long and glittering train of

friends and followers, the rival Earls entered the Palace Yard of

Greenwich at noon precisely.

As if by previous arrangement, or perhaps by intimation that such was

the Queen's pleasure, Sussex and his retinue came to the Palace from

Deptford by water while Leicester arrived by land; and thus they entered

the courtyard from opposite sides. This trifling circumstance gave

Leicester a ascendency in the opinion of the vulgar, the appearance

of his cavalcade of mounted followers showing more numerous and more

imposing than those of Sussex's party, who were necessarily upon foot.

No show or sign of greeting passed between the Earls, though each looked

full at the other, both expecting perhaps an exchange of courtesies,

which neither was willing to commence. Almost in the minute of their

arrival the castle-bell tolled, the gates of the Palace were opened, and

the Earls entered, each numerously attended by such gentlemen of their

train whose rank gave them that privilege. The yeomen and inferior

attendants remained in the courtyard, where the opposite parties eyed

each other with looks of eager hatred and scorn, as if waiting with

impatience for some cause of tumult, or some apology for mutual

aggression. But they were restrained by the strict commands of their

leaders, and overawed, perhaps, by the presence of an armed guard of

unusual strength.

In the meanwhile, the more distinguished persons of each train followed

their patrons into the lofty halls and ante-chambers of the royal

Palace, flowing on in the same current, like two streams which are

compelled into the same channel, yet shun to mix their waters. The

parties arranged themselves, as it were instinctively, on the different

sides of the lofty apartments, and seemed eager to escape from the

transient union which the narrowness of the crowded entrance had for an

instant compelled them to submit to. The folding doors at the upper

end of the long gallery were immediately afterwards opened, and it was

announced in a whisper that the Queen was in her presence-chamber, to

which these gave access. Both Earls moved slowly and stately towards

the entrance--Sussex followed by Tressilian, Blount, and Raleigh, and

Leicester by Varney. The pride of Leicester was obliged to give way to

court-forms, and with a grave and formal inclination of the head, he

paused until his rival, a peer of older creation than his own, passed

before him. Sussex returned the reverence with the same formal civility,

and entered the presence-room. Tressilian and Blount offered to follow

him, but were not permitted, the Usher of the Black Rod alleging in

excuse that he had precise orders to look to all admissions that day. To

Raleigh, who stood back on the repulse of his companions, he said, "You,

sir, may enter," and he entered accordingly.

"Follow me close, Varney," said the Earl of Leicester, who had stood

aloof for a moment to mark the reception of Sussex; and advancing to

the entrance, he was about to pass on, when Varney, who was close behind

him, dressed out in the utmost bravery of the day, was stopped by the

usher, as Tressilian and Blount had been before him, "How is this,

Master Bowyer?" said the Earl of Leicester. "Know you who I am, and that

this is my friend and follower?"

"Your lordship will pardon me," replied Bowyer stoutly; "my orders are

precise, and limit me to a strict discharge of my duty."

"Thou art a partial knave," said Leicester, the blood mounting to his

face, "to do me this dishonour, when you but now admitted a follower of

my Lord of Sussex."

"My lord," said Bowyer, "Master Raleigh is newly admitted a sworn

servant of her Grace, and to him my orders did not apply."

"Thou art a knave--an ungrateful knave," said Leicester; "but he that

hath done can undo--thou shalt not prank thee in thy authority long!"

This threat he uttered aloud, with less than his usual policy and

discretion; and having done so, he entered the presence-chamber, and

made his reverence to the Queen, who, attired with even more than her

usual splendour, and surrounded by those nobles and statesmen whose

courage and wisdom have rendered her reign immortal, stood ready

to receive the hommage of her subjects. She graciously returned the

obeisance of the favourite Earl, and looked alternately at him and at

Sussex, as if about to speak, when Bowyer, a man whose spirit could

not brook the insult he had so openly received from Leicester, in the

discharge of his office, advanced with his black rad in his hand, and

knelt down before her.

"Why, how now, Bowyer?" said Elizabeth, "thy courtesy seems strangely

timed!"

"My Liege Sovereign," he said, while every courtier around trembled

at his audacity, "I come but to ask whether, in the discharge of mine

office, I am to obey your Highness's commands, or those of the Earl of

Leicester, who has publicly menaced me with his displeasure, and

treated me with disparaging terms, because I denied entry to one of his

followers, in obedience to your Grace's precise orders?"

The spirit of Henry VIII. was instantly aroused in the bosom of his

daughter, and she turned on Leicester with a severity which appalled

him, as well as all his followers.

"God's death! my lord." such was her emphatic phrase, "what means this?

We have thought well of you, and brought you near to our person; but it

was not that you might hide the sun from our other faithful subjects.

Who gave you license to contradict our orders, or control our officers?

I will have in this court, ay, and in this realm, but one mistress, and

no master. Look to it that Master Bowyer sustains no harm for his duty

to me faithfully discharged; for, as I am Christian woman and crowned

Queen, I will hold you dearly answerable.--Go, Bowyer, you have done the

part of an honest man and a true subject. We will brook no mayor of the

palace here."

Bowyer kissed the hand which she extended towards him, and withdrew

to his post! astonished at the success of his own audacity. A smile

of triumph pervaded the faction of Sussex; that of Leicester seemed

proportionally dismayed, and the favourite himself, assuming an

aspect of the deepest humility, did not even attempt a word in his own

esculpation.

He acted wisely; for it was the policy of Elizabeth to humble, not to

disgrace him, and it was prudent to suffer her, without opposition or

reply, to glory in the exertion of her authority. The dignity of

the Queen was gratified, and the woman began soon to feel for the

mortification which she had imposed on her favourite. Her keen eye also

observed the secret looks of congratulation exchanged amongst those who

favoured Sussex, and it was no part of her policy to give either party a

decisive triumph.

"What I say to my Lord of Leicester," she said, after a moment's pause,

"I say also to you, my Lord of Sussex. You also must needs ruffle in the

court of England, at the head of a faction of your own?"

"My followers, gracious Princess," said Sussex, "have indeed ruffled in

your cause in Ireland, in Scotland, and against yonder rebellious Earls

in the north. I am ignorant that--"

"Do you bandy looks and words with me, my lord?" said the Queen,

interrupting him; "methinks you might learn of my Lord of Leicester the

modesty to be silent, at least, under our censure. I say, my lord, that

my grandfather and my father, in their wisdom, debarred the nobles of

this civilized land from travelling with such disorderly retinues; and

think you, that because I wear a coif, their sceptre has in my hand been

changed into a distaff? I tell you, no king in Christendom will less

brook his court to be cumbered, his people oppressed, and his kingdom's

peace disturbed, by the arrogance of overgrown power, than she who now

speaks with you.--My Lord of Leicester, and you, my Lord of Sussex, I

command you both to be friends with each other; or by the crown I wear,

you shall find an enemy who will be too strong for both of you!"

"Madam," said the Earl of Leicester, "you who are yourself the fountain

of honour know best what is due to mine. I place it at your disposal,

and only say that the terms on which I have stood with my Lord of Sussex

have not been of my seeking; nor had he cause to think me his enemy,

until he had done me gross wrong."

"For me, madam," said the Earl of Sussex, "I cannot appeal from your

sovereign pleasure; but I were well content my Lord of Leicester should

say in what I have, as he terms it, wronged him, since my tongue never

spoke the word that I would not willingly justify either on foot or

horseback.

"And for me," said Leicester, "always under my gracious Sovereign's

pleasure, my hand shall be as ready to make good my words as that of any

man who ever wrote himself Ratcliffe."

"My lords," said the Queen, "these are no terms for this presence; and

if you cannot keep your temper, we will find means to keep both that and

you close enough. Let me see you join hands, my lords, and forget your

idle animosities."

The two rivals looked at each other with reluctant eyes, each unwilling

to make the first advance to execute the Queen's will.

"Sussex," said Elizabeth, "I entreat--Leicester, I command you."

Yet, so were her words accented, that the entreaty sounded like command,

and the command like entreaty. They remained still and stubborn, until

she raised her voice to a height which argued at once impatience and

absolute command.

"Sir Henry Lee," she said, to an officer in attendance, "have a guard

in present readiness, and man a barge instantly.--My Lords of Sussex and

Leicester, I bid you once more to join hands; and, God's death! he that

refuses shall taste of our Tower fare ere he sees our face again. I will

lower your proud hearts ere we part, and that I promise, on the word of

a Queen!"

"The prison?" said Leicester, "might be borne, but to lose your Grace's

presence were to lose light and life at once.--Here, Sussex, is my

hand."

"And here," said Sussex, "is mine in truth and honesty; but--"

"Nay, under favour, you shall add no more," said the Queen. "Why, this

is as it should be," she added, looking on them more favourably; "and

when you the shepherds of the people, unite to protect them, it shall

be well with the flock we rule over. For, my lords, I tell you plainly,

your follies and your brawls lead to strange disorders among your

servants.--My Lord of Leicester, you have a gentleman in your household

called Varney?"

"Yes, gracious madam," replied Leicester; "I presented him to kiss your

royal hand when you were last at Nonsuch."

"His outside was well enough," said the Queen, "but scarce so fair, I

should have thought, as to have caused a maiden of honourable birth and

hopes to barter her fame for his good looks, and become his paramour.

Yet so it is; this fellow of yours hath seduced the daughter of a good

old Devonshire knight, Sir Hugh Robsart of Lidcote Hall, and she hath

fled with him from her father's house like a castaway.--My Lord of

Leicester, are you ill, that you look so deadly pale?"

"No, gracious madam," said Leicester; and it required every effort he

could make to bring forth these few words.

"You are surely ill, my lord?" said Elizabeth, going towards him with

hasty speech and hurried step, which indicated the deepest concern.

"Call Masters--call our surgeon in ordinary.--Where be these loitering

fools?--we lose the pride of our court through their negligence.--Or

is it possible, Leicester," she continued, looking on him with a very

gentle aspect, "can fear of my displeasure have wrought so deeply on

thee? Doubt not for a moment, noble Dudley, that we could blame THEE

for the folly of thy retainer--thee, whose thoughts we know to be far

otherwise employed. He that would climb the eagle's nest, my lord, cares

not who are catching linnets at the foot of the precipice."

"Mark you that?" said Sussex aside to Raleigh. "The devil aids him

surely; for all that would sink another ten fathom deep seems but to

make him float the more easily. Had a follower of mine acted thus--"

"Peace, my good lord," said Raleigh, "for God's sake, peace! Wait the

change of the tide; it is even now on the turn."

The acute observation of Raleigh, perhaps, did not deceive him; for

Leicester's confusion was so great, and, indeed, for the moment, so

irresistibly overwhelming, that Elizabeth, after looking at him with

a wondering eye, and receiving no intelligible answer to the unusual

expressions of grace and affection which had escaped from her, shot her

quick glance around the circle of courtiers, and reading, perhaps, in

their faces something that accorded with her own awakened suspicions,

she said suddenly, "Or is there more in this than we see--or than you,

my lord, wish that we should see? Where is this Varney? Who saw him?"

"An it please your Grace," said Bowyer, "it is the same against whom I

this instant closed the door of the presence-room."

"An it please me?" repeated Elizabeth sharply, not at that moment in the

humour of being pleased with anything.--"It does NOT please me that he

should pass saucily into my presence, or that you should exclude from it

one who came to justify himself from an accusation."

"May it please you," answered the perplexed usher, "if I knew, in such

case, how to bear myself, I would take heed--"

"You should have reported the fellow's desire to us, Master Usher, and

taken our directions. You think yourself a great man, because but now we

chid a nobleman on your account; yet, after all, we hold you but as the

lead-weight that keeps the door fast. Call this Varney hither instantly.

There is one Tressilian also mentioned in this petition. Let them both

come before us."

She was obeyed, and Tressilian and Varney appeared accordingly. Varney's

first glance was at Leicester, his second at the Queen. In the looks

of the latter there appeared an approaching storm, and in the downcast

countenance of his patron he could read no directions in what way he

was to trim his vessel for the encounter. He then saw Tressilian, and

at once perceived the peril of the situation in which he was placed.

But Varney was as bold-faced and ready-witted as he was cunning and

unscrupulous--a skilful pilot in extremity, and fully conscious of the

advantages which he would obtain could he extricate Leicester from his

present peril, and of the ruin that yawned for himself should he fail in

doing so.

"Is it true, sirrah," said the Queen, with one of those searching looks

which few had the audacity to resist, "that you have seduced to infamy

a young lady of birth and breeding, the daughter of Sir Hugh Robsart of

Lidcote Hall?"

Varney kneeled down, and replied, with a look of the most profound

contrition, "There had been some love passages betwixt him and Mistress

Amy Robsart."

Leicester's flesh quivered with indignation as he heard his dependant

make this avowal, and for one moment he manned himself to step forward,

and, bidding farewell to the court and the royal favour, confess the

whole mystery of the secret marriage. But he looked at Sussex, and the

idea of the triumphant smile which would clothe his cheek upon hearing

the avowal sealed his lips. "Not now, at least," he thought, "or in this

presence, will I afford him so rich a triumph." And pressing his lips

close together, he stood firm and collected, attentive to each word

which Varney uttered, and determined to hide to the last the secret on

which his court-favour seemed to depend. Meanwhile, the Queen proceeded

in her examination of Varney.

"Love passages!" said she, echoing his last words; "what passages, thou

knave? and why not ask the wench's hand from her father, if thou hadst

any honesty in thy love for her?"

"An it please your Grace," said Varney, still on his knees, "I dared not

do so, for her father had promised her hand to a gentleman of birth and

honour--I will do him justice, though I know he bears me ill-will--one

Master Edmund Tressilian, whom I now see in the presence."

"Soh!" replied the Queen. "And what was your right to make the simple

fool break her worthy father's contract, through your love PASSAGES, as

your conceit and assurance terms them?"

"Madam," replied Varney, "it is in vain to plead the cause of human

frailty before a judge to whom it is unknown, or that of love to one who

never yields to the passion"--he paused an instant, and then added, in a

very low and timid tone--"which she inflicts upon all others."

Elizabeth tried to frown, but smiled in her own despite, as she

answered, "Thou art a marvellously impudent knave. Art thou married to

the girl?"

Leicester's feelings became so complicated and so painfully intense,

that it seemed to him as if his life was to depend on the answer made by

Varney, who, after a moment's real hesitation, answered, "Yes."

"Thou false villain!" said Leicester, bursting forth into rage, yet

unable to add another word to the sentence which he had begun with such

emphatic passion.

"Nay, my lord," said the Queen, "we will, by your leave, stand between

this fellow and your anger. We have not yet done with him.--Knew your

master, my Lord of Leicester, of this fair work of yours? Speak truth, I

command thee, and I will be thy warrant from danger on every quarter."

"Gracious madam," said Varney, "to speak Heaven's truth, my lord was the

cause of the whole matter."

"Thou villain, wouldst thou betray me?" said Leicester.

"Speak on," said the Queen hastily, her cheek colouring, and her eyes

sparkling, as she addressed Varney--"speak on. Here no commands are

heard but mine."

"They are omnipotent, gracious madam," replied Varney; "and to you there

can be no secrets.--Yet I would not," he added, looking around him,

"speak of my master's concerns to other ears."

"Fall back, my lords," said the Queen to those who surrounded her, "and

do you speak on. What hath the Earl to do with this guilty intrigue of

thine? See, fellow, that thou beliest him not!"

"Far be it from me to traduce my noble patron," replied Varney; "yet

I am compelled to own that some deep, overwhelming, yet secret feeling

hath of late dwelt in my lord's mind, hath abstracted him from the

cares of the household which he was wont to govern with such religious

strictness, and hath left us opportunities to do follies, of which the

shame, as in this case, partly falls upon our patron. Without this, I

had not had means or leisure to commit the folly which has drawn on me

his displeasure--the heaviest to endure by me which I could by any means

incur, saving always the yet more dreaded resentment of your Grace."

"And in this sense, and no other, hath he been accessory to thy fault?"

said Elizabeth.

"Surely, madam, in no other," replied Varney; "but since somewhat hath

chanced to him, he can scarce be called his own man. Look at him,

madam, how pale and trembling he stands! how unlike his usual majesty of

manner!--yet what has he to fear from aught I can say to your Highness?

Ah! madam, since he received that fatal packet!"

"What packet, and from whence?" said the Queen eagerly.

"From whence, madam, I cannot guess; but I am so near to his person that

I know he has ever since worn, suspended around his neck and next to his

heart, that lock of hair which sustains a small golden jewel shaped

like a heart. He speaks to it when alone--he parts not from it when he

sleeps--no heathen ever worshipped an idol with such devotion."

"Thou art a prying knave to watch thy master so closely," said

Elizabeth, blushing, but not with anger; "and a tattling knave to tell

over again his fooleries.--What colour might the braid of hair be that

thou pratest of?"

Varney replied, "A poet, madam, might call it a thread from the golden

web wrought by Minerva; but to my thinking it was paler than even the

purest gold--more like the last parting sunbeam of the softest day of

spring."

"Why, you are a poet yourself, Master Varney," said the Queen, smiling.

"But I have not genius quick enough to follow your rare metaphors. Look

round these ladies--is there"--(she hesitated, and endeavoured to assume

an air of great indifference)--"is there here, in this presence, any

lady, the colour of whose hair reminds thee of that braid? Methinks,

without prying into my Lord of Leicester's amorous secrets, I would

fain know what kind of locks are like the thread of Minerva's web, or

the--what was it?--the last rays of the May-day sun."

Varney looked round the presence-chamber, his eye travelling from one

lady to another, until at length it rested upon the Queen herself, but

with an aspect of the deepest veneration. "I see no tresses," he said,

"in this presence, worthy of such similies, unless where I dare not look

on them."

"How, sir knave?" said the Queen; "dare you intimate--"

"Nay, madam," replied Varney, shading his eyes with his hand, "it was

the beams of the May-day sun that dazzled my weak eyes."

"Go to--go to," said the Queen; "thou art a foolish fellow"--and turning

quickly from him she walked up to Leicester.

Intense curiosity, mingled with all the various hopes, fears,

and passions which influence court faction, had occupied the

presence-chamber during the Queen's conference with Varney, as if with

the strength of an Eastern talisman. Men suspended every, even the

slightest external motion, and would have ceased to breathe, had Nature

permitted such an intermission of her functions. The atmosphere was

contagious, and Leicester, who saw all around wishing or fearing his

advancement or his fall forgot all that love had previously dictated,

and saw nothing for the instant but the favour or disgrace which

depended on the nod of Elizabeth and the fidelity of Varney. He summoned

himself hastily, and prepared to play his part in the scene which was

like to ensue, when, as he judged from the glances which the Queen threw

towards him, Varney's communications, be they what they might, were

operating in his favour. Elizabeth did not long leave him in doubt; for

the more than favour with which she accosted him decided his triumph in

the eyes of his rival, and of the assembled court of England. "Thou hast

a prating servant of this same Varney, my lord," she said; "it is lucky

you trust him with nothing that can hurt you in our opinion, for believe

me, he would keep no counsel."

"From your Highness," said Leicester, dropping gracefully on one knee,

"it were treason he should. I would that my heart itself lay before you,

barer than the tongue of any servant could strip it."

"What, my lord," said Elizabeth, looking kindly upon him, "is there no

one little corner over which you would wish to spread a veil? Ah! I see

you are confused at the question, and your Queen knows she should not

look too deeply into her servants' motives for their faithful duty, lest

she see what might, or at least ought to, displease her."

Relieved by these last words, Leicester broke out into a torrent of

expressions of deep and passionate attachment, which perhaps, at that

moment, were not altogether fictitious. The mingled emotions which had

at first overcome him had now given way to the energetic vigour with

which he had determined to support his place in the Queen's favour;

and never did he seem to Elizabeth more eloquent, more handsome, more

interesting, than while, kneeling at her feet, he conjured her to strip

him of all his dower, but to leave him the name of her servant.--"Take

from the poor Dudley," he exclaimed, "all that your bounty has made him,

and bid him be the poor gentleman he was when your Grace first shone on

him; leave him no more than his cloak and his sword, but let him still

boast he has--what in word or deed he never forfeited--the regard of his

adored Queen and mistress!"

"No, Dudley!" said Elizabeth, raising him with one hand, while she

extended the other that he might kiss it. "Elizabeth hath not forgotten

that, whilst you were a poor gentleman, despoiled of your hereditary

rank, she was as poor a princess, and that in her cause you then

ventured all that oppression had left you--your life and honour. Rise,

my lord, and let my hand go--rise, and be what you have ever been, the

grace of our court and the support of our throne! Your mistress may

be forced to chide your misdemeanours, but never without owning your

merits.--And so help me God," she added, turning to the audience, who,

with various feelings, witnessed this interesting scene--"so help me

God, gentlemen, as I think never sovereign had a truer servant than I

have in this noble Earl!"

A murmur of assent rose from the Leicestrian faction, which the friends

of Sussex dared not oppose. They remained with their eyes fixed on the

ground, dismayed as well as mortified by the public and absolute triumph

of their opponents. Leicester's first use of the familiarity to

which the Queen had so publicly restored him was to ask her commands

concerning Varney's offence, "although," he said, "the fellow deserves

nothing from me but displeasure, yet, might I presume to intercede--"

"In truth, we had forgotten his matter," said the Queen; "and it was

ill done of us, who owe justice to our meanest as well as to our highest

subject. We are pleased, my lord, that you were the first to recall the

matter to our memory.--Where is Tressilian, the accuser?--let him come

before us."

Tressilian appeared, and made a low and beseeming reference. His

person, as we have elsewhere observed, had an air of grace and even of

nobleness, which did not escape Queen Elizabeth's critical observation.

She looked at him with, attention as he stood before her unabashed, but

with an air of the deepest dejection.

"I cannot but grieve for this gentleman," she said to Leicester. "I have

inquired concerning him, and his presence confirms what I heard, that he

is a scholar and a soldier, well accomplished both in arts and arms. We

women, my lord, are fanciful in our choice--I had said now, to judge by

the eye, there was no comparison to be held betwixt your follower and

this gentleman. But Varney is a well-spoken fellow, and, to say truth,

that goes far with us of the weaker sex.--look you, Master Tressilian, a

bolt lost is not a bow broken. Your true affection, as I will hold it to

be, hath been, it seems, but ill requited; but you have scholarship, and

you know there have been false Cressidas to be found, from the Trojan

war downwards. Forget, good sir, this Lady Light o' Love--teach your

affection to see with a wiser eye. This we say to you, more from the

writings of learned men than our own knowledge, being, as we are, far

removed by station and will from the enlargement of experience in such

idle toys of humorous passion. For this dame's father, we can make his

grief the less by advancing his son-in-law to such station as may

enable him to give an honourable support to his bride. Thou shalt not be

forgotten thyself, Tressilian--follow our court, and thou shalt see

that a true Troilus hath some claim on our grace. Think of what that

arch-knave Shakespeare says--a plague on him, his toys come into my head

when I should think of other matters. Stay, how goes it?

'Cressid was yours, tied with the bonds of heaven;

These bonds of heaven are slipt, dissolved, and loosed,

And with another knot five fingers tied,

The fragments of her faith are bound to Diomed.'

You smile, my Lord of Southampton--perchance I make your player's verse

halt through my bad memory. But let it suffice let there be no more of

this mad matter."

And as Tressilian kept the posture of one who would willingly be heard,

though, at the same time, expressive of the deepest reverence, the Queen

added with some impatience, "What would the man have? The wench

cannot wed both of you? She has made her election--not a wise one

perchance--but she is Varney's wedded wife."

"My suit should sleep there, most gracious Sovereign," said Tressilian,

"and with my suit my revenge. But I hold this Varney's word no good

warrant for the truth."

"Had that doubt been elsewhere urged," answered Varney, "my sword--"

"THY sword!" interrupted Tressilian scornfully; "with her Grace's leave,

my sword shall show--"

"Peace, you knaves, both!" said the Queen; "know you where you

are?--This comes of your feuds, my lords," she added, looking towards

Leicester and Sussex; "your followers catch your own humour, and must

bandy and brawl in my court and in my very presence, like so many

Matamoros.--Look you, sirs, he that speaks of drawing swords in any

other quarrel than mine or England's, by mine honour, I'll bracelet

him with iron both on wrist and ankle!" She then paused a minute,

and resumed in a milder tone, "I must do justice betwixt the bold and

mutinous knaves notwithstanding.--My Lord of Leicester, will you warrant

with your honour--that is, to the best of your belief--that your servant

speaks truth in saying he hath married this Amy Robsart?"

This was a home-thrust, and had nearly staggered Leicester. But he had

now gone too far to recede, and answered, after a moment's hesitation,

"To the best of my belief--indeed on my certain knowledge--she is a

wedded wife."

"Gracious madam," said Tressilian, "may I yet request to know, when and

under what circumstances this alleged marriage--"

"Out, sirrah," answered the Queen; "ALLEGED marriage! Have you not the

word of this illustrious Earl to warrant the truth of what his servant

says? But thou art a loser--thinkest thyself such at least--and thou

shalt have indulgence; we will look into the matter ourself more at

leisure.--My Lord of Leicester, I trust you remember we mean to taste

the good cheer of your Castle of Kenilworth on this week ensuing. We

will pray you to bid our good and valued friend, the Earl of Sussex, to

hold company with us there."

"If the noble Earl of Sussex," said Leicester, bowing to his rival with

the easiest and with the most graceful courtesy, "will so far honour my

poor house, I will hold it an additional proof of the amicable regard it

is your Grace's desire we should entertain towards each other."

Sussex was more embarrassed. "I should," said he, "madam, be but a clog

on your gayer hours, since my late severe illness."

"And have you been indeed so very ill?" said Elizabeth, looking on him

with more attention than before; "you are, in faith, strangely altered,

and deeply am I grieved to see it. But be of good cheer--we will

ourselves look after the health of so valued a servant, and to whom we

owe so much. Masters shall order your diet; and that we ourselves

may see that he is obeyed, you must attend us in this progress to

Kenilworth."

This was said so peremptorily, and at the same time with so much

kindness, that Sussex, however unwilling to become the guest of his

rival, had no resource but to bow low to the Queen in obedience to

her commands, and to express to Leicester, with blunt courtesy, though

mingled with embarrassment, his acceptance of his invitation. As the

Earls exchanged compliments on the occasion, the Queen said to her High

Treasurer, "Methinks, my lord, the countenances of these our two noble

peers resemble those of the two famed classic streams, the one so dark

and sad, the other so fair and noble. My old Master Ascham would have

chid me for forgetting the author. It is Caesar, as I think. See what

majestic calmness sits on the brow of the noble Leicester, while Sussex

seems to greet him as if he did our will indeed, but not willingly."

"The doubt of your Majesty's favour," answered the Lord Treasurer, "may

perchance occasion the difference, which does not--as what does?--escape

your Grace's eye."

"Such doubt were injurious to us, my lord," replied the Queen. "We hold

both to be near and dear to us, and will with impartiality employ both

in honourable service for the weal of our kingdom. But we will break

their further conference at present.--My Lords of Sussex and Leicester,

we have a word more with you. 'Tressilian and Varney are near your

persons--you will see that they attend you at Kenilworth. And as we

shall then have both Paris and Menelaus within our call, so we will

have the same fair Helen also, whose fickleness has caused this

broil.--Varney, thy wife must be at Kenilworth, and forthcoming at my

order.--My Lord of Leicester, we expect you will look to this."

The Earl and his follower bowed low and raised their heads, without

daring to look at the Queen, or at each other, for both felt at the

instant as if the nets and toils which their own falsehood had woven

were in the act of closing around them. The Queen, however, observed

not their confusion, but proceeded to say, "My Lords of Sussex and

Leicester, we require your presence at the privy-council to be presently

held, where matters of importance are to be debated. We will then take

the water for our divertisement, and you, my lords, will attend us.--And

that reminds us of a circumstance.--Do you, Sir Squire of the Soiled

Cassock" (distinguishing Raleigh by a smile), "fail not to observe

that you are to attend us on our progress. You shall be supplied with

suitable means to reform your wardrobe."

And so terminated this celebrated audience, in which, as throughout her

life, Elizabeth united the occasional caprice of her sex with that sense

and sound policy in which neither man nor woman ever excelled her.

CHAPTER XVII.

Well, then--our course is chosen--spread the sail--

Heave oft the lead, and mark the soundings well--

Look to the helm, good master--many a shoal

Marks this stern coast, and rocks, where sits the Siren,

Who, like ambition, lures men to their ruin.--THE SHIPWRECK.

During the brief interval that took place betwixt the dismissal of the

audience and the sitting of the privy-council, Leicester had time to

reflect that he had that morning sealed his own fate. "It was impossible

for him now," he thought, "after having, in the face of all that was

honourable in England, pledged his truth (though in an ambiguous phrase)

for the statement of Varney, to contradict or disavow it, without

exposing himself, not merely to the loss of court-favour, but to the

highest displeasure of the Queen, his deceived mistress, and to the

scorn and contempt at once of his rival and of all his compeers." This

certainty rushed at once on his mind, together with all the difficulties

which he would necessarily be exposed to in preserving a secret which

seemed now equally essential to his safety, to his power, and to his

honour. He was situated like one who walks upon ice ready to give way

around him, and whose only safety consists in moving onwards, by firm

and unvacillating steps. The Queen's favour, to preserve which he

had made such sacrifices, must now be secured by all means and at all

hazards; it was the only plank which he could cling to in the tempest.

He must settle himself, therefore, to the task of not only preserving,

but augmenting the Queen's partiality--he must be the favourite of

Elizabeth, or a man utterly shipwrecked in fortune and in honour. All

other considerations must be laid aside for the moment, and he repelled

the intrusive thoughts which forced on his mind the image of, Amy, by

saying to himself there would be time to think hereafter how he was to

escape from the labyrinth ultimately, since the pilot who sees a Scylla

under his bows must not for the time think of the more distant dangers

of Charybdis.

In this mood the Earl of Leicester that day assumed his chair at the

council table of Elizabeth; and when the hours of business were over,

in this same mood did he occupy an honoured place near her during her

pleasure excursion on the Thames. And never did he display to more

advantage his powers as a politician of the first rank, or his parts as

an accomplished courtier.

It chanced that in that day's council matters were agitated touching the

affairs of the unfortunate Mary, the seventh year of whose captivity in

England was now in doleful currency. There had been opinions in favour

of this unhappy princess laid before Elizabeth's council, and supported

with much strength of argument by Sussex and others, who dwelt more upon

the law of nations and the breach of hospitality than, however softened

or qualified, was agreeable to the Queen's ear. Leicester adopted the

contrary opinion with great animation and eloquence, and described the

necessity of continuing the severe restraint of the Queen of Scots, as

a measure essential to the safety of the kingdom, and particularly

of Elizabeth's sacred person, the lightest hair of whose head, he

maintained, ought, in their lordships' estimation, to be matter of more

deep and anxious concern than the life and fortunes of a rival, who,

after setting up a vain and unjust pretence to the throne of England,

was now, even while in the bosom of her country, the constant hope and

theme of encouragement to all enemies to Elizabeth, whether at home or

abroad. He ended by craving pardon of their lordships, if in the zeal

of speech he had given any offence, but the Queen's safety was a theme

which hurried him beyond his usual moderation of debate.

Elizabeth chid him, but not severely, for the weight which he attached

unduly to her personal interests; yet she owned that, since it had been

the pleasure of Heaven to combine those interests with the weal of

her subjects, she did only her duty when she adopted such measures of

self-preservation as circumstances forced upon her; and if the council

in their wisdom should be of opinion that it was needful to continue

some restraint on the person of her unhappy sister of Scotland, she

trusted they would not blame her if she requested of the Countess of

Shrewsbury to use her with as much kindness as might be consistent with

her safe keeping. And with this intimation of her pleasure the council

was dismissed.

Never was more anxious and ready way made for "my Lord of Leicester,"

than as he passed through the crowded anterooms to go towards the

river-side, in order to attend her Majesty to her barge--never was

the voice of the ushers louder, to "make room, make room for the

noble Earl"--never were these signals more promptly and reverently

obeyed--never were more anxious eyes turned on him to obtain a glance

of favour, or even of mere recognition, while the heart of many a humble

follower throbbed betwixt the desire to offer his congratulations, and

the fear of intruding himself on the notice of one so infinitely above

him. The whole court considered the issue of this day's audience,

expected with so much doubt and anxiety, as a decisive triumph on the

part of Leicester, and felt assured that the orb of his rival satellite,

if not altogether obscured by his lustre, must revolve hereafter in a

dimmer and more distant sphere. So thought the court and courtiers, from

high to low; and they acted accordingly.

On the other hand, never did Leicester return the general greeting with

such ready and condescending courtesy, or endeavour more successfully

to gather (in the words of one who at that moment stood at no great

distance from him) "golden opinions from all sorts of men."

For all the favourite Earl had a bow a smile at least, and often a kind

word. Most of these were addressed to courtiers, whose names have long

gone down the tide of oblivion; but some, to such as sound strangely in

our ears, when connected with the ordinary matters of human life,

above which the gratitude of posterity has long elevated them. A few of

Leicester's interlocutory sentences ran as follows:--

"Poynings, good morrow; and how does your wife and fair daughter? Why

come they not to court?--Adams, your suit is naught; the Queen will

grant no more monopolies. But I may serve you in another matter.--My

good Alderman Aylford, the suit of the City, affecting Queenhithe,

shall be forwarded as far as my poor interest can serve.--Master Edmund

Spenser, touching your Irish petition, I would willingly aid you, from

my love to the Muses; but thou hast nettled the Lord Treasurer."

"My lord," said the poet, "were I permitted to explain--"

"Come to my lodging, Edmund," answered the Earl "not to-morrow, or next

day, but soon.--Ha, Will Shakespeare--wild Will!--thou hast given my

nephew Philip Sidney, love-powder; he cannot sleep without thy Venus and

Adonis under his pillow! We will have thee hanged for the veriest wizard

in Europe. Hark thee, mad wag, I have not forgotten thy matter of the

patent, and of the bears."

The PLAYER bowed, and the Earl nodded and passed on--so that age would

have told the tale; in ours, perhaps, we might say the immortal had done

homage to the mortal. The next whom the favourite accosted was one of

his own zealous dependants.

"How now, Sir Francis Denning," he whispered, in answer to his exulting

salutation, "that smile hath made thy face shorter by one-third than

when I first saw it this morning.--What, Master Bowyer, stand you back,

and think you I bear malice? You did but your duty this morning; and if

I remember aught of the passage betwixt us, it shall be in thy favour."

Then the Earl was approached, with several fantastic congees, by a

person quaintly dressed in a doublet of black velvet, curiously slashed

and pinked with crimson satin. A long cock's feather in the velvet

bonnet, which he held in his hand, and an enormous ruff; stiffened to

the extremity of the absurd taste of the times, joined with a sharp,

lively, conceited expression of countenance, seemed to body forth a

vain, harebrained coxcomb, and small wit; while the rod he held, and

an assumption of formal authority, appeared to express some sense

of official consequence, which qualified the natural pertness of his

manner. A perpetual blush, which occupied rather the sharp nose than the

thin cheek of this personage, seemed to speak more of "good life," as

it was called, than of modesty; and the manner in which he approached to

the Earl confirmed that suspicion.

"Good even to you, Master Robert Laneham," said Leicester, and seemed

desirous to pass forward, without further speech.

"I have a suit to your noble lordship," said the figure, boldly

following him.

"And what is it, good master keeper of the council-chamber door?"

"CLERK of the council-chamber door," said Master Robert Laneham, with

emphasis, by way of reply, and of correction.

"Well, qualify thine office as thou wilt, man," replied the Earl; "what

wouldst thou have with me?"

"Simply," answered Laneham, "that your lordship would be, as heretofore,

my good lord, and procure me license to attend the Summer Progress

unto your lordship's most beautiful and all-to-be-unmatched Castle of

Kenilworth."

"To what purpose, good Master Laneham?" replied the Earl; "bethink you,

my guests must needs be many."

"Not so many," replied the petitioner, "but that your nobleness will

willingly spare your old servitor his crib and his mess. Bethink you,

my lord, how necessary is this rod of mine to fright away all those

listeners, who else would play at bo-peep with the honourable council,

and be searching for keyholes and crannies in the door of the chamber,

so as to render my staff as needful as a fly-flap in a butcher's shop."

"Methinks you have found out a fly-blown comparison for the honourable

council, Master Laneham," said the Earl; "but seek not about to justify

it. Come to Kenilworth, if you list; there will be store of fools there

besides, and so you will be fitted."

"Nay, an there be fools, my lord," replied Laneham, with much glee, "I

warrant I will make sport among them, for no greyhound loves to cote a

hare as I to turn and course a fool. But I have another singular favour

to beseech of your honour."

"Speak it, and let me go," said the Earl; "I think the Queen comes forth

instantly."

"My very good lord, I would fain bring a bed-fellow with me."

"How, you irreverent rascal!" said Leicester.

"Nay, my lord, my meaning is within the canons," answered his

unblushing, or rather his ever-blushing petitioner. "I have a wife as

curious as her grandmother who ate the apple. Now, take her with me

I may not, her Highness's orders being so strict against the officers

bringing with them their wives in a progress, and so lumbering the court

with womankind. But what I would crave of your lordship is to find room

for her in some mummery, or pretty pageant, in disguise, as it were; so

that, not being known for my wife, there may be no offence."

"The foul fiend seize ye both!" said Leicester, stung into

uncontrollable passion by the recollections which this speech

excited--"why stop you me with such follies?"

The terrified clerk of the chamber-door, astonished at the burst of

resentment he had so unconsciously produced, dropped his staff of office

from his hand, and gazed on the incensed Earl with a foolish face of

wonder and terror, which instantly recalled Leicester to himself.

"I meant but to try if thou hadst the audacity which befits thine

office," said he hastily. "Come to Kenilworth, and bring the devil with

thee, if thou wilt."

"My wife, sir, hath played the devil ere now, in a Mystery, in Queen

Mary's time; but me shall want a trifle for properties."

"Here is a crown for thee," said the Earl,--"make me rid of thee--the

great bell rings."

Master Robert Laneham stared a moment at the agitation which he had

excited, and then said to himself, as he stooped to pick up his staff

of office, "The noble Earl runs wild humours to-day. But they who give

crowns expect us witty fellows to wink at their unsettled starts; and,

by my faith, if they paid not for mercy, we would finger them tightly!"

[See Note 6. Robert Laneham.]

Leicester moved hastily on, neglecting the courtesies he had hitherto

dispensed so liberally, and hurrying through the courtly crowd, until

he paused in a small withdrawing-room, into which he plunged to draw a

moment's breath unobserved, and in seclusion.

"What am I now," he said to himself, "that am thus jaded by the words

of a mean, weather-beaten, goose-brained gull! Conscience, thou art a

bloodhound, whose growl wakes us readily at the paltry stir of a rat

or mouse as at the step of a lion. Can I not quit myself, by one

bold stroke, of a state so irksome, so unhonoured? What if I kneel to

Elizabeth, and, owning the whole, throw myself on her mercy?"

As he pursued this train of thought, the door of the apartment opened,

and Varney rushed in.

"Thank God, my lord, that I have found you!" was his exclamation.

"Thank the devil, whose agent thou art," was the Earl's reply.

"Thank whom you will, my lord," replied Varney; "but hasten to the

water-side. The Queen is on board, and asks for you."

"Go, say I am taken suddenly ill," replied Leicester; "for, by Heaven,

my brain can sustain this no longer!"

"I may well say so," said Varney, with bitterness of expression, "for

your place, ay, and mine, who, as your master of the horse, was to have

attended your lordship, is already filled up in the Queen's barge. The

new minion, Walter Raleigh, and our old acquaintance Tressilian were

called for to fill our places just as I hastened away to seek you."

"Thou art a devil, Varney," said Leicester hastily; "but thou hast the

mastery for the present--I follow thee."

Varney replied not, but led the way out of the palace, and towards the

river, while his master followed him, as if mechanically; until, looking

back, he said in a tone which savoured of familiarity at least, if not

of authority, "How is this, my lord? Your cloak hangs on one side--your

hose are unbraced--permit me--"

"Thou art a fool, Varney, as well as a knave," said Leicester, shaking

him off, and rejecting his officious assistance. "We are best thus, sir;

when we require you to order our person, it is well, but now we want you

not."

So saying, the Earl resumed at once his air of command, and with it his

self-possession--shook his dress into yet wilder disorder--passed before

Varney with the air of a superior and master, and in his turn led the

way to the river-side.

The Queen's barge was on the very point of putting off, the seat

allotted to Leicester in the stern, and that to his master of the horse

on the bow of the boat, being already filled up. But on Leicester's

approach there was a pause, as if the bargemen anticipated some

alteration in their company. The angry spot was, however, on the Queen's

cheek, as, in that cold tone with which superiors endeavour to veil

their internal agitation, while speaking to those before whom it would

be derogation to express it, she pronounced the chilling words, "We have

waited, my Lord of Leicester."

"Madam, and most gracious Princess," said Leicester, "you, who can

pardon so many weaknesses which your own heart never knows, can best

bestow your commiseration on the agitations of the bosom, which, for a

moment, affect both head and limbs. I came to your presence a doubting

and an accused subject; your goodness penetrated the clouds of

defamation, and restored me to my honour, and, what is yet dearer, to

your favour--is it wonderful, though for me it is most unhappy, that

my master of the horse should have found me in a state which scarce

permitted me to make the exertion necessary to follow him to this place,

when one glance of your Highness, although, alas! an angry one, has had

power to do that for me in which Esculapius might have failed?"

"How is this?" said Elizabeth hastily, looking at Varney; "hath your

lord been ill?"

"Something of a fainting fit," answered the ready-witted Varney, "as

your Grace may observe from his present condition. My lord's haste would

not permit me leisure even to bring his dress into order."

"It matters not," said Elizabeth, as she gazed on the noble face and

form of Leicester, to which even the strange mixture of passions by

which he had been so lately agitated gave additional interest; "make

room for my noble lord. Your place, Master Varney, has been filled up;

you must find a seat in another barge."

Varney bowed, and withdrew.

"And you, too, our young Squire of the Cloak," added she, looking at

Raleigh, "must, for the time, go to the barge of our ladies of honour.

As for Tressilian, he hath already suffered too much by the caprice of

women that I should aggrieve him by my change of plan, so far as he is

concerned."

Leicester seated himself in his place in the barge, and close to the

Sovereign. Raleigh rose to retire, and Tressilian would have been so

ill-timed in his courtesy as to offer to relinquish his own place to his

friend, had not the acute glance of Raleigh himself, who seemed no in

his native element, made him sensible that so ready a disclamation of

the royal favour might be misinterpreted. He sat silent, therefore,

whilst Raleigh, with a profound bow, and a look of the deepest

humiliation, was about to quit his place.

A noble courtier, the gallant Lord Willoughby, read, as he thought,

something in the Queen's face which seemed to pity Raleigh's real or

assumed semblance of mortification.

"It is not for us old courtiers," he said, "to hide the sunshine from

the young ones. I will, with her Majesty's leave, relinquish for an

hour that which her subjects hold dearest, the delight of her Highness's

presence, and mortify myself by walking in starlight, while I forsake

for a brief season the glory of Diana's own beams. I will take place

in the boat which the ladies occupy, and permit this young cavalier his

hour of promised felicity."

The Queen replied, with an expression betwixt mirth and earnest, "If you

are so willing to leave us, my lord, we cannot help the mortification.

But, under favour, we do not trust you--old and experienced as you

may deem yourself--with the care of our young ladies of honour. Your

venerable age, my lord," she continued, smiling, "may be better assorted

with that of my Lord Treasurer, who follows in the third boat, and by

whose experience even my Lord Willoughby's may be improved."

Lord Willoughby hid his disappointment under a smile--laughed, was

confused, bowed, and left the Queen's barge to go on board my Lord

Burleigh's. Leicester, who endeavoured to divert his thoughts from all

internal reflection, by fixing them on what was passing around, watched

this circumstance among others. But when the boat put off from the

shore--when the music sounded from a barge which accompanied them--when

the shouts of the populace were heard from the shore, and all reminded

him of the situation in which he was placed, he abstracted his thoughts

and feelings by a strong effort from everything but the necessity of

maintaining himself in the favour of his patroness, and exerted his

talents of pleasing captivation with such success, that the Queen,

alternately delighted with his conversation, and alarmed for his health,

at length imposed a temporary silence on him, with playful yet anxious

care, lest his flow of spirits should exhaust him.

"My lords," she said, "having passed for a time our edict of silence

upon our good Leicester, we will call you to counsel on a gamesome

matter, more fitted to be now treated of, amidst mirth and music, than

in the gravity of our ordinary deliberations. Which of you, my lords,"

said she, smiling, "know aught of a petition from Orson Pinnit,

the keeper, as he qualifies himself, of our royal bears? Who stands

godfather to his request?"

"Marry, with Your Grace's good permission, that do I," said the Earl of

Sussex. "Orson Pinnit was a stout soldier before he was so mangled by

the skenes of the Irish clan MacDonough; and I trust your Grace will

be, as you always have been, good mistress to your good and trusty

servants."

"Surely," said the Queen, "it is our purpose to be so, and in especial

to our poor soldiers and sailors, who hazard their lives for little pay.

We would give," she said, with her eyes sparkling, "yonder royal palace

of ours to be an hospital for their use, rather than they should call

their mistress ungrateful. But this is not the question," she said,

her voice, which had been awakened by her patriotic feelings, once more

subsiding into the tone of gay and easy conversation; "for this Orson

Pinnit's request goes something further. He complains that, amidst the

extreme delight with which men haunt the play-houses, and in especial

their eager desire for seeing the exhibitions of one Will Shakespeare

(whom I think, my lords, we have all heard something of), the manly

amusement of bear-baiting is falling into comparative neglect, since men

will rather throng to see these roguish players kill each other in

jest, than to see our royal dogs and bears worry each other in bloody

earnest.--What say you to this, my Lord of Sussex?"

"Why, truly, gracious madam," said Sussex, "you must expect little from

an old soldier like me in favour of battles in sport, when they are

compared with battles in earnest; and yet, by my faith, I wish Will

Shakespeare no harm. He is a stout man at quarter-staff, and single

falchion, though, as I am told, a halting fellow; and he stood, they

say, a tough fight with the rangers of old Sir Thomas Lucy of Charlecot,

when he broke his deer-park and kissed his keeper's daughter."

"I cry you mercy, my Lord of Sussex," said Queen Elizabeth, interrupting

him; "that matter was heard in council, and we will not have this

fellow's offence exaggerated--there was no kissing in the matter, and

the defendant hath put the denial on record. But what say you to his

present practice, my lord, on the stage? for there lies the point, and

not in any ways touching his former errors, in breaking parks, or the

other follies you speak of."

"Why, truly, madam," replied Sussex, "as I said before, I wish the

gamesome mad fellow no injury. Some of his whoreson poetry (I crave your

Grace's pardon for such a phrase) has rung in mine ears as if the lines

sounded to boot and saddle. But then it is all froth and folly--no

substance or seriousness in it, as your Grace has already well touched.

What are half a dozen knaves, with rusty foils and tattered targets,

making but a mere mockery of a stout fight, to compare to the royal game

of bear-baiting, which hath been graced by your Highness's countenance,

and that of your royal predecessors, in this your princely kingdom,

famous for matchless mastiffs and bold bearwards over all Christendom?

Greatly is it to be doubted that the race of both will decay, if

men should throng to hear the lungs of an idle player belch forth

nonsensical bombast, instead of bestowing their pence in encouraging the

bravest image of war that can be shown in peace, and that is the sports

of the Bear-garden. There you may see the bear lying at guard, with his

red, pinky eyes watching the onset of the mastiff, like a wily captain

who maintains his defence that an assailant may be tempted to venture

within his danger. And then comes Sir Mastiff, like a worthy champion,

in full career at the throat of his adversary; and then shall Sir Bruin

teach him the reward for those who, in their over-courage, neglect the

policies of war, and, catching him in his arms, strain him to his breast

like a lusty wrestler, until rib after rib crack like the shot of a

pistolet. And then another mastiff; as bold, but with better aim and

sounder judgment, catches Sir Bruin by the nether lip, and hangs fast,

while he tosses about his blood and slaver, and tries in vain to shake

Sir Talbot from his hold. And then--"

"Nay, by my honour, my lord," said the Queen, laughing, "you have

described the whole so admirably that, had we never seen a bear-baiting,

as we have beheld many, and hope, with Heaven's allowance, to see many

more, your words were sufficient to put the whole Bear-garden before our

eyes.--But come, who speaks next in this case?--My Lord of Leicester,

what say you?"

"Am I then to consider myself as unmuzzled, please your Grace?" replied

Leicester.

"Surely, my lord--that is, if you feel hearty enough to take part in our

game," answered Elizabeth; "and yet, when I think of your cognizance of

the bear and ragged staff, methinks we had better hear some less partial

orator."

"Nay, on my word, gracious Princess," said the Earl, "though my brother

Ambrose of Warwick and I do carry the ancient cognizance your Highness

deigns to remember, I nevertheless desire nothing but fair play on all

sides; or, as they say, 'fight dog, fight bear.' And in behalf of the

players, I must needs say that they are witty knaves, whose rants and

jests keep the minds of the commons from busying themselves with

state affairs, and listening to traitorous speeches, idle rumours,

and disloyal insinuations. When men are agape to see how Marlow,

Shakespeare, and other play artificers work out their fanciful plots, as

they call them, the mind of the spectators is withdrawn from the conduct

of their rulers."

"We would not have the mind of our subjects withdrawn from the

consideration of our own conduct, my lord," answered Elizabeth; "because

the more closely it is examined, the true motives by which we are guided

will appear the more manifest."

"I have heard, however, madam," said the Dean of St. Asaph's, an eminent

Puritan, "that these players are wont, in their plays, not only to

introduce profane and lewd expressions, tending to foster sin and

harlotry; but even to bellow out such reflections on government, its

origin and its object, as tend to render the subject discontented, and

shake the solid foundations of civil society. And it seems to be,

under your Grace's favour, far less than safe to permit these naughty

foul-mouthed knaves to ridicule the godly for their decent gravity,

and, in blaspheming heaven and slandering its earthly rulers, to set at

defiance the laws both of God and man."

"If we could think this were true, my lord," said Elizabeth, "we should

give sharp correction for such offences. But it is ill arguing against

the use of anything from its abuse. And touching this Shakespeare, we

think there is that in his plays that is worth twenty Bear-gardens;

and that this new undertaking of his Chronicles, as he calls them, may

entertain, with honest mirth, mingled with useful instruction, not only

our subjects, but even the generation which may succeed to us."

"Your Majesty's reign will need no such feeble aid to make it remembered

to the latest posterity," said Leicester. "And yet, in his way,

Shakespeare hath so touched some incidents of your Majesty's happy

government as may countervail what has been spoken by his reverence

the Dean of St. Asaph's. There are some lines, for example--I would

my nephew, Philip Sidney, were here; they are scarce ever out of his

mouth--they are spoken in a mad tale of fairies, love-charms, and I wot

not what besides; but beautiful they are, however short they may and

must fall of the subject to which they bear a bold relation--and Philip

murmurs them, I think, even in his dreams."

"You tantalize us, my lord," said the Queen--"Master Philip Sidney is,

we know, a minion of the Muses, and we are pleased it should be so.

Valour never shines to more advantage than when united with the true

taste and love of letters. But surely there are some others among our

young courtiers who can recollect what your lordship has forgotten amid

weightier affairs.--Master Tressilian, you are described to me as a

worshipper of Minerva--remember you aught of these lines?"

Tressilian's heart was too heavy, his prospects in life too fatally

blighted, to profit by the opportunity which the Queen thus offered

to him of attracting her attention; but he determined to transfer the

advantage to his more ambitious young friend, and excusing himself

on the score of want of recollection, he added that he believed the

beautiful verses of which my Lord of Leicester had spoken were in the

remembrance of Master Walter Raleigh.

At the command of the Queen, that cavalier repeated, with accent and

manner which even added to their exquisite delicacy of tact and beauty

of description, the celebrated vision of Oberon:--

"That very time I saw (but thou couldst not),

Flying between the cold moon and the earth,

Cupid, allarm'd: a certain aim he took

At a fair vestal, throned by the west;

And loos'd his love-shaft smartly from his bow,

As it should pierce a hundred thousand hearts:

But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft

Quench'd in the chaste beams of the watery moon;

And the imperial vot'ress passed on,

In maiden meditation, fancy free."

The voice of Raleigh, as he repeated the last lines, became a little

tremulous, as if diffident how the Sovereign to whom the homage was

addressed might receive it, exquisite as it was. If this diffidence was

affected, it was good policy; but if real, there was little occasion

for it. The verses were not probably new to the Queen, for when was ever

such elegant flattery long in reaching the royal ear to which it was

addressed? But they were not the less welcome when repeated by such a

speaker as Raleigh. Alike delighted with the matter, the manner, and

the graceful form and animated countenance of the gallant young reciter,

Elizabeth kept time to every cadence with look and with finger. When

the speaker had ceased, she murmured over the last lines as if scarce

conscious that she was overheard, and as she uttered the words,

"In maiden meditation, fancy free," she dropped into the Thames the

supplication of Orson Pinnit, keeper of the royal bears, to find more

favourable acceptance at Sheerness, or wherever the tide might waft it.

Leicester was spurred to emulation by the success of the young

courtier's exhibition, as the veteran racer is roused when a

high-mettled colt passes him on the way. He turned the discourse on

shows, banquets, pageants, and on the character of those by whom these

gay scenes were then frequented. He mixed acute observation with light

satire, in that just proportion which was free alike from malignant

slander and insipid praise. He mimicked with ready accent the manners of

the affected or the clownish, and made his own graceful tone and manner

seem doubly such when he resumed it. Foreign countries--their customs,

their manners, the rules of their courts---the fashions, and even the

dress of their ladies-were equally his theme; and seldom did he conclude

without conveying some compliment, always couched in delicacy, and

expressed with propriety, to the Virgin Queen, her court, and her

government. Thus passed the conversation during this pleasure voyage,

seconded by the rest of the attendants upon the royal person, in gay

discourse, varied by remarks upon ancient classics and modern authors,

and enriched by maxims of deep policy and sound morality, by the

statesmen and sages who sat around and mixed wisdom with the lighter

talk of a female court.

When they returned to the Palace, Elizabeth accepted, or rather

selected, the arm of Leicester to support her from the stairs where they

landed to the great gate. It even seemed to him (though that might arise

from the flattery of his own imagination) that during this short

passage she leaned on him somewhat more than the slippiness of the

way necessarily demanded. Certainly her actions and words combined to

express a degree of favour which, even in his proudest day he had not

till then attained. His rival, indeed, was repeatedly graced by the

Queen's notice; but it was in manner that seemed to flow less from

spontaneous inclination than as extorted by a sense of his merit. And in

the opinion of many experienced courtiers, all the favour she showed

him was overbalanced by her whispering in the ear of the Lady Derby that

"now she saw sickness was a better alchemist than she before wotted

of, seeing it had changed my Lord of Sussex's copper nose into a golden

one."

The jest transpired, and the Earl of Leicester enjoyed his triumph,

as one to whom court-favour had been both the primary and the ultimate

motive of life, while he forgot, in the intoxication of the moment, the

perplexities and dangers of his own situation. Indeed, strange as it may

appear, he thought less at that moment of the perils arising from his

secret union, than of the marks of grace which Elizabeth from time to

time showed to young Raleigh. They were indeed transient, but they were

conferred on one accomplished in mind and body, with grace, gallantry,

literature, and valour. An accident occurred in the course of the

evening which riveted Leicester's attention to this object.

The nobles and courtiers who had attended the Queen on her pleasure

expedition were invited, with royal hospitality, to a splendid banquet

in the hall of the Palace. The table was not, indeed, graced by the

presence of the Sovereign; for, agreeable to her idea of what was at

once modest and dignified, the Maiden Queen on such occasions was wont

to take in private, or with one or two favourite ladies, her light and

temperate meal. After a moderate interval, the court again met in the

splendid gardens of the Palace; and it was while thus engaged that

the Queen suddenly asked a lady, who was near to her both in place and

favour, what had become of the young Squire Lack-Cloak.

The Lady Paget answered, "She had seen Master Raleigh but two or

three minutes since standing at the window of a small pavilion or

pleasure-house, which looked out on the Thames, and writing on the glass

with a diamond ring."

"That ring," said the Queen, "was a small token I gave him to make

amends for his spoiled mantle. Come, Paget, let us see what use he has

made of it, for I can see through him already. He is a marvellously

sharp-witted spirit." They went to the spot, within sight of which,

but at some distance, the young cavalier still lingered, as the fowler

watches the net which he has set. The Queen approached the window, on

which Raleigh had used her gift to inscribe the following line:--

"Fain would I climb, but that I fear to fall."

The Queen smiled, read it twice over, once with deliberation to Lady

Paget, and once again to herself. "It is a pretty beginning," she said,

after the consideration of a moment or two; "but methinks the muse

hath deserted the young wit at the very outset of his task. It were

good-natured--were it not, Lady Paget?--to complete it for him. Try your

rhyming faculties."

Lady Paget, prosaic from her cradle upwards as ever any lady of the

bedchamber before or after her, disclaimed all possibility of assisting

the young poet.

"Nay, then, we must sacrifice to the Muses ourselves," said Elizabeth.

"The incense of no one can be more acceptable," said Lady Paget; "and

your Highness will impose such obligation on the ladies of Parnassus--"

"Hush, Paget," said the Queen, "you speak sacrilege against the immortal

Nine--yet, virgins themselves, they should be exorable to a Virgin

Queen--and therefore--let me see how runs his verse--

'Fain would I climb, but that I fear to fall.'

Might not the answer (for fault of a better) run thus?--

'If thy mind fail thee, do not climb at all.'"

The dame of honour uttered an exclamation of joy and surprise at so

happy a termination; and certainly a worse has been applauded, even when

coming from a less distinguished author.

The Queen, thus encouraged, took off a diamond ring, and saying, "We

will give this gallant some cause of marvel when he finds his couplet

perfected without his own interference," she wrote her own line beneath

that of Raleigh.

The Queen left the pavilion; but retiring slowly, and often looking

back, she could see the young cavalier steal, with the flight of a

lapwing, towards the place where he had seen her make a pause. "She

stayed but to observe," as she said, "that her train had taken;" and

then, laughing at the circumstance with the Lady Paget, she took the way

slowly towards the Palace. Elizabeth, as they returned, cautioned her

companion not to mention to any one the aid which she had given to the

young poet, and Lady Paget promised scrupulous secrecy. It is to be

supposed that she made a mental reservation in favour of Leicester,

to whom her ladyship transmitted without delay an anecdote so little

calculated to give him pleasure.

Raleigh, in the meanwhile, stole back to the window, and read, with a

feeling of intoxication, the encouragement thus given him by the Queen

in person to follow out his ambitious career, and returned to Sussex

and his retinue, then on the point of embarking to go up the river,

his heart beating high with gratified pride, and with hope of future

distinction.

The reverence due to the person of the Earl prevented any notice being

taken of the reception he had met with at court, until they had landed,

and the household were assembled in the great hall at Sayes Court; while

that lord, exhausted by his late illness and the fatigues of the day,

had retired to his chamber, demanding the attendance of Wayland, his

successful physician. Wayland, however, was nowhere to be found; and

while some of the party were, with military impatience, seeking him and

cursing his absence, the rest flocked around Raleigh to congratulate him

on his prospects of court-favour.

He had the good taste and judgment to conceal the decisive circumstance

of the couplet to which Elizabeth had deigned to find a rhyme; but other

indications had transpired, which plainly intimated that he had made

some progress in the Queen's favour. All hastened to wish him joy on the

mended appearance of his fortune--some from real regard, some, perhaps,

from hopes that his preferment might hasten their own, and most from a

mixture of these motives, and a sense that the countenance shown to any

one of Sussex's household was, in fact, a triumph to the whole. Raleigh

returned the kindest thanks to them all, disowning, with becoming

modesty, that one day's fair reception made a favourite, any more than

one swallow a summer. But he observed that Blount did not join in the

general congratulation, and, somewhat hurt at his apparent unkindness,

he plainly asked him the reason.

Blount replied with equal sincerity--"My good Walter, I wish thee as

well as do any of these chattering gulls, who are whistling and whooping

gratulations in thine ear because it seems fair weather with thee. But

I fear for thee, Walter" (and he wiped his honest eye), "I fear for thee

with all my heart. These court-tricks, and gambols, and flashes of fine

women's favour are the tricks and trinkets that bring fair fortunes to

farthings, and fine faces and witty coxcombs to the acquaintance of dull

block and sharp axes."

So saying, Blount arose and left the hall, while Raleigh looked after

him with an expression that blanked for a moment his bold and animated

countenance.

Stanley just then entered the hall, and said to Tressilian, "My lord is

calling for your fellow Wayland, and your fellow Wayland is just come

hither in a sculler, and is calling for you, nor will he go to my lord

till he sees you. The fellow looks as he were mazed, methinks; I would

you would see him immediately."

Tressilian instantly left the hall, and causing Wayland Smith to be

shown into a withdrawing apartment, and lights placed, he conducted the

artist thither, and was surprised when he observed the emotion of his

countenance.

"What is the matter with you, Smith?" said Tressilian; "have you seen

the devil?"

"Worse, sir, worse," replied Wayland; "I have seen a basilisk. Thank

God, I saw him first; for being so seen, and seeing not me, he will do

the less harm."

"In God's name, speak sense," said Tressilian, "and say what you mean."

"I have seen my old master," said the artist. "Last night a friend whom

I had acquired took me to see the Palace clock, judging me to be curious

in such works of art. At the window of a turret next to the clock-house

I saw my old master."

"Thou must needs have been mistaken," said Tressilian.

"I was not mistaken," said Wayland; "he that once hath his features by

heart would know him amongst a million. He was anticly habited; but he

cannot disguise himself from me, God be praised! as I can from him.

I will not, however, tempt Providence by remaining within his ken.

Tarleton the player himself could not so disguise himself but that,

sooner or later, Doboobie would find him out. I must away to-morrow;

for, as we stand together, it were death to me to remain within reach of

him."

"But the Earl of Sussex?" said Tressilian.

"He is in little danger from what he has hitherto taken, provided

he swallow the matter of a bean's size of the orvietan every morning

fasting; but let him beware of a relapse."

"And how is that to be guarded against?" said Tressilian.

"Only by such caution as you would use against the devil," answered

Wayland. "Let my lord's clerk of the kitchen kill his lord's meat

himself, and dress it himself, using no spice but what he procures from

the surest hands. Let the sewer serve it up himself, and let the master

of my lord's household see that both clerk and sewer taste the dishes

which the one dresses and the other serves. Let my lord use no perfumes

which come not from well accredited persons; no unguents--no pomades.

Let him, on no account, drink with strangers, or eat fruit with them,

either in the way of nooning or otherwise. Especially, let him observe

such caution if he goes to Kenilworth--the excuse of his illness, and

his being under diet, will, and must, cover the strangeness of such

practice."

"And thou," said Tressilian, "what dost thou think to make of thyself?"

"France, Spain, either India, East or West, shall be my refuge," said

Wayland, "ere I venture my life by residing within ken of Doboobie,

Demetrius, or whatever else he calls himself for the time."

"Well," said Tressilian, "this happens not inopportunely. I had business

for you in Berkshire, but in the opposite extremity to the place where

thou art known; and ere thou hadst found out this new reason for living

private, I had settled to send thee thither upon a secret embassage."

The artist expressed himself willing to receive his commands, and

Tressilian, knowing he was well acquainted with the outline of his

business at court, frankly explained to him the whole, mentioned the

agreement which subsisted betwixt Giles Gosling and him, and told

what had that day been averred in the presence-chamber by Varney, and

supported by Leicester.

"Thou seest," he added, "that, in the circumstances in which I am

placed, it behoves me to keep a narrow watch on the motions of these

unprincipled men, Varney and his complices, Foster and Lambourne, as

well as on those of my Lord Leicester himself, who, I suspect, is partly

a deceiver, and not altogether the deceived in that matter. Here is my

ring, as a pledge to Giles Gosling. Here is besides gold, which shall be

trebled if thou serve me faithfully. Away down to Cumnor, and see what

happens there."

"I go with double good-will," said the artist, "first, because I serve

your honour, who has been so kind to me; and then, that I may escape my

old master, who, if not an absolute incarnation of the devil, has, at

least, as much of the demon about him, in will, word, and action; as

ever polluted humanity. And yet let him take care of me. I fly him now,

as heretofore; but if, like the Scottish wild cattle, I am vexed by

frequent pursuit, I may turn on him in hate and desperation. [A remnant

of the wild cattle of Scotland are preserved at Chillingham Castle, near

Wooler, in Northumberland, the seat of Lord Tankerville. They fly before

strangers; but if disturbed and followed, they turn with fury on those

who persist in annoying them.] Will your honour command my nag to be

saddled? I will but give the medicine to my lord, divided in its proper

proportions, with a few instructions. His safety will then depend on the

care of his friends and domestics; for the past he is guarded, but let

him beware of the future."

Wayland Smith accordingly made his farewell visit to the Earl of Sussex,

dictated instructions as to his regimen, and precautions concerning his

diet, and left Sayes Court without waiting for morning.

CHAPTER XVIII.

The moment comes--

It is already come--when thou must write

The absolute total of thy life's vast sum.

The constellations stand victorious o'er thee,

The planets shoot good fortune in fair junctions,

And tell thee, "Now's the time."

--SCHILLER'S WALLENSTEIN, BY COLERIDGE.

When Leicester returned to his lodging, alter a day so important and so

harassing, in which, after riding out more than one gale, and touching

on more than one shoal, his bark had finally gained the harbour with

banner displayed, he seemed to experience as much fatigue as a mariner

after a perilous storm. He spoke not a word while his chamberlain

exchanged his rich court-mantle for a furred night-robe, and when this

officer signified that Master Varney desired to speak with his lordship,

he replied only by a sullen nod. Varney, however, entered, accepting

this signal as a permission, and the chamberlain withdrew.

The Earl remained silent and almost motionless in his chair, his head

reclined on his hand, and his elbow resting upon the table which stood

beside him, without seeming to be conscious of the entrance or of the

presence of his confidant. Varney waited for some minutes until he

should speak, desirous to know what was the finally predominant mood of

a mind through which so many powerful emotions had that day taken their

course. But he waited in vain, for Leicester continued still silent,

and the confidant saw himself under the necessity of being the first

to speak. "May I congratulate your lordship," he said, "on the deserved

superiority you have this day attained over your most formidable rival?"

Leicester raised his head, and answered sadly, but without anger, "Thou,

Varney, whose ready invention has involved me in a web of most mean

and perilous falsehood, knowest best what small reason there is for

gratulation on the subject."

"Do you blame me, my lord," said Varney, "for not betraying, on the

first push, the secret on which your fortunes depended, and which

you have so oft and so earnestly recommended to my safe keeping? Your

lordship was present in person, and might have contradicted me and

ruined yourself by an avowal of the truth; but surely it was no part of

a faithful servant to have done so without your commands."

"I cannot deny it, Varney," said the Earl, rising and walking across the

room; "my own ambition has been traitor to my love."

"Say rather, my lord, that your love has been traitor to your greatness,

and barred you from such a prospect of honour and power as the world

cannot offer to any other. To make my honoured lady a countess, you have

missed the chance of being yourself--"

He paused, and seemed unwilling to complete the sentence.

"Of being myself what?" demanded Leicester; "speak out thy meaning,

Varney."

"Of being yourself a KING, my lord," replied Varney; "and King of

England to boot! It is no treason to our Queen to say so. It would have

chanced by her obtaining that which all true subjects wish her--a lusty,

noble, and gallant husband."

"Thou ravest, Varney," answered Leicester. "Besides, our times have

seen enough to make men loathe the Crown Matrimonial which men take from

their wives' lap. There was Darnley of Scotland."

"He!" said Varney; "a, gull, a fool, a thrice-sodden ass, who suffered

himself to be fired off into the air like a rocket on a rejoicing day.

Had Mary had the hap to have wedded the noble Earl ONCE destined to

share her throne, she had experienced a husband of different metal; and

her husband had found in her a wife as complying and loving as the mate

of the meanest squire who follows the hounds a-horseback, and holds her

husband's bridle as he mounts."

"It might have been as thou sayest, Varney," said Leicester, a brief

smile of self-satisfaction passing over his anxious countenance. "Henry

Darnley knew little of women--with Mary, a man who knew her sex might

have had some chance of holding his own. But not with Elizabeth, Varney

for I thank God, when he gave her the heart of a woman, gave her the

head of a man to control its follies. No, I know her. She will accept

love-tokens, ay, and requite them with the like--put sugared sonnets

in her bosom, ay, and answer them too--push gallantry to the very verge

where it becomes exchange of affection; but she writes NIL ULTRA to all

which is to follow, and would not barter one iota of her own supreme

power for all the alphabet of both Cupid and Hymen."

"The better for you, my lord," said Varney--"that is, in the case

supposed, if such be her disposition; since you think you cannot aspire

to become her husband. Her favourite you are, and may remain, if the

lady at Cumnor place continues in her present obscurity."

"Poor Amy!" said Leicester, with a deep sigh; "she desires so earnestly

to be acknowledged in presence of God and man!"

"Ay, but, my lord," said Varney, "is her desire reasonable? That is

the question. Her religious scruples are solved; she is an honoured and

beloved wife, enjoying the society of her husband at such times as his

weightier duties permit him to afford her his company. What would she

more? I am right sure that a lady so gentle and so loving would consent

to live her life through in a certain obscurity--which is, after all,

not dimmer than when she was at Lidcote Hall--rather than diminish the

least jot of her lord's honours and greatness by a premature attempt to

share them."

"There is something in what thou sayest," said Leicester, "and her

appearance here were fatal. Yet she must be seen at Kenilworth;

Elizabeth will not forget that she has so appointed."

"Let me sleep on that hard point," said Varney; "I cannot else perfect

the device I have on the stithy, which I trust will satisfy the Queen

and please my honoured lady, yet leave this fatal secret where it is now

buried. Has your lordship further commands for the night?"

"I would be alone," said Leicester. "Leave me, and place my steel casket

on the table. Be within summons."

Varney retired, and the Earl, opening the window of his apartment,

looked out long and anxiously upon the brilliant host of stars which

glimmered in the splendour of a summer firmament. The words burst from

him as at unawares, "I had never more need that the heavenly bodies

should befriend me, for my earthly path is darkened and confused."

It is well known that the age reposed a deep confidence in the vain

predictions of judicial astrology, and Leicester, though exempt from the

general control of superstition, was not in this respect superior to his

time, but, on the contrary, was remarkable for the encouragement which

he gave to the professors of this pretended science. Indeed, the wish to

pry into futurity, so general among the human race, is peculiarly to

be found amongst those who trade in state mysteries and the dangerous

intrigues and cabals of courts. With heedful precaution to see that it

had not been opened, or its locks tampered with, Leicester applied a key

to the steel casket, and drew from it, first, a parcel of gold pieces,

which he put into a silk purse; then a parchment inscribed with

planetary signs, and the lines and calculations used in framing

horoscopes, on which he gazed intently for a few moments; and, lastly,

took forth a large key, which, lifting aside the tapestry, he applied to

a little, concealed door in the corner of the apartment, and opening it,

disclosed a stair constructed in the thickness of the wall.

"Alasco," said the Earl, with a voice raised, yet no higher raised than

to be heard by the inhabitant of the small turret to which the stair

conducted--"Alasco, I say, descend."

"I come, my lord," answered a voice from above. The foot of an aged man

was heard slowly descending the narrow stair, and Alasco entered the

Earl's apartment. The astrologer was a little man, and seemed much

advanced in age, for his heard was long and white, and reached over

his black doublet down to his silken girdle. His hair was of the same

venerable hue. But his eyebrows were as dark as the keen and piercing

black eyes which they shaded, and this peculiarity gave a wild and

singular cast to the physiognomy of the old man. His cheek was still

fresh and ruddy, and the eyes we have mentioned resembled those of a

rat in acuteness and even fierceness of expression. His manner was not

without a sort of dignity; and the interpreter of the stars, though

respectful, seemed altogether at his ease, and even assumed a tone

of instruction and command in conversing with the prime favourite of

Elizabeth.

"Your prognostications have failed, Alasco," said the Earl, when they

had exchanged salutations--"he is recovering."

"My son," replied the astrologer, "let me remind you I warranted not

his death; nor is there any prognostication that can be derived from

the heavenly bodies, their aspects and their conjunctions, which is not

liable to be controlled by the will of Heaven. ASTRA REGUNT HOMINES, SED

REGIT ASTRA DEUS."

"Of what avail, then, is your mystery?" inquired the Earl.

"Of much, my son," replied the old man, "since it can show the

natural and probable course of events, although that course moves in

subordination to an Higher Power. Thus, in reviewing the horoscope which

your Lordship subjected to my skill, you will observe that Saturn, being

in the sixth House in opposition to Mars, retrograde in the House of

Life, cannot but denote long and dangerous sickness, the issue whereof

is in the will of Heaven, though death may probably be inferred. Yet if

I knew the name of the party I would erect another scheme."

"His name is a secret," said the Earl; "yet, I must own, thy

prognostication hath not been unfaithful. He has been sick, and

dangerously so, not, however, to death. But hast thou again cast my

horoscope as Varney directed thee, and art thou prepared to say what the

stars tell of my present fortune?"

"My art stands at your command," said the old man; "and here, my son, is

the map of thy fortunes, brilliant in aspect as ever beamed from those

blessed signs whereby our life is influenced, yet not unchequered with

fears, difficulties, and dangers."

"My lot were more than mortal were it otherwise," said the Earl.

"Proceed, father, and believe you speak with one ready to undergo his

destiny in action and in passion as may beseem a noble of England."

"Thy courage to do and to suffer must be wound up yet a strain higher,"

said the old man. "The stars intimate yet a prouder title, yet an higher

rank. It is for thee to guess their meaning, not for me to name it."

"Name it, I conjure you--name it, I command you!" said the Earl, his

eyes brightening as he spoke.

"I may not, and I will not," replied the old man. "The ire of princes Is

as the wrath of the lion. But mark, and judge for thyself. Here Venus,

ascendant in the House of Life, and conjoined with Sol, showers down

that flood of silver light, blent with gold, which promises power,

wealth, dignity, all that the proud heart of man desires, and in such

abundance that never the future Augustus of that old and mighty Rome

heard from his HARUSPICES such a tale of glory, as from this rich text

my lore might read to my favourite son."

"Thou dost but jest with me, father," said the Earl, astonished at the

strain of enthusiasm in which the astrologer delivered his prediction.

"Is it for him to jest who hath his eye on heaven, who hath his foot in

the grave?" returned the old man solemnly.

The Earl made two or three strides through the apartment, with his hand

outstretched, as one who follows the beckoning signal of some phantom,

waving him on to deeds of high import. As he turned, however, he caught

the eye of the astrologer fixed on him, while an observing glance of

the most shrewd penetration shot from under the penthouse of his shaggy,

dark eyebrows. Leicester's haughty and suspicious soul at once caught

fire. He darted towards the old man from the farther end of the lofty

apartment, only standing still when his extended hand was within a foot

of the astrologer's body.

"Wretch!" he said, "if you dare to palter with me, I will have your skin

stripped from your living flesh! Confess thou hast been hired to deceive

and to betray me--that thou art a cheat, and I thy silly prey and

booty!"

The old man exhibited some symptoms of emotion, but not more than the

furious deportment of his patron might have extorted from innocence

itself.

"What means this violence, my lord?" he answered, "or in what can I have

deserved it at your hand?"

"Give me proof," said the Earl vehemently, "that you have not tampered

with mine enemies."

"My lord," replied the old man, with dignity, "you can have no better

proof than that which you yourself elected. In that turret I have spent

the last twenty-four hours under the key which has been in your own

custody. The hours of darkness I have spent in gazing on the heavenly

bodies with these dim eyes, and during those of light I have toiled this

aged brain to complete the calculation arising from their combinations.

Earthly food I have not tasted--earthly voice I have not heard. You are

yourself aware I had no means of doing so; and yet I tell you--I

who have been thus shut up in solitude and study--that within these

twenty-four hours your star has become predominant in the horizon, and

either the bright book of heaven speaks false, or there must have been

a proportionate revolution in your fortunes upon earth. If nothing has

happened within that space to secure your power, or advance your favour,

then am I indeed a cheat, and the divine art, which was first devised in

the plains of Chaldea, is a foul imposture."

"It is true," said Leicester, after a moment's reflection, "thou wert

closely immured; and it is also true that the change has taken place in

my situation which thou sayest the horoscope indicates."

"Wherefore this distrust then, my son?" said the astrologer, assuming a

tone of admonition; "the celestial intelligences brook not diffidence,

even in their favourites."

"Peace, father," answered Leicester, "I have erred in doubting thee.

Not to mortal man, nor to celestial intelligence--under that which is

supreme--will Dudley's lips say more in condescension or apology. Speak

rather to the present purpose. Amid these bright promises thou hast said

there was a threatening aspect. Can thy skill tell whence, or by whose

means, such danger seems to impend?"

"Thus far only," answered the astrologer, "does my art enable me to

answer your query. The infortune is threatened by the malignant and

adverse aspect, through means of a youth, and, as I think, a rival; but

whether in love or in prince's favour, I know not nor can I give further

indication respecting him, save that he comes from the western quarter."

"The western--ha!" replied Leicester, "it is enough--the tempest

does indeed brew in that quarter! Cornwall and Devon--Raleigh and

Tressilian--one of them is indicated-I must beware of both. Father, if I

have done thy skill injustice, I will make thee a lordly recompense."

He took a purse of gold from the strong casket which stood before him.

"Have thou double the recompense which Varney promised. Be faithful--be

secret--obey the directions thou shalt receive from my master of the

horse, and grudge not a little seclusion or restraint in my cause--it

shall be richly considered.--Here, Varney--conduct this venerable man

to thine own lodging; tend him heedfully in all things, but see that he

holds communication with no one."

Varney bowed, and the astrologer kissed the Earl's hand in token of

adieu, and followed the master of the horse to another apartment, in

which were placed wine and refreshments for his use.

The astrologer sat down to his repast, while Varney shut two doors with

great precaution, examined the tapestry, lest any listener lurked behind

it, and then sitting down opposite to the sage, began to question him.

"Saw you my signal from the court beneath?"

"I did," said Alasco, for by such name he was at present called, "and

shaped the horoscope accordingly."

"And it passed upon the patron without challenge?" continued Varney.

"Not without challenge," replied the old man, "but it did pass; and I

added, as before agreed, danger from a discovered secret, and a western

youth."

"My lord's fear will stand sponsor to the one, and his conscience to the

other, of these prognostications," replied Varney. "Sure never man chose

to run such a race as his, yet continued to retain those silly scruples!

I am fain to cheat him to his own profit. But touching your matters,

sage interpreter of the stars, I can tell you more of your own fortune

than plan or figure can show. You must be gone from hence forthwith."

"I will not," said Alasco peevishly. "I have been too much hurried

up and down of late--immured for day and night in a desolate

turret-chamber. I must enjoy my liberty, and pursue my studies, which

are of more import than the fate of fifty statesmen and favourites that

rise and burst like bubbles in the atmosphere of a court."

"At your pleasure," said Varney, with a sneer that habit had rendered

familiar to his features, and which forms the principal characteristic

which painters have assigned to that of Satan--"at your pleasure," he

said; "you may enjoy your liberty and your studies until the daggers

of Sussex's followers are clashing within your doublet and against your

ribs." The old man turned pale, and Varney proceeded. "Wot you not he

hath offered a reward for the arch-quack and poison-vender, Demetrius,

who sold certain precious spices to his lordship's cook? What! turn you

pale, old friend? Does Hali already see an infortune in the House of

Life? Why, hark thee, we will have thee down to an old house of mine

in the country, where thou shalt live with a hobnailed slave, whom thy

alchemy may convert into ducats, for to such conversion alone is thy art

serviceable."

"It is false, thou foul-mouthed railer," said Alasco, shaking with

impotent anger; "it is well known that I have approached more nearly

to projection than any hermetic artist who now lives. There are not six

chemists in the world who possess so near an approximation to the grand

arcanum--"

"Come, come," said Varney, interrupting him, "what means this, in the

name of Heaven? Do we not know one another? I believe thee to be so

perfect--so very perfect--in the mystery of cheating, that, having

imposed upon all mankind, thou hast at length in some measure imposed

upon thyself, and without ceasing to dupe others, hast become a species

of dupe to thine own imagination. Blush not for it, man--thou art

learned, and shalt have classical comfort:

'Ne quisquam Ajacem possit superare nisi Ajax.'

No one but thyself could have gulled thee; and thou hast gulled the

whole brotherhood of the Rosy Cross besides--none so deep in the mystery

as thou. But hark thee in thine ear: had the seasoning which spiced

Sussex's broth wrought more surely, I would have thought better of the

chemical science thou dost boast so highly."

"Thou art an hardened villain, Varney," replied Alasco; "many will do

those things who dare not speak of them."

"And many speak of them who dare not do them," answered Varney. "But be

not wroth--I will not quarrel with thee. If I did, I were fain to live

on eggs for a month, that I might feed without fear. Tell me at once,

how came thine art to fail thee at this great emergency?"

"The Earl of Sussex's horoscope intimates," replied the astrologer,

"that the sign of the ascendant being in combustion--"

"Away with your gibberish," replied Varney; "thinkest thou it is the

patron thou speakest with?"

"I crave your pardon," replied the old man, "and swear to you I know but

one medicine that could have saved the Earl's life; and as no man

living in England knows that antidote save myself--moreover, as the

ingredients, one of them in particular, are scarce possible to be come

by, I must needs suppose his escape was owing to such a constitution of

lungs and vital parts as was never before bound up in a body of clay."

"There was some talk of a quack who waited on him," said Varney, after

a moment's reflection. "Are you sure there is no one in England who has

this secret of thine?"

"One man there was," said the doctor, "once my servant, who might have

stolen this of me, with one or two other secrets of art. But content

you, Master Varney, it is no part of my policy to suffer such

interlopers to interfere in my trade. He pries into no mysteries more,

I warrant you, for, as I well believe, he hath been wafted to heaven on

the wing of a fiery dragon--peace be with him! But in this retreat of

mine shall I have the use of mine elaboratory?"

"Of a whole workshop, man," said Varney; "for a reverend father abbot,

who was fain to give place to bluff King Hal and some of his courtiers,

a score of years since, had a chemist's complete apparatus, which he was

obliged to leave behind him to his successors. Thou shalt there occupy,

and melt, and puff, and blaze, and multiply, until the Green Dragon

become a golden goose, or whatever the newer phrase of the brotherhood

may testify."

"Thou art right, Master Varney," said the alchemist setting his teeth

close and grinding them together--"thou art right even in thy very

contempt of right and reason. For what thou sayest in mockery may in

sober verity chance to happen ere we meet again. If the most venerable

sages of ancient days have spoken the truth--if the most learned of

our own have rightly received it; if I have been accepted wherever I

travelled in Germany, in Poland, in Italy, and in the farther Tartary,

as one to whom nature has unveiled her darkest secrets; if I have

acquired the most secret signs and passwords of the Jewish Cabala, so

that the greyest beard in the synagogue would brush the steps to make

them clean for me;--if all this is so, and if there remains but one

step--one little step--betwixt my long, deep, and dark, and subterranean

progress, and that blaze of light which shall show Nature watching her

richest and her most glorious productions in the very cradle--one

step betwixt dependence and the power of sovereignty--one step betwixt

poverty and such a sum of wealth as earth, without that noble secret,

cannot minister from all her mines in the old or the new-found world; if

this be all so, is it not reasonable that to this I dedicate my future

life, secure, for a brief period of studious patience, to rise above the

mean dependence upon favourites, and THEIR favourites, by which I am now

enthralled!"

"Now, bravo! bravo! my good father," said Varney, with the usual

sardonic expression of ridicule on his countenance; "yet all this

approximation to the philosopher's stone wringeth not one single crown

out of my Lord Leicester's pouch, and far less out of Richard Varney's.

WE must have earthly and substantial services, man, and care not whom

else thou canst delude with thy philosophical charlatanry."

"My son Varney," said the alchemist, "the unbelief, gathered around thee

like a frost-fog, hath dimmed thine acute perception to that which is a

stumbling-block to the wise, and which yet, to him who seeketh knowledge

with humility, extends a lesson so clear that he who runs may read.

Hath not Art, thinkest thou, the means of completing Nature's imperfect

concoctions in her attempts to form the precious metals, even as by

art we can perfect those other operations of incubation, distillation,

fermentation, and similar processes of an ordinary description, by

which we extract life itself out of a senseless egg, summon purity and

vitality out of muddy dregs, or call into vivacity the inert substance

of a sluggish liquid?"

"I have heard all this before," said Varney, "and my heart is proof

against such cant ever since I sent twenty good gold pieces (marry,

it was in the nonage of my wit) to advance the grand magisterium, all

which, God help the while, vanished IN FUMO. Since that moment, when I

paid for my freedom, I defy chemistry, astrology, palmistry, and every

other occult art, were it as secret as hell itself, to unloose the

stricture of my purse-strings. Marry, I neither defy the manna of Saint

Nicholas, nor can I dispense with it. The first task must be to prepare

some when thou gett'st down to my little sequestered retreat yonder, and

then make as much gold as thou wilt."

"I will make no more of that dose," said the alchemist, resolutely.

"Then," said the master of the horse, "thou shalt be hanged for what

thou hast made already, and so were the great secret for ever lost to

mankind. Do not humanity this injustice, good father, but e'en bend

to thy destiny, and make us an ounce or two of this same stuff; which

cannot prejudice above one or two individuals, in order to gain lifetime

to discover the universal medicine, which shall clear away all mortal

diseases at once. But cheer up, thou grave, learned, and most melancholy

jackanape! Hast thou not told me that a moderate portion of thy drug

hath mild effects, no ways ultimately dangerous to the human frame, but

which produces depression of spirits, nausea, headache, an unwillingness

to change of place--even such a state of temper as would keep a bird

from flying out of a cage were the door left open?"

"I have said so, and it is true," said the alchemist. "This effect will

it produce, and the bird who partakes of it in such proportion shall sit

for a season drooping on her perch, without thinking either of the free

blue sky, or of the fair greenwood, though the one be lighted by the

rays of the rising sun, and the other ringing with the newly-awakened

song of all the feathered inhabitants of the forest."

"And this without danger to life?" said Varney, somewhat anxiously.

"Ay, so that proportion and measure be not exceeded; and so that one who

knows the nature of the manna be ever near to watch the symptoms, and

succour in case of need."

"Thou shalt regulate the whole," said Varney. "Thy reward shall be

princely, if thou keepest time and touch, and exceedest not the due

proportion, to the prejudice of her health; otherwise thy punishment

shall be as signal."

"The prejudice of HER health!" repeated Alasco; "it is, then, a woman I

am to use my skill upon?"

"No, thou fool," replied Varney, "said I not it was a bird--a reclaimed

linnet, whose pipe might soothe a hawk when in mid stoop? I see thine

eye sparkle, and I know thy beard is not altogether so white as art has

made it--THAT, at least, thou hast been able to transmute to silver. But

mark me, this is no mate for thee. This caged bird is dear to one who

brooks no rivalry, and far less such rivalry as thine, and her health

must over all things be cared for. But she is in the case of

being commanded down to yonder Kenilworth revels, and it is most

expedient--most needful--most necessary that she fly not thither. Of

these necessities and their causes, it is not needful that she should

know aught; and it is to be thought that her own wish may lead her

to combat all ordinary reasons which can be urged for her remaining a

housekeeper."

"That is but natural," said the alchemist with a strange smile,

which yet bore a greater reference to the human character than the

uninterested and abstracted gaze which his physiognomy had hitherto

expressed, where all seemed to refer to some world distant from that

which was existing around him.

"It is so," answered Varney; "you understand women well, though it may

have been long since you were conversant amongst them. Well, then, she

is not to be contradicted; yet she is not to be humoured. Understand

me--a slight illness, sufficient to take away the desire of removing

from thence, and to make such of your wise fraternity as may be called

in to aid, recommend a quiet residence at home, will, in one word, be

esteemed good service, and remunerated as such."

"I am not to be asked to affect the House of Life?" said the chemist.

"On the contrary, we will have thee hanged if thou dost," replied

Varney.

"And I must," added Alasco, "have opportunity to do my turn, and all

facilities for concealment or escape, should there be detection?"

"All, all, and everything, thou infidel in all but the impossibilities

of alchemy. Why, man, for what dost thou take me?"

The old man rose, and taking a light walked towards the end of the

apartment, where was a door that led to the small sleeping-room destined

for his reception during the night. At the door he turned round, and

slowly repeated Varney's question ere he answered it. "For what do

I take thee, Richard Varney? Why, for a worse devil than I have been

myself. But I am in your toils, and I must serve you till my term be

out."

"Well, well," answered Varney hastily, "be stirring with grey light.

It may be we shall not need thy medicine--do nought till I myself

come down. Michael Lambourne shall guide you to the place of your

destination." [See Note 7. Dr. Julio.]

When Varney heard the adept's door shut and carefully bolted within, he

stepped towards it, and with similar precaution carefully locked it

on the outside, and took the key from the lock, muttering to himself,

"Worse than THEE, thou poisoning quacksalver and witch-monger, who,

if thou art not a bounden slave to the devil, it is only because he

disdains such an apprentice! I am a mortal man, and seek by mortal means

the gratification of my passions and advancement of my prospects; thou

art a vassal of hell itself--So ho, Lambourne!" he called at another

door, and Michael made his appearance with a flushed cheek and an

unsteady step.

"Thou art drunk, thou villain!" said Varney to him.

"Doubtless, noble sir," replied the unabashed Michael; "We have been

drinking all even to the glories of the day, and to my noble Lord of

Leicester and his valiant master of the horse. Drunk! odds blades and

poniards, he that would refuse to swallow a dozen healths on such an

evening is a base besognio, and a puckfoist, and shall swallow six

inches of my dagger!"

"Hark ye, scoundrel," said Varney, "be sober on the instant--I command

thee. I know thou canst throw off thy drunken folly, like a fool's coat,

at pleasure; and if not, it were the worse for thee."

Lambourne drooped his head, left the apartment, and returned in two or

three minutes with his face composed, his hair adjusted, his dress in

order, and exhibiting as great a difference from his former self as if

the whole man had been changed.

"Art thou sober now, and dost thou comprehend me?" said Varney sternly.

Lambourne bowed in acquiescence.

"Thou must presently down to Cumnor Place with the reverend man of art

who sleeps yonder in the little vaulted chamber. Here is the key, that

thou mayest call him by times. Take another trusty fellow with you. Use

him well on the journey, but let him not escape you--pistol him if he

attempt it, and I will be your warrant. I will give thee letters to

Foster. The doctor is to occupy the lower apartments of the eastern

quadrangle, with freedom to use the old elaboratory and its implements.

He is to have no access to the lady, but such as I shall point out--only

she may be amused to see his philosophical jugglery. Thou wilt await

at Cumnor Place my further orders; and, as thou livest, beware of the

ale-bench and the aqua vitae flask. Each breath drawn in Cumnor Place

must be kept severed from common air."

"Enough, my lord--I mean my worshipful master, soon, I trust, to be my

worshipful knightly master. You have given me my lesson and my license;

I will execute the one, and not abuse the other. I will be in the saddle

by daybreak."

"Do so, and deserve favour. Stay--ere thou goest fill me a cup of

wine--not out of that flask, sirrah," as Lambourne was pouring out from

that which Alasco had left half finished, "fetch me a fresh one."

Lambourne obeyed, and Varney, after rinsing his mouth with the liquor,

drank a full cup, and said, as he took up a lamp to retreat to his

sleeping apartment, "It is strange--I am as little the slave of fancy

as any one, yet I never speak for a few minutes with this fellow Alasco,

but my mouth and lungs feel as if soiled with the fumes of calcined

arsenic--pah!"

So saying, he left the apartment. Lambourne lingered, to drink a cup of

the freshly-opened flask. "It is from Saint John's-Berg," he said, as he

paused on the draught to enjoy its flavour, "and has the true relish of

the violet. But I must forbear it now, that I may one day drink it at my

own pleasure." And he quaffed a goblet of water to quench the fumes of

the Rhenish wine, retired slowly towards the door, made a pause, and

then, finding the temptation irresistible, walked hastily back, and took

another long pull at the wine flask, without the formality of a cup.

"Were it not for this accursed custom," he said, "I might climb as high

as Varney himself. But who can climb when the room turns round with

him like a parish-top? I would the distance were greater, or the road

rougher, betwixt my hand and mouth! But I will drink nothing to-morrow

save water--nothing save fair water."

CHAPTER XIX.

PISTOL. And tidings do I bring, and lucky joys,

And happy news of price.

FALSTAFF. I prithee now deliver them like to men of this world.

PISTOL. A foutra for the world, and worldlings base!

I speak of Africa, and golden joys. --HENRY IV. PART II.

The public room of the Black Bear at Cumnor, to which the scene of

our story now returns, boasted, on the evening which we treat of,

no ordinary assemblage of guests. There had been a fair in the

neighbourhood, and the cutting mercer of Abingdon, with some of the

other personages whom the reader has already been made acquainted with,

as friends and customers of Giles Gosling, had already formed their

wonted circle around the evening fire, and were talking over the news of

the day.

A lively, bustling, arch fellow, whose pack, and oaken ellwand studded

duly with brass points, denoted him to be of Autolycus's profession,

occupied a good deal of the attention, and furnished much of the

amusement, of the evening. The pedlars of those days, it must be

remembered, were men of far greater importance than the degenerate

and degraded hawkers of our modern times. It was by means of these

peripatetic venders that the country trade, in the finer manufactures

used in female dress particularly, was almost entirely carried on; and

if a merchant of this description arrived at the dignity of travelling

with a pack-horse, he was a person of no small consequence, and company

for the most substantial yeoman or franklin whom he might meet in his

wanderings.

The pedlar of whom we speak bore, accordingly, an active and unrebuked

share in the merriment to which the rafters of the bonny Black Bear

of Cumnor resounded. He had his smile with pretty Mistress Cicely, his

broad laugh with mine host, and his jest upon dashing Master Goldthred,

who, though indeed without any such benevolent intention on his own

part, was the general butt of the evening. The pedlar and he were

closely engaged in a dispute upon the preference due to the Spanish

nether-stock over the black Gascoigne hose, and mine host had just

winked to the guests around him, as who should say, "You will have mirth

presently, my masters," when the trampling of horses was heard in the

courtyard, and the hostler was loudly summoned, with a few of the newest

oaths then in vogue to add force to the invocation. Out tumbled Will

Hostler, John Tapster, and all the militia of the inn, who had slunk

from their posts in order to collect some scattered crumbs of the mirth

which was flying about among the customers. Out into the yard sallied

mine host himself also, to do fitting salutation to his new guests; and

presently returned, ushering into the apartment his own worthy nephew,

Michael Lambourne, pretty tolerably drunk, and having under his escort

the astrologer. Alasco, though still a little old man, had, by altering

his gown to a riding-dress, trimming his beard and eyebrows, and so

forth, struck at least a score of years from his apparent age, and

might now seem an active man of sixty, or little upwards. He appeared at

present exceedingly anxious, and had insisted much with Lambourne that

they should not enter the inn, but go straight forward to the place of

their destination. But Lambourne would not be controlled. "By Cancer and

Capricorn," he vociferated, "and the whole heavenly host, besides all

the stars that these blessed eyes of mine have seen sparkle in the

southern heavens, to which these northern blinkers are but farthing

candles, I will be unkindly for no one's humour--I will stay and salute

my worthy uncle here. Chesu! that good blood should ever be forgotten

betwixt friends!--A gallon of your best, uncle, and let it go round to

the health of the noble Earl of Leicester! What! shall we not collogue

together, and warm the cockles of our ancient kindness?--shall we not

collogue, I say?"

"With all my heart, kinsman," said mine host, who obviously wished to be

rid of him; "but are you to stand shot to all this good liquor?"

This is a question has quelled many a jovial toper, but it moved not

the purpose of Lambourne's soul, "Question my means, nuncle?" he said,

producing a handful of mixed gold and silver pieces; "question Mexico

and Peru--question the Queen's exchequer--God save her Majesty!--she is

my good Lord's good mistress."

"Well, kinsman," said mine host, "it is my business to sell wine to

those who can buy it--so, Jack Tapster, do me thine office. But I would

I knew how to come by money as lightly as thou dost, Mike."

"Why, uncle," said Lambourne, "I will tell thee a secret. Dost see this

little old fellow here? as old and withered a chip as ever the devil put

into his porridge--and yet, uncle, between you and me--he hath Potosi

in that brain of his--'sblood! he can coin ducats faster than I can vent

oaths."

"I will have none of his coinage in my purse, though, Michael," said

mine host; "I know what belongs to falsifying the Queen's coin."

"Thou art an ass, uncle, for as old as thou art.--Pull me not by the

skirts, doctor, thou art an ass thyself to boot--so, being both asses, I

tell ye I spoke but metaphorically."

"Are you mad?" said the old man; "is the devil in you? Can you not let

us begone without drawing all men's eyes on us?"

"Sayest thou?" said Lambourne. "Thou art deceived now--no man shall see

you, an I give the word.--By heavens, masters, an any one dare to look

on this old gentleman, I will slash the eyes out of his head with

my poniard!--So sit down, old friend, and be merry; these are mine

ingles--mine ancient inmates, and will betray no man."

"Had you not better withdraw to a private apartment, nephew?" said

Giles Gosling. "You speak strange matter," he added, "and there be

intelligencers everywhere."

"I care not for them," said the magnanimous Michael--"intelligencers?

pshaw! I serve the noble Earl of Leicester.--Here comes the wine.--Fill

round, Master Skinker, a carouse to the health of the flower of England,

the noble Earl of Leicester! I say, the noble Earl of Leicester! He that

does me not reason is a swine of Sussex, and I'll make him kneel to the

pledge, if I should cut his hams and smoke them for bacon."

None disputed a pledge given under such formidable penalties; and

Michael Lambourne, whose drunken humour was not of course diminished

by this new potation, went on in the same wild way, renewing his

acquaintance with such of the guests as he had formerly known, and

experiencing a reception in which there was now something of deference

mingled with a good deal of fear; for the least servitor of the

favourite Earl, especially such a man as Lambourne, was, for very

sufficient reasons, an object both of the one and of the other.

In the meanwhile, the old man, seeing his guide in this uncontrollable

humour, ceased to remonstrate with him, and sitting down in the most

obscure corner of the room, called for a small measure of sack, over

which he seemed, as it were, to slumber, withdrawing himself as much as

possible from general observation, and doing nothing which could recall

his existence to the recollection of his fellow-traveller, who by this

time had got into close intimacy with his ancient comrade, Goldthred of

Abingdon.

"Never believe me, bully Mike," said the mercer, "if I am not as glad to

see thee as ever I was to see a customer's money! Why, thou canst give

a friend a sly place at a mask or a revel now, Mike; ay, or, I warrant

thee, thou canst say in my lord's ear, when my honourable lord is down

in these parts, and wants a Spanish ruff or the like--thou canst say in

his ear, There is mine old friend, young Lawrence Goldthred of Abingdon,

has as good wares, lawn, tiffany, cambric, and so forth--ay, and is as

pretty a piece of man's flesh, too, as is in Berkshire, and will ruffle

it for your lordship with any man of his inches; and thou mayest say--"

"I can say a hundred d--d lies besides, mercer," answered Lambourne;

"what, one must not stand upon a good word for a friend!"

"Here is to thee, Mike, with all my heart," said the mercer; "and thou

canst tell one the reality of the new fashions too. Here was a rogue

pedlar but now was crying up the old-fashioned Spanish nether-stock over

the Gascoigne hose, although thou seest how well the French hose set

off the leg and knee, being adorned with parti-coloured garters and

garniture in conformity."

"Excellent, excellent," replied Lambourne; "why, thy limber bit of a

thigh, thrust through that bunch of slashed buckram and tiffany, shows

like a housewife's distaff when the flax is half spun off!"

"Said I not so?" said the mercer, whose shallow brain was now overflowed

in his turn; "where, then, where be this rascal pedlar?--there was a

pedlar here but now, methinks.--Mine host, where the foul fiend is this

pedlar?"

"Where wise men should be, Master Goldthred," replied Giles Gosling;

"even shut up in his private chamber, telling over the sales of to-day,

and preparing for the custom of to-morrow."

"Hang him, a mechanical chuff!" said the mercer; "but for shame, it

were a good deed to ease him of his wares--a set of peddling knaves, who

stroll through the land, and hurt the established trader. There are good

fellows in Berkshire yet, mine host--your pedlar may be met withal on

Maiden Castle."

"Ay," replied mine host, laughing, "and he who meets him may meet his

match--the pedlar is a tall man."

"Is he?" said Goldthred.

"Is he?" replied the host; "ay, by cock and pie is he--the very pedlar

he who raddled Robin Hood so tightly, as the song says,--

'Now Robin Hood drew his sword so good,

The pedlar drew his brand,

And he hath raddled him, Robin Hood,

Till he neither could see nor stand.'"

"Hang him, foul scroyle, let him pass," said the mercer; "if he be such

a one, there were small worship to be won upon him.--And now tell me,

Mike--my honest Mike, how wears the Hollands you won of me?"

"Why, well, as you may see, Master Goldthred," answered Mike; "I will

bestow a pot on thee for the handsel.--Fill the flagon, Master Tapster."

"Thou wilt win no more Hollands, think, on such wager, friend Mike,"

said the mercer; "for the sulky swain, Tony Foster, rails at thee all to

nought, and swears you shall ne'er darken his doors again, for that your

oaths are enough to blow the roof off a Christian man's dwelling."

"Doth he say so, the mincing, hypocritical miser?" vociferated

Lambourne. "Why, then, he shall come down and receive my commands here,

this blessed night, under my uncle's roof! And I will ring him such a

black sanctus, that he shall think the devil hath him by the skirts for

a month to come, for barely hearing me."

"Nay, now the pottle-pot is uppermost, with a witness!" said the mercer.

"Tony Foster obey thy whistle! Alas! good Mike, go sleep--go sleep."

"I tell thee what, thou thin-faced gull," said Michael Lambourne, in

high chafe, "I will wager thee fifty angels against the first five

shelves of thy shop, numbering upward from the false light, with all

that is on them, that I make Tony Foster come down to this public-house

before we have finished three rounds."

"I will lay no bet to that amount," said the mercer, something

sobered by an offer which intimated rather too private a knowledge on

Lambourne's part of the secret recesses of his shop. "I will lay no such

wager," he said; "but I will stake five angels against thy five, if thou

wilt, that Tony Foster will not leave his own roof, or come to ale-house

after prayer time, for thee, or any man."

"Content," said Lambourne.--"Here, uncle, hold stakes, and let one

of your young bleed-barrels there--one of your infant tapsters--trip

presently up to The Place, and give this letter to Master Foster, and

say that I, his ingle, Michael Lambourne, pray to speak with him at mine

uncle's castle here, upon business of grave import.--Away with thee,

child, for it is now sundown, and the wretch goeth to bed with the birds

to save mutton-suet--faugh!"

Shortly after this messenger was dispatched--an interval which was spent

in drinking and buffoonery--he returned with the answer that Master

Foster was coming presently.

"Won, won!" said Lambourne, darting on the stakes.

"Not till he comes, if you please," said the mercer, interfering.

"Why, 'sblood, he is at the threshold," replied Michael.--"What said he,

boy?"

"If it please your worship," answered the messenger, "he looked out of

window, with a musquetoon in his hand, and when I delivered your errand,

which I did with fear and trembling, he said, with a vinegar aspect,

that your worship might be gone to the infernal regions."

"Or to hell, I suppose," said Lambourne--"it is there he disposes of all

that are not of the congregation."

"Even so," said the boy; "I used the other phrase as being the more

poetical."

"An ingenious youth," said Michael; "shalt have a drop to whet thy

poetical whistle. And what said Foster next?"

"He called me back," answered the boy, "and bid me say you might come to

him if you had aught to say to him."

"And what next?" said Lambourne.

"He read the letter, and seemed in a fluster, and asked if your worship

was in drink; and I said you were speaking a little Spanish, as one who

had been in the Canaries."

"Out, you diminutive pint-pot, whelped of an overgrown reckoning!"

replied Lambourne--"out! But what said he then?"

"Why," said the boy, "he muttered that if he came not your worship would

bolt out what were better kept in; and so he took his old flat cap,

and threadbare blue cloak, and, as I said before, he will be here

incontinent."

"There is truth in what he said," replied Lambourne, as if speaking to

himself--"my brain has played me its old dog's trick. But corragio--let

him approach!--I have not rolled about in the world for many a day to

fear Tony Foster, be I drunk or sober.--Bring me a flagon of cold water

to christen my sack withal."

While Lambourne, whom the approach of Foster seemed to have recalled to

a sense of his own condition, was busied in preparing to receive him,

Giles Gosling stole up to the apartment of the pedlar, whom he found

traversing the room in much agitation.

"You withdrew yourself suddenly from the company," said the landlord to

the guest.

"It was time, when the devil became one among you," replied the pedlar.

"It is not courteous in you to term my nephew by such a name," said

Gosling, "nor is it kindly in me to reply to it; and yet, in some sort,

Mike may be considered as a limb of Satan."

"Pooh--I talk not of the swaggering ruffian," replied the pedlar; "it is

of the other, who, for aught I know--But when go they? or wherefore come

they?"

"Marry, these are questions I cannot answer," replied the host.

"But look you, sir, you have brought me a token from worthy Master

Tressilian--a pretty stone it is." He took out the ring, and looked at

it, adding, as he put it into his purse again, that it was too rich a

guerdon for anything he could do for the worthy donor. He was, he said,

in the public line, and it ill became him to be too inquisitive into

other folk's concerns. He had already said that he could hear nothing

but that the lady lived still at Cumnor Place in the closest seclusion,

and, to such as by chance had a view of her, seemed pensive and

discontented with her solitude. "But here," he said, "if you are

desirous to gratify your master, is the rarest chance that hath occurred

for this many a day. Tony Foster is coming down hither, and it is but

letting Mike Lambourne smell another wine-flask, and the Queen's command

would not move him from the ale-bench. So they are fast for an hour or

so. Now, if you will don your pack, which will be your best excuse, you

may, perchance, win the ear of the old servant, being assured of the

master's absence, to let you try to get some custom of the lady; and

then you may learn more of her condition than I or any other can tell

you."

"True--very true," answered Wayland, for he it was; "an excellent

device, but methinks something dangerous--for, say Foster should

return?"

"Very possible indeed," replied the host.

"Or say," continued Wayland, "the lady should render me cold thanks for

my exertions?"

"As is not unlikely," replied Giles Gosling. "I marvel Master Tressilian

will take such heed of her that cares not for him."

"In either case I were foully sped," said Wayland, "and therefore I do

not, on the whole, much relish your device."

"Nay, but take me with you, good master serving-man," replied mine host.

"This is your master's business, and not mine, you best know the risk to

be encountered, or how far you are willing to brave it. But that which

you will not yourself hazard, you cannot expect others to risk."

"Hold, hold," said Wayland; "tell me but one thing--goes yonder old man

up to Cumnor?"

"Surely, I think so?" said the landlord; "their servant said he was to

take their baggage thither. But the ale-tap has been as potent for him

as the sack-spigot has been for Michael."

"It is enough," said Wayland, assuming an air of resolution. "I will

thwart that old villain's projects; my affright at his baleful aspect

begins to abate, and my hatred to arise. Help me on with my pack, good

mine host.--And look to thyself, old Albumazar; there is a malignant

influence in thy horoscope, and it gleams from the constellation Ursa

Major."

So saying, he assumed his burden, and, guided by the landlord through

the postern gate of the Black Bear, took the most private way from

thence up to Cumnor Place.

CHAPTER XX.

CLOWN. You have of these pedlars, that have more in'em than

you'd think, sister.--WINTER'S TALE, ACT IV., SCENE 3.

In his anxiety to obey the Earl's repeated charges of secrecy, as well

as from his own unsocial and miserly habits, Anthony Foster was more

desirous, by his mode of housekeeping, to escape observation than to

resist intrusive curiosity. Thus, instead of a numerous household, to

secure his charge, and defend his house, he studied as much as possible

to elude notice by diminishing his attendants; so that, unless when

there were followers of the Earl, or of Varney, in the mansion, one

old male domestic, and two aged crones, who assisted in keeping the

Countess's apartments in order, were the only servants of the family.

It was one of these old women who opened the door when Wayland knocked,

and answered his petition, to be admitted to exhibit his wares to the

ladies of the family, with a volley of vituperation, couched in what is

there called the JOWRING dialect. The pedlar found the means of

checking this vociferation by slipping a silver groat into her hand, and

intimating the present of some stuff for a coif, if the lady would buy

of his wares.

"God ield thee, for mine is aw in littocks. Slocket with thy pack into

gharn, mon--her walks in gharn." Into the garden she ushered the pedlar

accordingly, and pointing to an old, ruinous garden house, said, "Yonder

be's her, mon--yonder be's her. Zhe will buy changes an zhe loikes

stuffs."

"She has left me to come off as I may," thought Wayland, as he heard the

hag shut the garden-door behind him. "But they shall not beat me,

and they dare not murder me, for so little trespass, and by this fair

twilight. Hang it, I will on--a brave general never thought of his

retreat till he was defeated. I see two females in the old garden-house

yonder--but how to address them? Stay--Will Shakespeare, be my friend in

need. I will give them a taste of Autolycus." He then sung, with a good

voice, and becoming audacity, the popular playhouse ditty,--

"Lawn as white as driven snow,

Cyprus black as e'er was crow,

Gloves as sweet as damask roses,

Masks for faces and for noses."

"What hath fortune sent us here for an unwonted sight, Janet?" said the

lady.

"One of those merchants of vanity, called pedlars," answered Janet,

demurely, "who utters his light wares in lighter measures. I marvel old

Dorcas let him pass."

"It is a lucky chance, girl," said the Countess; "we lead a heavy life

here, and this may while off a weary hour."

"Ay, my gracious lady," said Janet; "but my father?"

"He is not my father, Janet, nor I hope my master," answered the lady.

"I say, call the man hither--I want some things."

"Nay," replied Janet, "your ladyship has but to say so in the next

packet, and if England can furnish them they will be sent. There will

come mischief on't--pray, dearest lady, let me bid the man begone!"

"I will have thee bid him come hither," said the Countess;--"or stay,

thou terrified fool, I will bid him myself, and spare thee a chiding."

"Ah! well-a-day, dearest lady, if that were the worst," said Janet

sadly; while the lady called to the pedlar, "Good fellow, step

forward--undo thy pack; if thou hast good wares, chance has sent thee

hither for my convenience and thy profit."

"What may your ladyship please to lack?" said Wayland, unstrapping his

pack, and displaying its contents with as much dexterity as if he had

been bred to the trade. Indeed he had occasionally pursued it in the

course of his roving life, and now commended his wares with all the

volubility of a trader, and showed some skill in the main art of placing

prices upon them.

"What do I please to lack?" said the lady, "why, considering I have not

for six long months bought one yard of lawn or cambric, or one trinket,

the most inconsiderable, for my own use, and at my own choice, the

better question is, What hast thou got to sell? Lay aside for me that

cambric partlet and pair of sleeves--and those roundells of gold fringe,

drawn out with cyprus--and that short cloak of cherry-coloured fine

cloth, garnished with gold buttons and loops;--is it not of an absolute

fancy, Janet?"

"Nay, my lady," replied Janet, "if you consult my poor judgment, it is,

methinks, over-gaudy for a graceful habit."

"Now, out upon thy judgment, if it be no brighter, wench," said the

Countess. "Thou shalt wear it thyself for penance' sake; and I promise

thee the gold buttons, being somewhat massive, will comfort thy father,

and reconcile him to the cherry-coloured body. See that he snap them not

away, Janet, and send them to bear company with the imprisoned angels

which he keeps captive in his strong-box."

"May I pray your ladyship to spare my poor father?" said Janet.

"Nay, but why should any one spare him that is so sparing of his own

nature?" replied the lady.--"Well, but to our gear. That head garniture

for myself, and that silver bodkin mounted with pearl; and take off two

gowns of that russet cloth for Dorcas and Alison, Janet, to keep the old

wretches warm against winter comes.--And stay--hast thou no perfumes and

sweet bags, or any handsome casting bottles of the newest mode?"

"Were I a pedlar in earnest, I were a made merchant," thought Wayland,

as he busied himself to answer the demands which she thronged one on

another, with the eagerness of a young lady who has been long secluded

from such a pleasing occupation. "But how to bring her to a moment's

serious reflection?" Then as he exhibited his choicest collection of

essences and perfumes, he at once arrested her attention by observing

that these articles had almost risen to double value since the

magnificent preparations made by the Earl of Leicester to entertain the

Queen and court at his princely Castle of Kenilworth.

"Ha!" said the Countess hastily; "that rumour, then, is true, Janet."

"Surely, madam," answered Wayland; "and I marvel it hath not reached

your noble ladyship's ears. The Queen of England feasts with the noble

Earl for a week during the Summer's Progress; and there are many who

will tell you England will have a king, and England's Elizabeth--God

save her!--a husband, ere the Progress be over."

"They lie like villains!" said the Countess, bursting forth impatiently.

"For God's sake, madam, consider," said Janet, trembling with

apprehension; "who would cumber themselves about pedlar's tidings?"

"Yes, Janet!" exclaimed the Countess; "right, thou hast corrected me

justly. Such reports, blighting the reputation of England's brightest

and noblest peer, can only find currency amongst the mean, the abject,

and the infamous!"

"May I perish, lady," said Wayland Smith, observing that her violence

directed itself towards him, "if I have done anything to merit this

strange passion! I have said but what many men say."

By this time the Countess had recovered her composure, and endeavoured,

alarmed by the anxious hints of Janet, to suppress all appearance of

displeasure. "I were loath," she said, "good fellow, that our Queen

should change the virgin style so dear to us her people--think not of

it." And then, as if desirous to change the subject, she added, "And

what is this paste, so carefully put up in the silver box?" as she

examined the contents of a casket in which drugs and perfumes were

contained in separate drawers.

"It is a remedy, Madam, for a disorder of which I trust your ladyship

will never have reason to complain. The amount of a small turkey-bean,

swallowed daily for a week, fortifies the heart against those black

vapours which arise from solitude, melancholy, unrequited affection,

disappointed hope--"

"Are you a fool, friend?" said the Countess sharply; "or do you think,

because I have good-naturedly purchased your trumpery goods at your

roguish prices, that you may put any gullery you will on me? Who ever

heard that affections of the heart were cured by medicines given to the

body?"

"Under your honourable favour," said Wayland, "I am an honest man, and

I have sold my goods at an honest price. As to this most precious

medicine, when I told its qualities, I asked you not to purchase it, so

why should I lie to you? I say not it will cure a rooted affection

of the mind, which only God and time can do; but I say that this

restorative relieves the black vapours which are engendered in the body

of that melancholy which broodeth on the mind. I have relieved many with

it, both in court and city, and of late one Master Edmund Tressilian, a

worshipful gentleman in Cornwall, who, on some slight received, it was

told me, where he had set his affections, was brought into that state of

melancholy which made his friends alarmed for his life."

He paused, and the lady remained silent for some time, and then asked,

with a voice which she strove in vain to render firm and indifferent in

its tone, "Is the gentleman you have mentioned perfectly recovered?"

"Passably, madam," answered Wayland; "he hath at least no bodily

complaint."

"I will take some of the medicine, Janet," said the Countess. "I too

have sometimes that dark melancholy which overclouds the brain."

"You shall not do so, madam," said Janet; "who shall answer that this

fellow vends what is wholesome?"

"I will myself warrant my good faith," said Wayland; and taking a part

of the medicine, he swallowed it before them. The Countess now bought

what remained, a step to which Janet, by further objections, only

determined her the more obstinately. She even took the first dose upon

the instant, and professed to feel her heart lightened and her spirits

augmented--a consequence which, in all probability, existed only in

her own imagination. The lady then piled the purchases she had made

together, flung her purse to Janet, and desired her to compute the

amount, and to pay the pedlar; while she herself, as if tired of the

amusement she at first found in conversing with him, wished him good

evening, and walked carelessly into the house, thus depriving Wayland of

every opportunity to speak with her in private. He hastened, however, to

attempt an explanation with Janet.

"Maiden," he said, "thou hast the face of one who should love her

mistress. She hath much need of faithful service."

"And well deserves it at my hands," replied Janet; "but what of that?"

"Maiden, I am not altogether what I seem," said the pedlar, lowering his

voice.

"The less like to be an honest man," said Janet.

"The more so," answered Wayland, "since I am no pedlar."

"Get thee gone then instantly, or I will call for assistance," said

Janet; "my father must ere this be returned."

"Do not be so rash," said Wayland; "you will do what you may repent of.

I am one of your mistress's friends; and she had need of more, not that

thou shouldst ruin those she hath."

"How shall I know that?" said Janet.

"Look me in the face," said Wayland Smith, "and see if thou dost not

read honesty in my looks."

And in truth, though by no means handsome, there was in his physiognomy

the sharp, keen expression of inventive genius and prompt intellect,

which, joined to quick and brilliant eyes, a well-formed mouth, and an

intelligent smile, often gives grace and interest to features which are

both homely and irregular. Janet looked at him with the sly simplicity

of her sect, and replied, "Notwithstanding thy boasted honesty, friend,

and although I am not accustomed to read and pass judgment on such

volumes as thou hast submitted to my perusal, I think I see in thy

countenance something of the pedlar-something of the picaroon."

"On a small scale, perhaps," said Wayland Smith, laughing. "But this

evening, or to-morrow, will an old man come hither with thy father, who

has the stealthy step of the cat, the shrewd and vindictive eye of

the rat, the fawning wile of the spaniel, the determined snatch of the

mastiff--of him beware, for your own sake and that of your distress.

See you, fair Janet, he brings the venom of the aspic under the assumed

innocence of the dove. What precise mischief he meditates towards you I

cannot guess, but death and disease have ever dogged his footsteps. Say

nought of this to thy mistress; my art suggests to me that in her state

the fear of evil may be as dangerous as its operation. But see that

she take my specific, for" (he lowered his voice, and spoke low but

impressively in her ear) "it is an antidote against poison.--Hark, they

enter the garden!"

In effect, a sound of noisy mirth and loud talking approached the garden

door, alarmed by which Wayland Smith sprung into the midst of a thicket

of overgrown shrubs, while Janet withdrew to the garden-house that

she might not incur observation, and that she might at the same time

conceal, at least for the present, the purchases made from the supposed

pedlar, which lay scattered on the floor of the summer-house.

Janet, however, had no occasion for anxiety. Her father, his old

attendant, Lord Leicester's domestic, and the astrologer, entered

the garden in tumult and in extreme perplexity, endeavouring to quiet

Lambourne, whose brain had now become completely fired with liquor, and

who was one of those unfortunate persons who, being once stirred with

the vinous stimulus, do not fall asleep like other drunkards, but

remain partially influenced by it for many hours, until at length, by

successive draughts, they are elevated into a state of uncontrollable

frenzy. Like many men in this state also, Lambourne neither lost the

power of motion, speech, or expression; but, on the contrary, spoke with

unwonted emphasis and readiness, and told all that at another time he

would have been most desirous to keep secret.

"What!" ejaculated Michael, at the full extent of his voice, "am I to

have no welcome, no carouse, when I have brought fortune to your old,

ruinous dog-house in the shape of a devil's ally, that can change

slate-shivers into Spanish dollars?--Here, you, Tony Fire-the-Fagot,

Papist, Puritan, hypocrite, miser, profligate, devil, compounded of all

men's sins, bow down and reverence him who has brought into thy house

the very mammon thou worshippest."

"For God's sake," said Foster, "speak low--come into the house--thou

shalt have wine, or whatever thou wilt."

"No, old puckfoist, I will have it here," thundered the inebriated

ruffian--"here, AL FRESCO, as the Italian hath it. No, no, I will not

drink with that poisoning devil within doors, to be choked with the

fumes of arsenic and quick-silver; I learned from villain Varney to

beware of that."

"Fetch him wine, in the name of all the fiends!" said the alchemist.

"Aha! and thou wouldst spice it for me, old Truepenny, wouldst thou not?

Ay, I should have copperas, and hellebore, and vitriol, and aqua fortis,

and twenty devilish materials bubbling in my brain-pan like a charm to

raise the devil in a witch's cauldron. Hand me the flask thyself, old

Tony Fire-the-Fagot--and let it be cool--I will have no wine mulled at

the pile of the old burnt bishops. Or stay, let Leicester be king if

he will--good--and Varney, villain Varney, grand vizier--why,

excellent!--and what shall I be, then?--why, emperor--Emperor Lambourne!

I will see this choice piece of beauty that they have walled up here

for their private pleasures; I will have her this very night to serve my

wine-cup and put on my nightcap. What should a fellow do with two

wives, were he twenty times an Earl? Answer me that, Tony boy, you old

reprobate, hypocritical dog, whom God struck out of the book of life,

but tormented with the constant wish to be restored to it--you old

bishop-burning, blasphemous fanatic, answer me that."

"I will stick my knife to the haft in him," said Foster, in a low tone,

which trembled with passion.

"For the love of Heaven, no violence!" said the astrologer. "It cannot

but be looked closely into.--Here, honest Lambourne, wilt thou pledge me

to the health of the noble Earl of Leicester and Master Richard Varney?"

"I will, mine old Albumazar--I will, my trusty vender of ratsbane. I

would kiss thee, mine honest infractor of the Lex Julia (as they said

at Leyden), didst thou not flavour so damnably of sulphur, and such

fiendish apothecary's stuff.--Here goes it, up seyes--to Varney and

Leicester two more noble mounting spirits--and more dark-seeking,

deep-diving, high-flying, malicious, ambitious miscreants--well, I say

no more, but I will whet my dagger on his heart-spone that refuses to

pledge me! And so, my masters--"

Thus speaking, Lambourne exhausted the cup which the astrologer had

handed to him, and which contained not wine, but distilled spirits. He

swore half an oath, dropped the empty cup from his grasp, laid his hand

on his sword without being able to draw it, reeled, and fell without

sense or motion into the arms of the domestic, who dragged him off to

his chamber, and put him to bed.

In the general confusion, Janet regained her lady's chamber unobserved,

trembling like an aspen leaf, but determined to keep secret from the

Countess the dreadful surmises which she could not help entertaining

from the drunken ravings of Lambourne. Her fears, however, though they

assumed no certain shape, kept pace with the advice of the pedlar; and

she confirmed her mistress in her purpose of taking the medicine which

he had recommended, from which it is probable she would otherwise

have dissuaded her. Neither had these intimations escaped the ears

of Wayland, who knew much better how to interpret them. He felt much

compassion at beholding so lovely a creature as the Countess, and whom

he had first seen in the bosom of domestic happiness, exposed to the

machinations of such a gang of villains. His indignation, too, had been

highly excited by hearing the voice of his old master, against whom he

felt, in equal degree, the passions of hatred and fear. He nourished

also a pride in his own art and resources; and, dangerous as the task

was, he that night formed a determination to attain the bottom of the

mystery, and to aid the distressed lady, if it were yet possible. From

some words which Lambourne had dropped among his ravings, Wayland

now, for the first time, felt inclined to doubt that Varney had acted

entirely on his own account in wooing and winning the affections of this

beautiful creature. Fame asserted of this zealous retainer that he

had accommodated his lord in former love intrigues; and it occurred

to Wayland Smith that Leicester himself might be the party chiefly

interested. Her marriage with the Earl he could not suspect; but even

the discovery of such a passing intrigue with a lady of Mistress Amy

Robsart's rank was a secret of the deepest importance to the stability

of the favourite's power over Elizabeth. "If Leicester himself should

hesitate to stifle such a rumour by very strange means," said he to

himself, "he has those about him who would do him that favour without

waiting for his consent. If I would meddle in this business, it must

be in such guise as my old master uses when he compounds his manna of

Satan, and that is with a close mask on my face. So I will quit Giles

Gosling to-morrow, and change my course and place of residence as often

as a hunted fox. I should like to see this little Puritan, too, once

more. She looks both pretty and intelligent to have come of such a

caitiff as Anthony Fire-the-Fagot."

Giles Gosling received the adieus of Wayland rather joyfully than

otherwise. The honest publican saw so much peril in crossing the course

of the Earl of Leicester's favourite that his virtue was scarce able to

support him in the task, and he was well pleased when it was likely to

be removed from his shoulders still, however, professing his good-will,

and readiness, in case of need, to do Mr. Tressilian or his emissary any

service, in so far as consisted with his character of a publican.

CHAPTER XXI.

Vaulting ambition, that o'erleaps itself,

And falls on t'other side. --MACBETH.

The splendour of the approaching revels at Kenilworth was now the

conversation through all England; and everything was collected at home,

or from abroad, which could add to the gaiety or glory of the prepared

reception of Elizabeth at the house of her most distinguished favourite,

Meantime Leicester appeared daily to advance in the Queen's favour. He

was perpetually by her side in council--willingly listened to in the

moments of courtly recreation--favoured with approaches even to familiar

intimacy--looked up to by all who had aught to hope at court--courted by

foreign ministers with the most flattering testimonies of respect

from their sovereigns,--the ALTER EGO, as it seemed, of the stately

Elizabeth, who was now very generally supposed to be studying the time

and opportunity for associating him, by marriage, into her sovereign

power.

Amid such a tide of prosperity, this minion of fortune and of the

Queen's favour was probably the most unhappy man in the realm which

seemed at his devotion. He had the Fairy King's superiority over his

friends and dependants, and saw much which they could not. The character

of his mistress was intimately known to him. It was his minute and

studied acquaintance with her humours, as well as her noble faculties,

which, joined to his powerful mental qualities, and his eminent external

accomplishments, had raised him so high in her favour; and it was that

very knowledge of her disposition which led him to apprehend at every

turn some sudden and overwhelming disgrace. Leicester was like a pilot

possessed of a chart which points out to him all the peculiarities of

his navigation, but which exhibits so many shoals, breakers, and reefs

of rocks, that his anxious eye reaps little more from observing them

than to be convinced that his final escape can be little else than

miraculous.

In fact, Queen Elizabeth had a character strangely compounded of the

strongest masculine sense, with those foibles which are chiefly supposed

proper to the female sex. Her subjects had the full benefit of her

virtues, which far predominated over her weaknesses; but her courtiers,

and those about her person, had often to sustain sudden and embarrassing

turns of caprice, and the sallies of a temper which was both jealous and

despotic. She was the nursing-mother of her people, but she was also

the true daughter of Henry VIII.; and though early sufferings and an

excellent education had repressed and modified, they had not altogether

destroyed, the hereditary temper of that "hard-ruled king." "Her mind,"

says her witty godson, Sir John Harrington, who had experienced both the

smiles and the frowns which he describes, "was ofttime like the gentle

air that cometh from the western point in a summer's morn--'twas sweet

and refreshing to all around her. Her speech did win all affections. And

again, she could put forth such alterations, when obedience was lacking,

as left no doubting WHOSE daughter she was. When she smiled, it was a

pure sunshine, that every one did choose to bask in, if they could; but

anon came a storm from a sudden gathering of clouds, and the thunder

fell in a wondrous manner on all alike." [Nugae Antiquae, vol.i.,

pp.355, 356-362.]

This variability of disposition, as Leicester well knew, was chiefly

formidable to those who had a share in the Queen's affections, and

who depended rather on her personal regard than on the indispensable

services which they could render to her councils and her crown. The

favour of Burleigh or of Walsingham, of a description far less striking

than that by which he was himself upheld, was founded, as Leicester was

well aware, on Elizabeth's solid judgment, not on her partiality, and

was, therefore, free from all those principles of change and decay

necessarily incident to that which chiefly arose from personal

accomplishments and female predilection. These great and sage statesmen

were judged of by the Queen only with reference to the measures they

suggested, and the reasons by which they supported their opinions in

council; whereas the success of Leicester's course depended on all those

light and changeable gales of caprice and humour which thwart or favour

the progress of a lover in the favour of his mistress, and she, too, a

mistress who was ever and anon becoming fearful lest she should forget

the dignity, or compromise the authority, of the Queen, while she

indulged the affections of the woman. Of the difficulties which

surrounded his power, "too great to keep or to resign," Leicester

was fully sensible; and as he looked anxiously round for the means

of maintaining himself in his precarious situation, and sometimes

contemplated those of descending from it in safety, he saw but little

hope of either. At such moments his thoughts turned to dwell upon his

secret marriage and its consequences; and it was in bitterness against

himself, if not against his unfortunate Countess, that he ascribed

to that hasty measure, adopted in the ardour of what he now called

inconsiderate passion, at once the impossibility of placing his power on

a solid basis, and the immediate prospect of its precipitate downfall.

"Men say," thus ran his thoughts, in these anxious and repentant

moments, "that I might marry Elizabeth, and become King of England. All

things suggest this. The match is carolled in ballads, while the rabble

throw their caps up. It has been touched upon in the schools--whispered

in the presence-chamber--recommended from the pulpit--prayed for in the

Calvinistic churches abroad--touched on by statists in the very council

at home. These bold insinuations have been rebutted by no rebuke, no

resentment, no chiding, scarce even by the usual female protestation

that she would live and die a virgin princess. Her words have been

more courteous than ever, though she knows such rumours are abroad--her

actions more gracious, her looks more kind--nought seems wanting to

make me King of England, and place me beyond the storms of court-favour,

excepting the putting forth of mine own hand to take that crown imperial

which is the glory of the universe! And when I might stretch that hand

out most boldly, it is fettered down by a secret and inextricable bond!

And here I have letters from Amy," he would say, catching them up with

a movement of peevishness, "persecuting me to acknowledge her openly--to

do justice to her and to myself--and I wot not what. Methinks I have

done less than justice to myself already. And she speaks as if Elizabeth

were to receive the knowledge of this matter with the glee of a mother

hearing of the happy marriage of a hopeful son! She, the daughter of

Henry, who spared neither man in his anger nor woman in his desire--she

to find herself tricked, drawn on with toys of passion to the verge of

acknowledging her love to a subject, and he discovered to be a married

man!--Elizabeth to learn that she had been dallied with in such fashion,

as a gay courtier might trifle with a country wench--we should then see,

to our ruin, FURENS QUID FAEMINA!"

He would then pause, and call for Varney, whose advice was now more

frequently resorted to than ever, because the Earl remembered the

remonstrances which he had made against his secret contract. And their

consultation usually terminated in anxious deliberation how, or in what

manner, the Countess was to be produced at Kenilworth. These communings

had for some time ended always in a resolution to delay the Progress

from day to day. But at length a peremptory decision became necessary.

"Elizabeth will not be satisfied without her presence," said the Earl.

"Whether any suspicion hath entered her mind, as my own apprehensions

suggest, or whether the petition of Tressilian is kept in her memory

by Sussex or some other secret enemy, I know not; but amongst all the

favourable expressions which she uses to me, she often recurs to the

story of Amy Robsart. I think that Amy is the slave in the chariot, who

is placed there by my evil fortune to dash and to confound my triumph,

even when at the highest. Show me thy device, Varney, for solving the

inextricable difficulty. I have thrown every such impediment in the

way of these accursed revels as I could propound even with a shade of

decency, but to-day's interview has put all to a hazard. She said to

me kindly, but peremptorily, 'We will give you no further time for

preparations, my lord, lest you should altogether ruin yourself. On

Saturday, the 9th of July, we will be with you at Kenilworth. We pray

you to forget none of our appointed guests and suitors, and in especial

this light-o'-love, Amy Robsart. We would wish to see the woman who

could postpone yonder poetical gentleman, Master Tressilian, to your

man, Richard Varney.'--Now, Varney, ply thine invention, whose forge

hath availed us so often for sure as my name is Dudley, the danger

menaced by my horoscope is now darkening around me."

"Can my lady be by no means persuaded to bear for a brief space the

obscure character which circumstances impose on her?" Said Varney after

some hesitation.

"How, sirrah? my Countess term herself thy wife!--that may neither stand

with my honour nor with hers."

"Alas! my lord," answered Varney, "and yet such is the quality in which

Elizabeth now holds her; and to contradict this opinion is to discover

all."

"Think of something else, Varney," said the Earl, in great agitation;

"this invention is nought. If I could give way to it, she would not; for

I tell thee, Varney, if thou knowest it not, that not Elizabeth on the

throne has more pride than the daughter of this obscure gentleman of

Devon. She is flexible in many things, but where she holds her honour

brought in question she hath a spirit and temper as apprehensive as

lightning, and as swift in execution."

"We have experienced that, my lord, else had we not been thus

circumstanced," said Varney. "But what else to suggest I know not.

Methinks she whose good fortune in becoming your lordship's bride, and

who gives rise to the danger, should do somewhat towards parrying it."

"It is impossible," said the Earl, waving his hand; "I know neither

authority nor entreaties would make her endure thy name for an hour.

"It is somewhat hard, though," said Varney, in a dry tone; and, without

pausing on that topic, he added, "Suppose some one were found to

represent her? Such feats have been performed in the courts of as

sharp-eyed monarchs as Queen Elizabeth."

"Utter madness, Varney," answered the Earl; "the counterfeit would be

confronted with Tressilian, and discovery become inevitable."

"Tressilian might be removed from court," said the unhesitating Varney.

"And by what means?"

"There are many," said Varney, "by which a statesman in your situation,

my lord, may remove from the scene one who pries into your affairs, and

places himself in perilous opposition to you."

"Speak not to me of such policy, Varney," said the Earl hastily, "which,

besides, would avail nothing in the present case. Many others there

be at court to whom Amy may be known; and besides, on the absence

of Tressilian, her father or some of her friends would be instantly

summoned hither. Urge thine invention once more."

"My lord, I know not what to say," answered Varney; "but were I myself

in such perplexity, I would ride post down to Cumnor Place, and compel

my wife to give her consent to such measures as her safety and mine

required."

"Varney," said Leicester, "I cannot urge her to aught so repugnant

to her noble nature as a share in this stratagem; it would be a base

requital to the love she bears me."

"Well, my lord," said Varney, "your lordship is a wise and an honourable

man, and skilled in those high points of romantic scruple which are

current in Arcadia perhaps, as your nephew, Philip Sidney, writes. I

am your humble servitor--a man of this world, and only happy that my

knowledge of it, and its ways, is such as your lordship has not scorned

to avail yourself of. Now I would fain know whether the obligation lies

on my lady or on you in this fortunate union, and which has most reason

to show complaisance to the other, and to consider that other's wishes,

conveniences, and safety?"

"I tell thee, Varney," said the Earl, "that all it was in my power to

bestow upon her was not merely deserved, but a thousand times overpaid,

by her own virtue and beauty; for never did greatness descend upon a

creature so formed by nature to grace and adorn it."

"It is well, my lord, you are so satisfied," answered Varney, with his

usual sardonic smile, which even respect to his patron could not at

all times subdue; "you will have time enough to enjoy undisturbed the

society of one so gracious and beautiful--that is, so soon as such

confinement in the Tower be over as may correspond to the crime of

deceiving the affections of Elizabeth Tudor. A cheaper penalty, I

presume, you do not expect."

"Malicious fiend!" answered Leicester, "do you mock me in my

misfortune?--Manage it as thou wilt."

"If you are serious, my lord," said Varney, "you must set forth

instantly and post for Cumnor Place."

"Do thou go thyself, Varney; the devil has given thee that sort of

eloquence which is most powerful in the worst cause. I should stand

self-convicted of villainy, were I to urge such a deceit. Begone, I tell

thee; must I entreat thee to mine own dishonour?"

"No, my lord," said Varney; "but if you are serious in entrusting me

with the task of urging this most necessary measure, you must give me

a letter to my lady, as my credentials, and trust to me for backing

the advice it contains with all the force in my power. And such is my

opinion of my lady's love for your lordship, and of her willingness to

do that which is at once to contribute to your pleasure and your safety,

that I am sure she will condescend to bear for a few brief days the name

of so humble a man as myself, especially since it is not inferior in

antiquity to that of her own paternal house."

Leicester seized on writing materials, and twice or thrice commenced

a letter to the Countess, which he afterwards tore into fragments. At

length he finished a few distracted lines, in which he conjured her, for

reasons nearly concerning his life and honour, to consent to bear the

name of Varney for a few days, during the revels at Kenilworth. He

added that Varney would communicate all the reasons which rendered this

deception indispensable; and having signed and sealed these credentials,

he flung them over the table to Varney with a motion that he should

depart, which his adviser was not slow to comprehend and to obey.

Leicester remained like one stupefied, till he heard the trampling of

the horses, as Varney, who took no time even to change his dress, threw

himself into the saddle, and, followed by a single servant, set off for

Berkshire. At the sound the Earl started from his seat, and ran to the

window, with the momentary purpose of recalling the unworthy commission

with which he had entrusted one of whom he used to say he knew no

virtuous property save affection to his patron. But Varney was already

beyond call; and the bright, starry firmament, which the age considered

as the Book of Fate, lying spread before Leicester when he opened the

casement, diverted him from his better and more manly purpose.

"There they roll, on their silent but potential course," said the Earl,

looking around him, "without a voice which speaks to our ear, but not

without influences which affect, at every change, the indwellers of this

vile, earthly planet. This, if astrologers fable not, is the very crisis

of my fate! The hour approaches of which I was taught to beware--the

hour, too, which I was encouraged to hope for. A King was the word--but

how?--the crown matrimonial. All hopes of that are gone--let them go.

The rich Netherlands have demanded me for their leader, and, would

Elizabeth consent, would yield to me THEIR crown. And have I not such

a claim even in this kingdom? That of York, descending from George of

Clarence to the House of Huntingdon, which, this lady failing, may have

a fair chance--Huntingdon is of my house.--But I will plunge no deeper

in these high mysteries. Let me hold my course in silence for a while,

and in obscurity, like a subterranean river; the time shall come that I

will burst forth in my strength, and bear all opposition before me."

While Leicester was thus stupefying the remonstrances of his own

conscience, by appealing to political necessity for his apology, or

losing himself amidst the wild dreams of ambition, his agent left

town and tower behind him on his hasty journey to Berkshire. HE also

nourished high hope. He had brought Lord Leicester to the point which

he had desired, of committing to him the most intimate recesses of

his breast, and of using him as the channel of his most confidential

intercourse with his lady. Henceforward it would, he foresaw, be

difficult for his patron either to dispense with his services, or refuse

his requests, however unreasonable. And if this disdainful dame, as

he termed the Countess, should comply with the request of her husband,

Varney, her pretended husband, must needs become so situated with

respect to her, that there was no knowing where his audacity might be

bounded perhaps not till circumstances enabled him to obtain a triumph,

which he thought of with a mixture of fiendish feelings, in which

revenge for her previous scorn was foremost and predominant. Again

he contemplated the possibility of her being totally intractable, and

refusing obstinately to play the part assigned to her in the drama at

Kenilworth.

"Alasco must then do his part," he said. "Sickness must serve her

Majesty as an excuse for not receiving the homage of Mrs. Varney--ay,

and a sore and wasting sickness it may prove, should Elizabeth continue

to cast so favourable an eye on my Lord of Leicester. I will not forego

the chance of being favourite of a monarch for want of determined

measures, should these be necessary. Forward, good horse,

forward--ambition and haughty hope of power, pleasure, and revenge

strike their stings as deep through my bosom as I plunge the rowels in

thy flanks. On, good horse, on--the devil urges us both forward!"

CHAPTER XXII.

Say that my beauty was but small,

Among court ladies all despised,

Why didst thou rend it from that hall

Where, scornful Earl, 'twas dearly prized?

No more thou com'st with wonted speed,

Thy once beloved bride to see;

But be she alive, or be she dead,

I fear, stern Earl, 's the same to thee.

CUMNOR HALL, by WILLIAM JULIUS MICKLE.

The ladies of fashion of the present, or of any other period, must have

allowed that the young and lovely Countess of Leicester had, besides her

youth and beauty, two qualities which entitled her to a place amongst

women of rank and distinction. She displayed, as we have seen in her

interview with the pedlar, a liberal promptitude to make unnecessary

purchases, solely for the pleasure of acquiring useless and showy

trifles which ceased to please as soon as they were possessed; and she

was, besides, apt to spend a considerable space of time every day in

adorning her person, although the varied splendour of her attire could

only attract the half satirical praise of the precise Janet, or an

approving glance from the bright eyes which witnessed their own beams of

triumph reflected from the mirror.

The Countess Amy had, indeed, to plead for indulgence in those frivolous

tastes, that the education of the times had done little or nothing for a

mind naturally gay and averse to study. If she had not loved to

collect finery and to wear it, she might have woven tapestry or sewed

embroidery, till her labours spread in gay profusion all over the walls

and seats at Lidcote Hall; or she might have varied Minerva's labours

with the task of preparing a mighty pudding against the time that Sir

Hugh Robsart returned from the greenwood. But Amy had no natural genius

either for the loom, the needle, or the receipt-book. Her mother had

died in infancy; her father contradicted her in nothing; and Tressilian,

the only one that approached her who was able or desirous to attend

to the cultivation of her mind, had much hurt his interest with her by

assuming too eagerly the task of a preceptor, so that he was regarded by

the lively, indulged, and idle girl with some fear and much respect, but

with little or nothing of that softer emotion which it had been his hope

and his ambition to inspire. And thus her heart lay readily open, and

her fancy became easily captivated by the noble exterior and graceful

deportment and complacent flattery of Leicester, even before he was

known to her as the dazzling minion of wealth and power.

The frequent visits of Leicester at Cumnor, during the earlier part of

their union, had reconciled the Countess to the solitude and privacy

to which she was condemned; but when these visits became rarer and more

rare, and when the void was filled up with letters of excuse, not always

very warmly expressed, and generally extremely brief, discontent and

suspicion began to haunt those splendid apartments which love had fitted

up for beauty. Her answers to Leicester conveyed these feelings too

bluntly, and pressed more naturally than prudently that she might

be relieved from this obscure and secluded residence, by the Earl's

acknowledgment of their marriage; and in arranging her arguments with

all the skill she was mistress of, she trusted chiefly to the warmth of

the entreaties with which she urged them. Sometimes she even ventured

to mingle reproaches, of which Leicester conceived he had good reason to

complain.

"I have made her Countess," he said to Varney; "surely she might wait

till it consisted with my pleasure that she should put on the coronet?"

The Countess Amy viewed the subject in directly an opposite light.

"What signifies," she said, "that I have rank and honour in reality, if

I am to live an obscure prisoner, without either society or observance,

and suffering in my character, as one of dubious or disgraced

reputation? I care not for all those strings of pearl, which you fret me

by warping into my tresses, Janet. I tell you that at Lidcote Hall, if

I put but a fresh rosebud among my hair, my good father would call me

to him, that he might see it more closely; and the kind old curate would

smile, and Master Mumblazen would say something about roses gules. And

now I sit here, decked out like an image with gold and gems, and no one

to see my finery but you, Janet. There was the poor Tressilian, too--but

it avails not speaking of him."

"It doth not indeed, madam," said her prudent attendant; "and verily

you make me sometimes wish you would not speak of him so often, or so

rashly."

"It signifies nothing to warn me, Janet," said the impatient and

incorrigible Countess; "I was born free, though I am now mewed up like

some fine foreign slave, rather than the wife of an English noble.

I bore it all with pleasure while I was sure he loved me; but now my

tongue and heart shall be free, let them fetter these limbs as they

will. I tell thee, Janet, I love my husband--I will love him till

my latest breath--I cannot cease to love him, even if I would, or if

he--which, God knows, may chance--should cease to love me. But I

will say, and loudly, I would have been happier than I now am to

have remained in Lidcote Hall, even although I must have married poor

Tressilian, with his melancholy look and his head full of learning,

which I cared not for. He said, if I would read his favourite volumes,

there would come a time that I should be glad of having done so. I think

it is come now."

"I bought you some books, madam," said Janet, "from a lame fellow who

sold them in the Market-place--and who stared something boldly, at me, I

promise you."

"Let me see them, Janet," said the Countess; "but let them not be of

your own precise cast,--How is this, most righteous damsel?--'A PAIR OF

SNUFFERS FOR THE GOLDEN CANDLESTICK'--'HANDFULL OF MYRRH AND HYSSOP TO

PUT A SICK SOUL TO PURGATION'--'A DRAUGHT OF WATER FROM THE VALLEY OF

BACA'--'FOXES AND FIREBRANDS'--what gear call you this, maiden?"

"Nay, madam," said Janet, "it was but fitting and seemly to put grace in

your ladyship's way; but an you will none of it, there are play-books,

and poet-books, I trow."

The Countess proceeded carelessly in her examination, turning over such

rare volumes as would now make the fortune of twenty retail booksellers.

Here was a "BOKE OF COOKERY, IMPRINTED BY RICHARD LANT," and "SKELTON'S

BOOKS"--"THE PASSTIME OF THE PEOPLE"--"THE CASTLE OF KNOWLEDGE," etc.

But neither to this lore did the Countess's heart incline, and joyfully

did she start up from the listless task of turning over the leaves of

the pamphlets, and hastily did she scatter them through the floor, when

the hasty clatter of horses' feet, heard in the courtyard, called her to

the window, exclaiming, "It is Leicester!--it is my noble Earl!--it

is my Dudley!--every stroke of his horse's hoof sounds like a note of

lordly music!"

There was a brief bustle in the mansion, and Foster, with his downward

look and sullen manner, entered the apartment to say, "That Master

Richard Varney was arrived from my lord, having ridden all night, and

craved to speak with her ladyship instantly."

"Varney?" said the disappointed Countess; "and to speak with me?--pshaw!

But he comes with news from Leicester, so admit him instantly."

Varney entered her dressing apartment, where she sat arrayed in her

native loveliness, adorned with all that Janet's art and a rich and

tasteful undress could bestow. But the most beautiful part of her attire

was her profuse and luxuriant light-brown locks, which floated in such

rich abundance around a neck that resembled a swan's, and over a bosom

heaving with anxious expectation, which communicated a hurried tinge of

red to her whole countenance.

Varney entered the room in the dress in which he had waited on his

master that morning to court, the splendour of which made a strange

contrast with the disorder arising from hasty riding during a dark night

and foul ways. His brow bore an anxious and hurried expression, as one

who has that to say of which he doubts the reception, and who hath

yet posted on from the necessity of communicating his tidings. The

Countess's anxious eye at once caught the alarm, as she exclaimed, "You

bring news from my lord, Master Varney--Gracious Heaven! is he ill?"

"No, madam, thank Heaven!" said Varney. "Compose yourself, and permit me

to take breath ere I communicate my tidings."

"No breath, sir," replied the lady impatiently; "I know your theatrical

arts. Since your breath hath sufficed to bring you hither, it may

suffice to tell your tale--at least briefly, and in the gross."

"Madam," answered Varney, "we are not alone, and my lord's message was

for your ear only."

"Leave us, Janet, and Master Foster," said the lady; "but remain in the

next apartment, and within call."

Foster and his daughter retired, agreeably to the Lady Leicester's

commands, into the next apartment, which was the withdrawing-room. The

door which led from the sleeping-chamber was then carefully shut and

bolted, and the father and daughter remained both in a posture of

anxious attention, the first with a stern, suspicious, anxious cast of

countenance, and Janet with folded hands, and looks which seemed divided

betwixt her desire to know the fortunes of her mistress, and her prayers

to Heaven for her safety. Anthony Foster seemed himself to have some

idea of what was passing through his daughter's mind, for he crossed

the apartment and took her anxiously by the hand, saying, "That is

right--pray, Janet, pray; we have all need of prayers, and some of us

more than others. Pray, Janet--I would pray myself, but I must listen to

what goes on within--evil has been brewing, love--evil has been brewing.

God forgive our sins, but Varney's sudden and strange arrival bodes us

no good."

Janet had never before heard her father excite or even permit her

attention to anything which passed in their mysterious family; and now

that he did so, his voice sounded in her ear--she knew not why--like

that of a screech-owl denouncing some deed of terror and of woe. She

turned her eyes fearfully towards the door, almost as if she expected

some sounds of horror to be heard, or some sight of fear to display

itself.

All, however, was as still as death, and the voices of those who spoke

in the inner chamber were, if they spoke at all, carefully subdued to a

tone which could not be heard in the next. At once, however, they were

heard to speak fast, thick, and hastily; and presently after the voice

of the Countess was heard exclaiming, at the highest pitch to which

indignation could raise it, "Undo the door, sir, I command you!--undo

the door!--I will have no other reply!" she continued, drowning with her

vehement accents the low and muttered sounds which Varney was heard

to utter betwixt whiles. "What ho! without there!" she persisted,

accompanying her words with shrieks, "Janet, alarm the house!--Foster,

break open the door--I am detained here by a traitor! Use axe and lever,

Master Foster--I will be your warrant!"

"It shall not need, madam," Varney was at length distinctly heard to

say. "If you please to expose my lord's important concerns and your own

to the general ear, I will not be your hindrance."

The door was unlocked and thrown open, and Janet and her father rushed

in, anxious to learn the cause of these reiterated exclamations.

When they entered the apartment Varney stood by the door grinding his

teeth, with an expression in which rage, and shame, and fear had each

their share. The Countess stood in the midst of her apartment like a

juvenile Pythoness under the influence of the prophetic fury. The veins

in her beautiful forehead started into swoln blue lines through the

hurried impulse of her articulation--her cheek and neck glowed like

scarlet--her eyes were like those of an imprisoned eagle, flashing red

lightning on the foes which it cannot reach with its talons. Were it

possible for one of the Graces to have been animated by a Fury, the

countenance could not have united such beauty with so much hatred,

scorn, defiance, and resentment. The gesture and attitude corresponded

with the voice and looks, and altogether presented a spectacle which was

at once beautiful and fearful; so much of the sublime had the energy

of passion united with the Countess Amy's natural loveliness. Janet,

as soon as the door was open, ran to her mistress; and more slowly, yet

with more haste than he was wont, Anthony Foster went to Richard Varney.

"In the Truth's name, what ails your ladyship?" said the former.

"What, in the name of Satan, have you done to her?" said Foster to his

friend.

"Who, I?--nothing," answered Varney, but with sunken head and sullen

voice; "nothing but communicated to her her lord's commands, which, if

the lady list not to obey, she knows better how to answer it than I may

pretend to do."

"Now, by Heaven, Janet!" said the Countess, "the false traitor lies

in his throat! He must needs lie, for he speaks to the dishonour of my

noble lord; he must needs lie doubly, for he speaks to gain ends of his

own, equally execrable and unattainable."

"You have misapprehended me, lady," said Varney, with a sulky species

of submission and apology; "let this matter rest till your passion be

abated, and I will explain all."

"Thou shalt never have an opportunity to do so," said the

Countess.--"Look at him, Janet. He is fairly dressed, hath the outside

of a gentleman, and hither he came to persuade me it was my lord's

pleasure--nay, more, my wedded lord's commands--that I should go with

him to Kenilworth, and before the Queen and nobles, and in presence of

my own wedded lord, that I should acknowledge him--HIM there--that very

cloak-brushing, shoe-cleaning fellow--HIM there, my lord's lackey,

for my liege lord and husband; furnishing against myself, Great God!

whenever I was to vindicate my right and my rank, such weapons as would

hew my just claim from the root, and destroy my character to be regarded

as an honourable matron of the English nobility!"

"You hear her, Foster, and you, young maiden, hear this lady," answered

Varney, taking advantage of the pause which the Countess had made in her

charge, more for lack of breath than for lack of matter--"you hear that

her heat only objects to me the course which our good lord, for the

purpose to keep certain matters secret, suggests in the very letter

which she holds in her hands."

Foster here attempted to interfere with a face of authority, which he

thought became the charge entrusted to him, "Nay, lady, I must needs say

you are over-hasty in this. Such deceit is not utterly to be condemned

when practised for a righteous end I and thus even the patriarch Abraham

feigned Sarah to be his sister when they went down to Egypt."

"Ay, sir," answered the Countess; "but God rebuked that deceit even in

the father of His chosen people, by the mouth of the heathen Pharaoh.

Out upon you, that will read Scripture only to copy those things which

are held out to us as warnings, not as examples!"

"But Sarah disputed not the will of her husband, an it be your

pleasure," said Foster, in reply, "but did as Abraham commanded, calling

herself his sister, that it might be well with her husband for her sake,

and that his soul might live because of her beauty."

"Now, so Heaven pardon me my useless anger," answered the Countess,

"thou art as daring a hypocrite as yonder fellow is an impudent

deceiver! Never will I believe that the noble Dudley gave countenance

to so dastardly, so dishonourable a plan. Thus I tread on his infamy, if

indeed it be, and thus destroy its remembrance for ever!"

So saying, she tore in pieces Leicester's letter, and stamped, in the

extremity of impatience, as if she would have annihilated the minute

fragments into which she had rent it.

"Bear witness," said Varney, collecting himself, "she hath torn my

lord's letter, in order to burden me with the scheme of his devising;

and although it promises nought but danger and trouble to me, she would

lay it to my charge, as if I had any purpose of mine own in it."

"Thou liest, thou treacherous slave!" said the Countess in spite of

Janet's attempts to keep her silent, in the sad foresight that her

vehemence might only furnish arms against herself--"thou liest," she

continued.--"Let me go, Janet--were it the last word I have to speak,

he lies. He had his own foul ends to seek; and broader he would have

displayed them had my passion permitted me to preserve the silence which

at first encouraged him to unfold his vile projects."

"Madam," said Varney, overwhelmed in spite of his effrontery, "I entreat

you to believe yourself mistaken."

"As soon will I believe light darkness," said the enraged Countess.

"Have I drunk of oblivion? Do I not remember former passages, which,

known to Leicester, had given thee the preferment of a gallows, instead

of the honour of his intimacy. I would I were a man but for five

minutes! It were space enough to make a craven like thee confess his

villainy. But go--begone! Tell thy master that when I take the foul

course to which such scandalous deceits as thou hast recommended on

his behalf must necessarily lead me, I will give him a rival something

worthy of the name. He shall not be supplanted by an ignominious lackey,

whose best fortune is to catch a gift of his master's last suit

of clothes ere it is threadbare, and who is only fit to seduce a

suburb-wench by the bravery of new roses in his master's old pantoufles.

Go, begone, sir! I scorn thee so much that I am ashamed to have been

angry with thee."

Varney left the room with a mute expression of rage, and was followed by

Foster, whose apprehension, naturally slow, was overpowered by the eager

and abundant discharge of indignation which, for the first time, he had

heard burst from the lips of a being who had seemed, till that moment,

too languid and too gentle to nurse an angry thought or utter an

intemperate expression. Foster, therefore, pursued Varney from place to

place, persecuting him with interrogatories, to which the other replied

not, until they were in the opposite side of the quadrangle, and in the

old library, with which the reader has already been made acquainted.

Here he turned round on his persevering follower, and thus addressed

him, in a tone tolerably equal, that brief walk having been sufficient

to give one so habituated to command his temper time to rally and

recover his presence of mind.

"Tony," he said, with his usual sneering laugh, "it avails not to deny

it. The Woman and the Devil, who, as thine oracle Holdforth will

confirm to thee, cheated man at the beginning, have this day proved more

powerful than my discretion. Yon termagant looked so tempting, and had

the art to preserve her countenance so naturally, while I communicated

my lord's message, that, by my faith, I thought I might say some little

thing for myself. She thinks she hath my head under her girdle now, but

she is deceived. Where is Doctor Alasco?"

"In his laboratory," answered Foster. "It is the hour he is spoken not

withal. We must wait till noon is past, or spoil his important--what

said I? important!--I would say interrupt his divine studies."

"Ay, he studies the devil's divinity," said Varney; "but when I want

him, one hour must suffice as well as another. Lead the way to his

pandemonium."

So spoke Varney, and with hasty and perturbed steps followed Foster,

who conducted him through private passages, many of which were

well-nigh ruinous, to the opposite side of the quadrangle, where, in a

subterranean apartment, now occupied by the chemist Alasco, one of the

Abbots of Abingdon, who had a turn for the occult sciences, had, much

to the scandal of his convent, established a laboratory, in which,

like other fools of the period, he spent much precious time, and money

besides, in the pursuit of the grand arcanum.

Anthony Foster paused before the door, which was scrupulously secured

within, and again showed a marked hesitation to disturb the sage in

his operations. But Varney, less scrupulous, roused him by knocking

and voice, until at length, slowly and reluctantly, the inmate of the

apartment undid the door. The chemist appeared, with his eyes bleared

with the heat and vapours of the stove or alembic over which he brooded

and the interior of his cell displayed the confused assemblage of

heterogeneous substances and extraordinary implements belonging to his

profession. The old man was muttering, with spiteful impatience, "Am I

for ever to be recalled to the affairs of earth from those of heaven?"

"To the affairs of hell," answered Varney, "for that is thy proper

element.--Foster, we need thee at our conference."

Foster slowly entered the room. Varney, following, barred the door, and

they betook themselves to secret council.

In the meanwhile, the Countess traversed the apartment, with shame and

anger contending on her lovely cheek.

"The villain," she said--"the cold-blooded, calculating slave!--But I

unmasked him, Janet--I made the snake uncoil all his folds before me,

and crawl abroad in his naked deformity; I suspended my resentment, at

the danger of suffocating under the effort, until he had let me see the

very bottom of a heart more foul than hell's darkest corner.--And thou,

Leicester, is it possible thou couldst bid me for a moment deny my

wedded right in thee, or thyself yield it to another?--But it is

impossible--the villain has lied in all.--Janet, I will not remain here

longer--I fear him--I fear thy father. I grieve to say it, Janet--but

I fear thy father, and, worst of all, this odious Varney, I will escape

from Cumnor."

"Alas! madam, whither would you fly, or by what means will you escape

from these walls?"

"I know not, Janet," said the unfortunate young lady, looking upwards!

and clasping her hands together, "I know not where I shall fly, or by

what means; but I am certain the God I have served will not abandon me

in this dreadful crisis, for I am in the hands of wicked men."

"Do not think so, dear lady," said Janet; "my father is stern and strict

in his temper, and severely true to his trust--but yet--"

At this moment Anthony Foster entered the apartment, bearing in his

hand a glass cup and a small flask. His manner was singular; for, while

approaching the Countess with the respect due to her rank, he had till

this time suffered to become visible, or had been unable to suppress,

the obdurate sulkiness of his natural disposition, which, as is usual

with those of his unhappy temper, was chiefly exerted towards those over

whom circumstances gave him control. But at present he showed nothing

of that sullen consciousness of authority which he was wont to conceal

under a clumsy affectation of civility and deference, as a ruffian hides

his pistols and bludgeon under his ill-fashioned gaberdine. And yet it

seemed as if his smile was more in fear than courtesy, and as if, while

he pressed the Countess to taste of the choice cordial, which should

refresh her spirits after her late alarm, he was conscious of meditating

some further injury. His hand trembled also, his voice faltered, and his

whole outward behaviour exhibited so much that was suspicious, that his

daughter Janet, after she had stood looking at him in astonishment for

some seconds, seemed at once to collect herself to execute some

hardy resolution, raised her head, assumed an attitude and gait of

determination and authority, and walking slowly betwixt her father and

her mistress, took the salver from the hand of the former, and said in

a low but marked and decided tone, "Father, I will fill for my noble

mistress, when such is her pleasure."

"Thou, my child?" said Foster, eagerly and apprehensively; "no, my

child--it is not THOU shalt render the lady this service."

"And why, I pray you," said Janet, "if it be fitting that the noble lady

should partake of the cup at all?"

"Why--why?" said the seneschal, hesitating, and then bursting into

passion as the readiest mode of supplying the lack of all other

reason--"why, because it is my pleasure, minion, that you should not!

Get you gone to the evening lecture."

"Now, as I hope to hear lecture again," replied Janet, "I will not go

thither this night, unless I am better assured of my mistress's safety.

Give me that flask, father"--and she took it from his reluctant hand,

while he resigned it as if conscience-struck. "And now," she said,

"father, that which shall benefit my mistress, cannot do ME prejudice.

Father, I drink to you."

Foster, without speaking a word, rushed on his daughter and wrested the

flask from her hand; then, as if embarrassed by what he had done, and

totally unable to resolve what he should do next, he stood with it in

his hand, one foot advanced and the other drawn back, glaring on his

daughter with a countenance in which rage, fear, and convicted villainy

formed a hideous combination.

"This is strange, my father," said Janet, keeping her eye fixed on his,

in the manner in which those who have the charge of lunatics are said to

overawe their unhappy patients; "will you neither let me serve my lady,

nor drink to her myself?"

The courage of the Countess sustained her through this dreadful scene,

of which the import was not the less obvious that it was not even hinted

at. She preserved even the rash carelessness of her temper, and though

her cheek had grown pale at the first alarm, her eye was calm and almost

scornful. "Will YOU taste this rare cordial, Master Foster? Perhaps you

will not yourself refuse to pledge us, though you permit not Janet to do

so. Drink, sir, I pray you."

"I will not," answered Foster.

"And for whom, then, is the precious beverage reserved, sir?" said the

Countess.

"For the devil, who brewed it!" answered Foster; and, turning on his

heel, he left the chamber.

Janet looked at her mistress with a countenance expressive in the

highest degree of shame, dismay, and sorrow.

"Do not weep for me, Janet," said the Countess kindly.

"No, madam," replied her attendant, in a voice broken by sobs, "it is

not for you I weep; it is for myself--it is for that unhappy man. Those

who are dishonoured before man--those who are condemned by God--have

cause to mourn; not those who are innocent! Farewell, madam!" she said

hastily assuming the mantle in which she was wont to go abroad.

"Do you leave me, Janet?" said her mistress--"desert me in such an evil

strait?"

"Desert you, madam!" exclaimed Janet; and running back to her mistress,

she imprinted a thousand kisses on her hand--"desert you I--may the Hope

of my trust desert me when I do so! No, madam; well you said the God you

serve will open you a path for deliverance. There is a way of escape. I

have prayed night and day for light, that I might see how to act betwixt

my duty to yonder unhappy man and that which I owe to you. Sternly and

fearfully that light has now dawned, and I must not shut the door which

God opens. Ask me no more. I will return in brief space."

So speaking, she wrapped herself in her mantle, and saying to the old

woman whom she passed in the outer room that she was going to evening

prayer, she left the house.

Meanwhile her father had reached once more the laboratory, where

he found the accomplices of his intended guilt. "Has the sweet bird

sipped?" said Varney, with half a smile; while the astrologer put the

same question with his eyes, but spoke not a word.

"She has not, nor she shall not from my hands," replied Foster; "would

you have me do murder in my daughter's presence?"

"Wert thou not told, thou sullen and yet faint-hearted slave," answered

Varney, with bitterness, "that no MURDER as thou callest it, with that

staring look and stammering tone, is designed in the matter? Wert thou

not told that a brief illness, such as woman puts on in very wantonness,

that she may wear her night-gear at noon, and lie on a settle when

she should mind her domestic business, is all here aimed at? Here is a

learned man will swear it to thee by the key of the Castle of Wisdom."

"I swear it," said Alasco, "that the elixir thou hast there in the flask

will not prejudice life! I swear it by that immortal and indestructible

quintessence of gold, which pervades every substance in nature, though

its secret existence can be traced by him only to whom Trismegistus

renders the key of the Cabala."

"An oath of force," said Varney. "Foster, thou wert worse than a pagan

to disbelieve it. Believe me, moreover, who swear by nothing but by my

own word, that if you be not conformable, there is no hope, no, not

a glimpse of hope, that this thy leasehold may be transmuted into a

copyhold. Thus, Alasco will leave your pewter artillery untransmigrated,

and I, honest Anthony, will still have thee for my tenant."

"I know not, gentlemen," said Foster, "where your designs tend to; but

in one thing I am bound up,--that, fall back fall edge, I will have one

in this place that may pray for me, and that one shall be my daughter.

I have lived ill, and the world has been too weighty with me; but she is

as innocent as ever she was when on her mother's lap, and she, at least,

shall have her portion in that happy City, whose walls are of pure gold,

and the foundations garnished with all manner of precious stones."

"Ay, Tony," said Varney, "that were a paradise to thy heart's

content.--Debate the matter with him, Doctor Alasco; I will be with you

anon."

So speaking, Varney arose, and taking the flask from the table, he left

the room.

"I tell thee, my son," said Alasco to Foster, as soon as Varney had

left them, "that whatever this bold and profligate railer may say of the

mighty science, in which, by Heaven's blessing, I have advanced so

far that I would not call the wisest of living artists my better or my

teacher--I say, howsoever yonder reprobate may scoff at things too holy

to be apprehended by men merely of carnal and evil thoughts, yet believe

that the city beheld by St. John, in that bright vision of the Christian

Apocalypse, that new Jerusalem, of which all Christian men hope to

partake, sets forth typically the discovery of the GRAND SECRET, whereby

the most precious and perfect of nature's works are elicited out of

her basest and most crude productions; just as the light and gaudy

butterfly, the most beautiful child of the summer's breeze, breaks forth

from the dungeon of a sordid chrysalis."

"Master Holdforth said nought of this exposition," said Foster

doubtfully; "and moreover, Doctor Alasco, the Holy Writ says that the

gold and precious stones of the Holy City are in no sort for those who

work abomination, or who frame lies."

"Well, my son," said the Doctor, "and what is your inference from

thence?"

"That those," said Foster, "who distil poisons, and administer them in

secrecy, can have no portion in those unspeakable riches."

"You are to distinguish, my son," replied the alchemist, "betwixt that

which is necessarily evil in its progress and in its end also, and that

which, being evil, is, nevertheless, capable of working forth good. If,

by the death of one person, the happy period shall be brought nearer

to us, in which all that is good shall be attained, by wishing its

presence--all that is evil escaped, by desiring its absence--in which

sickness, and pain, and sorrow shall be the obedient servants of human

wisdom, and made to fly at the slightest signal of a sage--in which that

which is now richest and rarest shall be within the compass of every one

who shall be obedient to the voice of wisdom--when the art of healing

shall be lost and absorbed in the one universal medicine when sages

shall become monarchs of the earth, and death itself retreat before

their frown,--if this blessed consummation of all things can be hastened

by the slight circumstance that a frail, earthly body, which must

needs partake corruption, shall be consigned to the grave a short space

earlier than in the course of nature, what is such a sacrifice to the

advancement of the holy Millennium?"

"Millennium is the reign of the Saints," said Foster, somewhat

doubtfully.

"Say it is the reign of the Sages, my son," answered Alasco; "or rather

the reign of Wisdom itself."

"I touched on the question with Master Holdforth last exercising night,"

said Foster; "but he says your doctrine is heterodox, and a damnable and

false exposition."

"He is in the bonds of ignorance, my son," answered Alasco, "and as yet

burning bricks in Egypt; or, at best, wandering in the dry desert of

Sinai. Thou didst ill to speak to such a man of such matters. I will,

however, give thee proof, and that shortly, which I will defy that

peevish divine to confute, though he should strive with me as the

magicians strove with Moses before King Pharaoh. I will do projection

in thy presence, my son,--in thy very presence--and thine eyes shall

witness the truth."

"Stick to that, learned sage," said Varney, who at this moment entered

the apartment; "if he refuse the testimony of thy tongue, yet how shall

he deny that of his own eyes?"

"Varney!" said the adept--"Varney already returned! Hast thou--" he

stopped short.

"Have I done mine errand, thou wouldst say?" replied Varney. "I have!

And thou," he added, showing more symptoms of interest than he had

hitherto exhibited, "art thou sure thou hast poured forth neither more

nor less than the just measure?"

"Ay," replied the alchemist, "as sure as men can be in these nice

proportions, for there is diversity of constitutions."

"Nay, then," said Varney, "I fear nothing. I know thou wilt not go a

step farther to the devil than thou art justly considered for--thou wert

paid to create illness, and wouldst esteem it thriftless prodigality to

do murder at the same price. Come, let us each to our chamber we shall

see the event to-morrow."

"What didst thou do to make her swallow it?" said Foster, shuddering.

"Nothing," answered Varney, "but looked on her with that aspect which

governs madmen, women, and children. They told me in St. Luke's Hospital

that I have the right look for overpowering a refractory patient. The

keepers made me their compliments on't; so I know how to win my bread

when my court-favour fails me."

"And art thou not afraid," said Foster, "lest the dose be

disproportioned?"

"If so," replied Varney, "she will but sleep the sounder, and the fear

of that shall not break my rest. Good night, my masters."

Anthony Foster groaned heavily, and lifted up his hands and eyes. The

alchemist intimated his purpose to continue some experiment of high

import during the greater part of the night, and the others separated to

their places of repose.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Now God be good to me in this wild pilgrimage!

All hope in human aid I cast behind me.

Oh, who would be a woman?--who that fool,

A weeping, pining, faithful, loving woman?

She hath hard measure still where she hopes kindest,

And all her bounties only make ingrates. LOVE'S PILGRIMAGE.

The summer evening was closed, and Janet, just when her longer stay

might have occasioned suspicion and inquiry in that zealous household,

returned to Cumnor Place, and hastened to the apartment in which she

had left her lady. She found her with her head resting on her arms, and

these crossed upon a table which stood before her. As Janet came in, she

neither looked up nor stirred.

Her faithful attendant ran to her mistress with the speed of lightning,

and rousing her at the same time with her hand, conjured the Countess,

in the most earnest manner, to look up and say what thus affected

her. The unhappy lady raised her head accordingly, and looking on her

attendant with a ghastly eye, and cheek as pale as clay--"Janet," she

said, "I have drunk it."

"God be praised!" said Janet hastily--"I mean, God be praised that it is

no worse; the potion will not harm you. Rise, shake this lethargy from

your limbs, and this despair from your mind."

"Janet," repeated the Countess again, "disturb me not--leave me at

peace--let life pass quietly. I am poisoned."

"You are not, my dearest lady," answered the maiden eagerly. "What you

have swallowed cannot injure you, for the antidote has been taken before

it, and I hastened hither to tell you that the means of escape are open

to you."

"Escape!" exclaimed the lady, as she raised herself hastily in her

chair, while light returned to her eye and life to her cheek; "but ah!

Janet, it comes too late."

"Not so, dearest lady. Rise, take mine arm, walk through the apartment;

let not fancy do the work of poison! So; feel you not now that you are

possessed of the full use of your limbs?"

"The torpor seems to diminish," said the Countess, as, supported by

Janet, she walked to and fro in the apartment; "but is it then so, and

have I not swallowed a deadly draught? Varney was here since thou wert

gone, and commanded me, with eyes in which I read my fate, to swallow

yon horrible drug. O Janet! it must be fatal; never was harmless draught

served by such a cup-bearer!"

"He did not deem it harmless, I fear," replied the maiden; "but God

confounds the devices of the wicked. Believe me, as I swear by the dear

Gospel in which we trust, your life is safe from his practice. Did you

not debate with him?"

"The house was silent," answered the lady--"thou gone--no other but he

in the chamber--and he capable of every crime. I did but stipulate he

would remove his hateful presence, and I drank whatever he offered.--But

you spoke of escape, Janet; can I be so happy?"

"Are you strong enough to bear the tidings, and make the effort?" said

the maiden.

"Strong!" answered the Countess. "Ask the hind, when the fangs of the

deerhound are stretched to gripe her, if she is strong enough to spring

over a chasm. I am equal to every effort that may relieve me from this

place."

"Hear me, then," said Janet. "One whom I deem an assured friend of yours

has shown himself to me in various disguises, and sought speech of me,

which--for my mind was not clear on the matter until this evening--I

have ever declined. He was the pedlar who brought you goods--the

itinerant hawker who sold me books; whenever I stirred abroad I was sure

to see him. The event of this night determined me to speak with him.

He awaits even now at the postern gate of the park with means for your

flight.--But have you strength of body?--have you courage of mind?--can

you undertake the enterprise?"

"She that flies from death," said the lady, "finds strength of body--she

that would escape from shame lacks no strength of mind. The thoughts of

leaving behind me the villain who menaces both my life and honour would

give me strength to rise from my deathbed."

"In God's name, then, lady," said Janet, "I must bid you adieu, and to

God's charge I must commit you!"

"Will you not fly with me, then, Janet?" said the Countess, anxiously.

"Am I to lose thee? Is this thy faithful service?"

"Lady, I would fly with you as willingly as bird ever fled from cage,

but my doing so would occasion instant discovery and pursuit. I must

remain, and use means to disguise the truth for some time. May Heaven

pardon the falsehood, because of the necessity!"

"And am I then to travel alone with this stranger?" said the lady.

"Bethink thee, Janet, may not this prove some deeper and darker scheme

to separate me perhaps from you, who are my only friend?"

"No, madam, do not suppose it," answered Janet readily; "the youth is an

honest youth in his purpose to you, and a friend to Master Tressilian,

under whose direction he is come hither."

"If he be a friend of Tressilian," said the Countess, "I will commit

myself to his charge as to that of an angel sent from heaven; for than

Tressilian never breathed mortal man more free of whatever was base,

false, or selfish. He forgot himself whenever he could be of use to

others. Alas! and how was he requited?"

With eager haste they collected the few necessaries which it was thought

proper the Countess should take with her, and which Janet, with speed

and dexterity, formed into a small bundle, not forgetting to add such

ornaments of intrinsic value as came most readily in her way, and

particularly a casket of jewels, which she wisely judged might prove of

service in some future emergency. The Countess of Leicester next changed

her dress for one which Janet usually wore upon any brief journey, for

they judged it necessary to avoid every external distinction which might

attract attention. Ere these preparations were fully made, the moon

had arisen in the summer heaven, and all in the mansion had betaken

themselves to rest, or at least to the silence and retirement of their

chambers.

There was no difficulty anticipated in escaping, whether from the house

or garden, provided only they could elude observation. Anthony Foster

had accustomed himself to consider his daughter as a conscious sinner

might regard a visible guardian angel, which, notwithstanding his guilt,

continued to hover around him; and therefore his trust in her knew no

bounds. Janet commanded her own motions during the daytime, and had a

master-key which opened the postern door of the park, so that she could

go to the village at pleasure, either upon the household affairs, which

were entirely confided to her management, or to attend her devotions

at the meeting-house of her sect. It is true the daughter of Foster was

thus liberally entrusted under the solemn condition that she should not

avail herself of these privileges to do anything inconsistent with the

safe-keeping of the Countess; for so her residence at Cumnor Place

had been termed, since she began of late to exhibit impatience of the

restrictions to which she was subjected. Nor is there reason to suppose

that anything short of the dreadful suspicions which the scene of that

evening had excited could have induced Janet to violate her word or

deceive her father's confidence. But from what she had witnessed, she

now conceived herself not only justified, but imperatively called upon,

to make her lady's safety the principal object of her care, setting all

other considerations aside.

The fugitive Countess with her guide traversed with hasty steps the

broken and interrupted path, which had once been an avenue, now totally

darkened by the boughs of spreading trees which met above their head,

and now receiving a doubtful and deceiving light from the beams of the

moon, which penetrated where the axe had made openings in the wood.

Their path was repeatedly interrupted by felled trees, or the large

boughs which had been left on the ground till time served to make them

into fagots and billets. The inconvenience and difficulty attending

these interruptions, the breathless haste of the first part of their

route, the exhausting sensations of hope and fear, so much affected the

Countess's strength, that Janet was forced to propose that they should

pause for a few minutes to recover breath and spirits. Both therefore

stood still beneath the shadow of a huge old gnarled oak-tree, and both

naturally looked back to the mansion which they had left behind them,

whose long, dark front was seen in the gloomy distance, with its huge

stacks of chimneys, turrets, and clock-house, rising above the line

of the roof, and definedly visible against the pure azure blue of the

summer sky. One light only twinkled from the extended and shadowy mass,

and it was placed so low that it rather seemed to glimmer from the

ground in front of the mansion than from one of the windows. The

Countess's terror was awakened. "They follow us!" she said, pointing out

to Janet the light which thus alarmed her.

Less agitated than her mistress, Janet perceived that the gleam was

stationary, and informed the Countess, in a whisper, that the light

proceeded from the solitary cell in which the alchemist pursued his

occult experiments. "He is of those," she added, "who sit up and watch

by night that they may commit iniquity. Evil was the chance which sent

hither a man whose mixed speech of earthly wealth and unearthly or

superhuman knowledge hath in it what does so especially captivate my

poor father. Well spoke the good Master Holdforth--and, methought,

not without meaning that those of our household should find therein a

practical use. 'There be those,' he said, 'and their number is legion,

who will rather, like the wicked Ahab, listen to the dreams of the false

prophet Zedekiah, than to the words of him by whom the Lord has spoken.'

And he further insisted--'Ah, my brethren, there be many Zedekiahs among

you--men that promise you the light of their carnal knowledge, so you

will surrender to them that of your heavenly understanding. What are

they better than the tyrant Naas, who demanded the right eye of those

who were subjected to him?' And further he insisted--"

It is uncertain how long the fair Puritan's memory might have supported

her in the recapitulation of Master Holdforth's discourse; but the

Countess now interrupted her, and assured her she was so much recovered

that she could now reach the postern without the necessity of a second

delay.

They set out accordingly, and performed the second part of their journey

with more deliberation, and of course more easily, than the first hasty

commencement. This gave them leisure for reflection; and Janet now,

for the first time, ventured to ask her lady which way she proposed to

direct her flight. Receiving no immediate answer--for, perhaps, in the

confusion of her mind this very obvious subject of deliberation had

not occurred to the Countess---Janet ventured to add, "Probably to your

father's house, where you are sure of safety and protection?"

"No, Janet," said the lady mournfully; "I left Lidcote Hall while

my heart was light and my name was honourable, and I will not return

thither till my lord's permission and public acknowledgment of our

marriage restore me to my native home with all the rank and honour which

he has bestowed on me."

"And whither will you, then, madam?" said Janet.

"To Kenilworth, girl," said the Countess, boldly and freely. "I will see

these revels--these princely revels--the preparation for which makes the

land ring from side to side. Methinks, when the Queen of England feasts

within my husband's halls, the Countess of Leicester should be no

unbeseeming guest."

"I pray God you may be a welcome one!" said Janet hastily.

"You abuse my situation, Janet," said the Countess, angrily, "and you

forget your own."

"I do neither, dearest madam," said the sorrowful maiden; "but have you

forgotten that the noble Earl has given such strict charges to keep

your marriage secret, that he may preserve his court-favour? and can you

think that your sudden appearance at his castle, at such a juncture, and

in such a presence, will be acceptable to him?"

"Thou thinkest I would disgrace him," said the Countess; "nay, let go my

arm, I can walk without aid and work without counsel."

"Be not angry with me, lady," said Janet meekly, "and let me still

support you; the road is rough, and you are little accustomed to walk in

darkness."

"If you deem me not so mean as may disgrace my husband," said the

Countess, in the same resentful tone, "you suppose my Lord of Leicester

capable of abetting, perhaps of giving aim and authority to, the base

proceedings of your father and Varney, whose errand I will do to the

good Earl."

"For God's sake, madam, spare my father in your report," said Janet;

"let my services, however poor, be some atonement for his errors!"

"I were most unjust, dearest Janet, were it otherwise," said the

Countess, resuming at once the fondness and confidence of her manner

towards her faithful attendant, "No, Janet, not a word of mine shall do

your father prejudice. But thou seest, my love, I have no desire but

to throw my self on my husband's protection. I have left the abode he

assigned for me, because of the villainy of the persons by whom I was

surrounded; but I will disobey his commands in no other particular. I

will appeal to him alone--I will be protected by him alone; to no other,

than at his pleasure, have I or will I communicate the secret union

which combines our hearts and our destinies. I will see him, and receive

from his own lips the directions for my future conduct. Do not argue

against my resolution, Janet; you will only confirm me in it. And to own

the truth, I am resolved to know my fate at once, and from my husband's

own mouth; and to seek him at Kenilworth is the surest way to attain my

purpose."

While Janet hastily revolved in her mind the difficulties and

uncertainties attendant on the unfortunate lady's situation, she was

inclined to alter her first opinion, and to think, upon the whole, that

since the Countess had withdrawn herself from the retreat in which she

had been placed by her husband, it was her first duty to repair to his

presence, and possess him with the reasons for such conduct. She knew

what importance the Earl attached to the concealment of their marriage,

and could not but own, that by taking any step to make it public

without his permission, the Countess would incur, in a high degree, the

indignation of her husband. If she retired to her father's house without

an explicit avowal of her rank, her situation was likely greatly to

prejudice her character; and if she made such an avowal, it might

occasion an irreconcilable breach with her husband. At Kenilworth,

again, she might plead her cause with her husband himself, whom Janet,

though distrusting him more than the Countess did, believed incapable

of being accessory to the base and desperate means which his dependants,

from whose power the lady was now escaping, might resort to, in order to

stifle her complaints of the treatment she had received at their hands.

But at the worst, and were the Earl himself to deny her justice and

protection, still at Kenilworth, if she chose to make her wrongs public,

the Countess might have Tressilian for her advocate, and the Queen for

her judge; for so much Janet had learned in her short conference with

Wayland. She was, therefore, on the whole, reconciled to her lady's

proposal of going towards Kenilworth, and so expressed herself;

recommending, however, to the Countess the utmost caution in making her

arrival known to her husband.

"Hast thou thyself been cautious, Janet?" said the Countess; "this

guide, in whom I must put my confidence, hast thou not entrusted to him

the secret of my condition?"

"From me he has learned nothing," said Janet; "nor do I think that he

knows more than what the public in general believe of your situation."

"And what is that?" said the lady.

"That you left your father's house--but I shall offend you again if I go

on," said Janet, interrupting herself.

"Nay, go on," said the Countess; "I must learn to endure the evil report

which my folly has brought upon me. They think, I suppose, that I have

left my father's house to follow lawless pleasure. It is an error which

will soon be removed--indeed it shall, for I will live with spotless

fame, or I shall cease to live.--I am accounted, then, the paramour of

my Leicester?"

"Most men say of Varney," said Janet; "yet some call him only the

convenient cloak of his master's pleasures; for reports of the profuse

expense in garnishing yonder apartments have secretly gone abroad, and

such doings far surpass the means of Varney. But this latter opinion is

little prevalent; for men dare hardly even hint suspicion when so high a

name is concerned, lest the Star Chamber should punish them for scandal

of the nobility."

"They do well to speak low," said the Countess, "who would mention the

illustrious Dudley as the accomplice of such a wretch as Varney.--We

have reached the postern. Ah! Janet, I must bid thee farewell! Weep not,

my good girl," said she, endeavouring to cover her own reluctance to

part with her faithful attendant under an attempt at playfulness; "and

against we meet again, reform me, Janet, that precise ruff of thine for

an open rabatine of lace and cut work, that will let men see thou hast

a fair neck; and that kirtle of Philippine chency, with that bugle lace

which befits only a chambermaid, into three-piled velvet and cloth of

gold--thou wilt find plenty of stuffs in my chamber, and I freely bestow

them on you. Thou must be brave, Janet; for though thou art now but

the attendant of a distressed and errant lady, who is both nameless and

fameless, yet, when we meet again, thou must be dressed as becomes the

gentlewoman nearest in love and in service to the first Countess in

England."

"Now, may God grant it, dear lady!" said Janet--"not that I may go

with gayer apparel, but that we may both wear our kirtles over lighter

hearts."

By this time the lock of the postern door had, after some hard

wrenching, yielded to the master-key; and the Countess, not without

internal shuddering, saw herself beyond the walls which her husband's

strict commands had assigned to her as the boundary of her walks.

Waiting with much anxiety for their appearance, Wayland Smith stood

at some distance, shrouding himself behind a hedge which bordered the

high-road.

"Is all safe?" said Janet to him anxiously, as he approached them with

caution.

"All," he replied; "but I have been unable to procure a horse for the

lady. Giles Gosling, the cowardly hilding, refused me one on any terms

whatever, lest, forsooth, he should suffer. But no matter; she must

ride on my palfrey, and I must walk by her side until I come by another

horse. There will be no pursuit, if you, pretty Mistress Janet, forget

not thy lesson."

"No more than the wise widow of Tekoa forgot the words which Joab put

into her mouth," answered Janet. "Tomorrow, I say that my lady is unable

to rise."

"Ay; and that she hath aching and heaviness of the head a throbbing at

the heart, and lists not to be disturbed. Fear not; they will take the

hint, and trouble thee with few questions--they understand the disease."

"But," said the lady, "My absence must be soon discovered, and they

will murder her in revenge. I will rather return than expose her to such

danger."

"Be at ease on my account, madam," said Janet; "I would you were as

sure of receiving the favour you desire from those to whom you must make

appeal, as I am that my father, however angry, will suffer no harm to

befall me."

The Countess was now placed by Wayland upon his horse, around the saddle

of which he had placed his cloak, so folded as to make her a commodious

seat.

"Adieu, and may the blessing of God wend with you!" said Janet, again

kissing her mistress's hand, who returned her benediction with a

mute caress. They then tore themselves asunder, and Janet, addressing

Wayland, exclaimed, "May Heaven deal with you at your need, as you are

true or false to this most injured and most helpless lady!"

"Amen! dearest Janet," replied Wayland; "and believe me, I will so

acquit myself of my trust as may tempt even your pretty eyes, saintlike

as they are, to look less scornfully on me when we next meet."

The latter part of this adieu was whispered into Janet's ear and

although she made no reply to it directly, yet her manner, influenced,

no doubt, by her desire to leave every motive in force which could

operate towards her mistress's safety, did not discourage the hope which

Wayland's words expressed. She re-entered the postern door, and locked

it behind her; while, Wayland taking the horse's bridle in his hand,

and walking close by its head, they began in silence their dubious and

moonlight journey.

Although Wayland Smith used the utmost dispatch which he could make,

yet this mode of travelling was so slow, that when morning began to dawn

through the eastern mist, he found himself no farther than about ten

miles distant from Cumnor. "Now, a plague upon all smooth-spoken

hosts!" said Wayland, unable longer to suppress his mortification and

uneasiness. "Had the false loon, Giles Gosling, but told me plainly two

days since that I was to reckon nought upon him, I had shifted better

for myself. But your hosts have such a custom of promising whatever is

called for that it is not till the steed is to be shod you find they are

out of iron. Had I but known, I could have made twenty shifts; nay, for

that matter, and in so good a cause, I would have thought little to have

prigged a prancer from the next common--it had but been sending back

the brute to the headborough. The farcy and the founders confound every

horse in the stables of the Black Bear!"

The lady endeavoured to comfort her guide, observing that the dawn would

enable him to make more speed.

"True, madam," he replied; "but then it will enable other folk to take

note of us, and that may prove an ill beginning of our journey. I

had not cared a spark from anvil about the matter had we been further

advanced on our way. But this Berkshire has been notoriously haunted,

ever since I knew the country, with that sort of malicious elves who

sit up late and rise early for no other purpose than to pry into other

folk's affairs. I have been endangered by them ere now. But do not

fear," he added, "good madam; for wit, meeting with opportunity, will

not miss to find a salve for every sore."

The alarms of her guide made more impression on the Countess's mind than

the comfort which he judged fit to administer along with it. She looked

anxiously around her, and as the shadows withdrew from the landscape,

and the heightening glow of the eastern sky promised the speedy rise of

the sun, expected at every turn that the increasing light would expose

them to the view of the vengeful pursuers, or present some dangerous

and insurmountable obstacle to the prosecution of their journey. Wayland

Smith perceived her uneasiness, and, displeased with himself for having

given her cause of alarm, strode on with affected alacrity, now talking

to the horse as one expert in the language of the stable, now whistling

to himself low and interrupted snatches of tunes, and now assuring

the lady there was no danger, while at the same time he looked sharply

around to see that there was nothing in sight which might give the

lie to his words while they were issuing from his mouth. Thus did

they journey on, until an unexpected incident gave them the means of

continuing their pilgrimage with more speed and convenience.

CHAPTER XXIV.

RICHARD. A horse!--A horse!--my kingdom for a horse!

CATESBY......My lord, I'll help you to a horse. --RICHARD III.

Our travellers were in the act of passing a small thicket of trees close

by the roadside, when the first living being presented himself whom

they had seen since their departure from Cumnor Place. This was a stupid

lout, seemingly a farmer's boy, in a grey jerkin, with his head bare,

his hose about his heels, and huge startups upon his feet. He held by

the bridle what of all things they most wanted--a palfrey, namely, with

a side-saddle, and all other garniture for a woman's mounting; and he

hailed Wayland Smith with, "Zur, be ye zure the party?"

"Ay, that I be, my lad," answered Wayland, without an instant's

hesitation; and it must be owned that consciences trained in a stricter

school of morality might have given way to an occasion so tempting.

While he spoke, he caught the rein out of the boy's hand, and almost at

the same time helped down the Countess from his own horse, and aided

her to mount on that which chance had thus presented for her acceptance.

Indeed, so naturally did the whole take place, that the Countess, as it

afterwards appeared, never suspected but that the horse had been

placed there to meet them by the precaution of the guide or some of his

friends.

The lad, however, who was thus hastily dispossessed of his charge, began

to stare hard, and scratch his head, as if seized with some qualms of

conscience for delivering up the animal on such brief explanation. "I

be right zure thou be'st the party," said he, muttering to himself, "but

thou shouldst ha zaid BEANS, thou knawest."

"Ay, ay," said Wayland, speaking at a venture; "and thou BACON, thou

knowest."

"Noa, noa," said the lad; "bide ye--bide ye--it was PEAS a should ha

said."

"Well, well," answered Wayland, "Peas be it, a God's name! though Bacon

were the better password."

And being by this time mounted on his own horse, he caught the rein of

the palfrey from the uncertain hold of the hesitating young boor, flung

him a small piece of money, and made amends for lost time by riding

briskly off without further parley. The lad was still visible from the

hill up which they were riding, and Wayland, as he looked back, beheld

him standing with his fingers in his hair as immovable as a guide-post,

and his head turned in the direction in which they were escaping from

him. At length, just as they topped the hill, he saw the clown stoop to

lift up the silver groat which his benevolence had imparted. "Now this

is what I call a Godsend," said Wayland; "this is a bonny, well-ridden

bit of a going thing, and it will carry us so far till we get you as

well mounted, and then we will send it back time enough to satisfy the

Hue and Cry."

But he was deceived in his expectations; and fate, which seemed at first

to promise so fairly, soon threatened to turn the incident which he thus

gloried in into the cause of their utter ruin.

They had not ridden a short mile from the place where they left the

lad before they heard a man's voice shouting on the wind behind them,

"Robbery! robbery!--Stop thief!" and similar exclamations, which

Wayland's conscience readily assured him must arise out of the

transaction to which he had been just accessory.

"I had better have gone barefoot all my life," he said; "it is the Hue

and Cry, and I am a lost man. Ah! Wayland, Wayland, many a time thy

father said horse-flesh would be the death of thee. Were I once safe

among the horse-coursers in Smithfield, or Turnbull Street, they should

have leave to hang me as high as St. Paul's if I e'er meddled more with

nobles, knights, or gentlewomen."

Amidst these dismal reflections, he turned his head repeatedly to see by

whom he was chased, and was much comforted when he could only discover

a single rider, who was, however, well mounted, and came after them at

a speed which left them no chance of escaping, even had the lady's

strength permitted her to ride as fast as her palfrey might have been

able to gallop.

"There may be fair play betwixt us, sure," thought Wayland, "where there

is but one man on each side, and yonder fellow sits on his horse more

like a monkey than a cavalier. Pshaw! if it come to the worse, it will

be easy unhorsing him. Nay, 'snails! I think his horse will take the

matter in his own hand, for he has the bridle betwixt his teeth. Oons,

what care I for him?" said he, as the pursuer drew yet nearer; "it is

but the little animal of a mercer from Abingdon, when all is over."

Even so it was, as the experienced eye of Wayland had descried at a

distance. For the valiant mercer's horse, which was a beast of mettle,

feeling himself put to his speed, and discerning a couple of horses

riding fast at some hundred yards' distance before him, betook himself

to the road with such alacrity as totally deranged the seat of his

rider, who not only came up with, but passed at full gallop, those

whom he had been pursuing, pulling the reins with all his might, and

ejaculating, "Stop! stop!" an interjection which seemed rather to

regard his own palfrey than what seamen call "the chase." With the same

involuntary speed, he shot ahead (to use another nautical phrase) about

a furlong ere he was able to stop and turn his horse, and then rode back

towards our travellers, adjusting, as well as he could, his disordered

dress, resettling himself in the saddle, and endeavouring to substitute

a bold and martial frown for the confusion and dismay which sat upon his

visage during his involuntary career.

Wayland had just time to caution the lady not to be alarmed, adding,

"This fellow is a gull, and I will use him as such."

When the mercer had recovered breath and audacity enough to confront

them, he ordered Wayland, in a menacing tone, to deliver up his palfrey.

"How?" said the smith, in King Cambyses' vein, "are we commanded to

stand and deliver on the king's highway? Then out, Excalibur, and tell

this knight of prowess that dire blows must decide between us!"

"Haro and help, and hue and cry, every true man!" said the mercer. "I am

withstood in seeking to recover mine own."

"Thou swearest thy gods in vain, foul paynim," said Wayland, "for I

will through with mine purpose were death at the end on't. Nevertheless,

know, thou false man of frail cambric and ferrateen, that I am he, even

the pedlar, whom thou didst boast to meet on Maiden Castle moor, and

despoil of his pack; wherefore betake thee to thy weapons presently."

"I spoke but in jest, man," said Goldthred; "I am an honest shopkeeper

and citizen, who scorns to leap forth on any man from behind a hedge."

"Then, by my faith, most puissant mercer," answered Wayland, "I am sorry

for my vow, which was, that wherever I met thee I would despoil thee of

thy palfrey, and bestow it upon my leman, unless thou couldst defend it

by blows of force. But the vow is passed and registered, and all I

can do for thee is to leave the horse at Donnington, in the nearest

hostelry."

"But I tell thee, friend," said the mercer, "it is the very horse on

which I was this day to carry Jane Thackham, of Shottesbrok, as far as

the parish church yonder, to become Dame Goldthred. She hath jumped out

of the shot-window of old Gaffer Thackham's grange; and lo ye, yonder

she stands at the place where she should have met the palfrey, with

her camlet riding-cloak and ivory-handled whip, like a picture of Lot's

wife. I pray you, in good terms, let me have back the palfrey."

"Grieved am I," said Wayland, "as much for the fair damsel as for thee,

most noble imp of muslin. But vows must have their course; thou wilt

find the palfrey at the Angel yonder at Donnington. It is all I may do

for thee with a safe conscience."

"To the devil with thy conscience!" said the dismayed mercer. "Wouldst

thou have a bride walk to church on foot?"

"Thou mayest take her on thy crupper, Sir Goldthred," answered Wayland;

"it will take down thy steed's mettle."

"And how if you--if you forget to leave my horse, as you propose?" said

Goldthred, not without hesitation, for his soul was afraid within him.

"My pack shall be pledged for it--yonder it lies with Giles Gosling,

in his chamber with the damasked leathern hangings, stuffed full with

velvet, single, double, treble-piled--rash-taffeta, and parapa--shag,

damask, and mocado, plush, and grogram--"

"Hold! hold!" exclaimed the mercer; "nay, if there be, in truth and

sincerity, but the half of these wares--but if ever I trust bumpkin with

bonny Bayard again!"

"As you list for that, good Master Goldthred, and so good morrow to

you--and well parted," he added, riding on cheerfully with the lady,

while the discountenanced mercer rode back much slower than he came,

pondering what excuse he should make to the disappointed bride, who

stood waiting for her gallant groom in the midst of the king's highway.

"Methought," said the lady, as they rode on, "yonder fool stared at me

as if he had some remembrance of me; yet I kept my muffler as high as I

might."

"If I thought so," said Wayland, "I would ride back and cut him over the

pate; there would be no fear of harming his brains, for he never had

so much as would make pap to a sucking gosling. We must now push on,

however, and at Donnington we will leave the oaf's horse, that he may

have no further temptation to pursue us, and endeavour to assume such a

change of shape as may baffle his pursuit if he should persevere in it."

The travellers reached Donnington without further alarm, where it became

matter of necessity that the Countess should enjoy two or three hours'

repose, during which Wayland disposed himself, with equal address and

alacrity, to carry through those measures on which the safety of their

future journey seemed to depend.

Exchanging his pedlar's gaberdine for a smock-frock, he carried the

palfrey of Goldthred to the Angel Inn, which was at the other end of the

village from that where our travellers had taken up their quarters. In

the progress of the morning, as he travelled about his other business,

he saw the steed brought forth and delivered to the cutting mercer

himself, who, at the head of a valorous posse of the Hue and Cry, came

to rescue, by force of arms, what was delivered to him without any

other ransom than the price of a huge quantity of ale, drunk out by his

assistants, thirsty, it would seem, with their walk, and concerning

the price of which Master Goldthred had a fierce dispute with the

headborough, whom he had summoned to aid him in raising the country.

Having made this act of prudent as well as just restitution, Wayland

procured such change of apparel for the lady, as well as himself, as

gave them both the appearance of country people of the better class; it

being further resolved, that in order to attract the less observation,

she should pass upon the road for the sister of her guide. A good but

not a gay horse, fit to keep pace with his own, and gentle enough for

a lady's use, completed the preparations for the journey; for making

which, and for other expenses, he had been furnished with sufficient

funds by Tressilian. And thus, about noon, after the Countess had been

refreshed by the sound repose of several hours, they resumed their

journey, with the purpose of making the best of their way to Kenilworth,

by Coventry and Warwick. They were not, however, destined to travel far

without meeting some cause of apprehension.

It is necessary to premise that the landlord of the inn had informed

them that a jovial party, intended, as he understood, to present some

of the masques or mummeries which made a part of the entertainment with

which the Queen was usually welcomed on the royal Progresses, had left

the village of Donnington an hour or two before them in order to

proceed to Kenilworth. Now it had occurred to Wayland that, by attaching

themselves in some sort to this group as soon as they should overtake

them on the road, they would be less likely to attract notice than if

they continued to travel entirely by themselves. He communicated his

idea to the Countess, who, only anxious to arrive at Kenilworth without

interruption, left him free to choose the manner in which this was to

be accomplished. They pressed forward their horses, therefore, with the

purpose of overtaking the party of intended revellers, and making the

journey in their company; and had just seen the little party, consisting

partly of riders, partly of people on foot, crossing the summit of a

gentle hill, at about half a mile's distance, and disappearing on

the other side, when Wayland, who maintained the most circumspect

observation of all that met his eye in every direction, was aware that

a rider was coming up behind them on a horse of uncommon action,

accompanied by a serving-man, whose utmost efforts were unable to keep

up with his master's trotting hackney, and who, therefore, was fain

to follow him at a hand gallop. Wayland looked anxiously back at these

horsemen, became considerably disturbed in his manner, looked back

again, and became pale, as he said to the lady, "That is Richard

Varney's trotting gelding; I would know him among a thousand nags. This

is a worse business than meeting the mercer."

"Draw your sword," answered the lady, "and pierce my bosom with it,

rather than I should fall into his hands!"

"I would rather by a thousand times," answered Wayland, "pass it through

his body, or even mine own. But to say truth, fighting is not my best

point, though I can look on cold iron like another when needs must be.

And indeed, as for my sword--(put on, I pray you)--it is a poor Provant

rapier, and I warrant you he has a special Toledo. He has a serving-man,

too, and I think it is the drunken ruffian Lambourne! upon the horse on

which men say--(I pray you heartily to put on)--he did the great robbery

of the west country grazier. It is not that I fear either Varney or

Lambourne in a good cause--(your palfrey will go yet faster if you urge

him)--but yet--(nay, I pray you let him not break off into a gallop,

lest they should see we fear them, and give chase--keep him only at the

full trot)--but yet, though I fear them not, I would we were well rid

of them, and that rather by policy than by violence. Could we once reach

the party before us, we may herd among them, and pass unobserved, unless

Varney be really come in express pursuit of us, and then, happy man be

his dole!"

While he thus spoke, he alternately urged and restrained his horse,

desirous to maintain the fleetest pace that was consistent with the

idea of an ordinary journey on the road, but to avoid such rapidity of

movement as might give rise to suspicion that they were flying.

At such a pace they ascended the gentle hill we have mentioned, and

looking from the top, had the pleasure to see that the party which had

left Donnington before them were in the little valley or bottom on the

other side, where the road was traversed by a rivulet, beside which was

a cottage or two. In this place they seemed to have made a pause, which

gave Wayland the hope of joining them, and becoming a part of their

company, ere Varney should overtake them. He was the more anxious, as

his companion, though she made no complaints, and expressed no fear,

began to look so deadly pale that he was afraid she might drop from her

horse. Notwithstanding this symptom of decaying strength, she pushed on

her palfrey so briskly that they joined the party in the bottom of the

valley ere Varney appeared on the top of the gentle eminence which they

had descended.

They found the company to which they meant to associate themselves in

great disorder. The women with dishevelled locks, and looks of great

importance, ran in and out of one of the cottages, and the men stood

around holding the horses, and looking silly enough, as is usual in

cases where their assistance is not wanted.

Wayland and his charge paused, as if out of curiosity, and then

gradually, without making any inquiries, or being asked any questions,

they mingled with the group, as if they had always made part of it.

They had not stood there above five minutes, anxiously keeping as much

to the side of the road as possible, so as to place the other travellers

betwixt them and Varney, when Lord Leicester's master of the horse,

followed by Lambourne, came riding fiercely down the hill, their horses'

flanks and the rowels of their spurs showing bloody tokens of the rate

at which they travelled. The appearance of the stationary group around

the cottages, wearing their buckram suits in order to protect their

masking dresses, having their light cart for transporting their scenery,

and carrying various fantastic properties in their hands for the more

easy conveyance, let the riders at once into the character and purpose

of the company.

"You are revellers," said Varney, "designing for Kenilworth?"

"RECTE QUIDEM, DOMINE SPECTATISSIME," answered one of the party.

"And why the devil stand you here?" said Varney, "when your utmost

dispatch will but bring you to Kenilworth in time? The Queen dines at

Warwick to-morrow, and you loiter here, ye knaves."

"I very truth, sir," said a little, diminutive urchin, wearing a vizard

with a couple of sprouting horns of an elegant scarlet hue, having,

moreover, a black serge jerkin drawn close to his body by lacing,

garnished with red stockings, and shoes so shaped as to resemble cloven

feet--"in very truth, sir, and you are in the right on't. It is my

father the Devil, who, being taken in labour, has delayed our present

purpose, by increasing our company with an imp too many."

"The devil he has!" answered Varney, whose laugh, however, never

exceeded a sarcastic smile.

"It is even as the juvenal hath said," added the masker who spoke first;

"Our major devil--for this is but our minor one--is even now at LUCINA,

FER OPEM, within that very TUGURIUM."

"By Saint George, or rather by the Dragon, who may be a kinsman of the

fiend in the straw, a most comical chance!" said Varney. "How sayest

thou, Lambourne, wilt thou stand godfather for the nonce? If the devil

were to choose a gossip, I know no one more fit for the office."

"Saving always when my betters are in presence," said Lambourne,

with the civil impudence of a servant who knows his services to be so

indispensable that his jest will be permitted to pass muster.

"And what is the name of this devil, or devil's dam, who has timed her

turns so strangely?" said Varney. "We can ill afford to spare any of our

actors."

"GAUDET NOMINE SIBYLLAE," said the first speaker; "she is called Sibyl

Laneham, wife of Master Robert Laneham--"

"Clerk to the Council-chamber door," said Varney; "why, she is

inexcusable, having had experience how to have ordered her matters

better. But who were those, a man and a woman, I think, who rode so

hastily up the hill before me even now? Do they belong to your company?"

Wayland was about to hazard a reply to this alarming inquiry, when the

little diablotin again thrust in his oar.

"So please you," he said, coming close up to Varney, and speaking so as

not to be overheard by his companions, "the man was our devil major, who

has tricks enough to supply the lack of a hundred such as Dame Laneham;

and the woman, if you please, is the sage person whose assistance is

most particularly necessary to our distressed comrade."

"Oh, what! you have got the wise woman, then?" said Varney. "Why, truly,

she rode like one bound to a place where she was needed. And you have a

spare limb of Satan, besides, to supply the place of Mistress Laneham?"

"Ay, sir," said the boy; "they are not so scarce in this world as your

honour's virtuous eminence would suppose. This master-fiend shall spit a

few flashes of fire, and eruct a volume or two of smoke on the spot, if

it will do you pleasure--you would think he had AEtna in his abdomen."

"I lack time just now, most hopeful imp of darkness, to witness his

performance," said Varney; "but here is something for you all to drink

the lucky hour--and so, as the play says, 'God be with Your labour!'"

Thus speaking, he struck his horse with the spurs, and rode on his way.

Lambourne tarried a moment or two behind his master, and rummaged his

pouch for a piece of silver, which he bestowed on the communicative imp,

as he said, for his encouragement on his path to the infernal regions,

some sparks of whose fire, he said, he could discover flashing from him

already. Then having received the boy's thanks for his generosity he

also spurred his horse, and rode after his master as fast as the fire

flashes from flint.

"And now," said the wily imp, sidling close up to Wayland's horse,

and cutting a gambol in the air which seemed to vindicate his title to

relationship with the prince of that element, "I have told them who YOU

are, do you in return tell me who I am?"

"Either Flibbertigibbet," answered Wayland Smith, "or else an imp of the

devil in good earnest."

"Thou hast hit it," answered Dickie Sludge. "I am thine own

Flibbertigibbet, man; and I have broken forth of bounds, along with my

learned preceptor, as I told thee I would do, whether he would or not.

But what lady hast thou got with thee? I saw thou wert at fault the

first question was asked, and so I drew up for thy assistance. But I

must know all who she is, dear Wayland."

"Thou shalt know fifty finer things, my dear ingle," said Wayland;

"but a truce to thine inquiries just now. And since you are bound for

Kenilworth, thither will I too, even for the love of thy sweet face and

waggish company."

"Thou shouldst have said my waggish face and sweet company," said

Dickie; "but how wilt thou travel with us--I mean in what character?"

"E'en in that thou hast assigned me, to be sure--as a juggler; thou

knowest I am used to the craft," answered Wayland.

"Ay, but the lady?" answered Flibbertigibbet. "Credit me, I think she IS

one and thou art in a sea of troubles about her at this moment, as I can

perceive by thy fidgeting."

"Oh, she, man!--she is a poor sister of mine," said Wayland; "she can

sing and play o' the lute would win the fish out o' the stream."

"Let me hear her instantly," said the boy, "I love the lute rarely; I

love it of all things, though I never heard it."

"Then how canst thou love it, Flibbertigibbet?" said Wayland.

"As knights love ladies in old tales," answered Dickie--"on hearsay."

"Then love it on hearsay a little longer, till my sister is recovered

from the fatigue of her journey," said Wayland; muttering afterwards

betwixt his teeth, "The devil take the imp's curiosity! I must keep fair

weather with him, or we shall fare the worse."

He then proceeded to state to Master Holiday his own talents as a

juggler, with those of his sister as a musician. Some proof of his

dexterity was demanded, which he gave in such a style of excellence,

that, delighted at obtaining such an accession to their party, they

readily acquiesced in the apology which he offered when a display of his

sister's talents was required. The new-comers were invited to partake

of the refreshments with which the party were provided; and it was with

some difficulty that Wayland Smith obtained an opportunity of being

apart with his supposed sister during the meal, of which interval he

availed himself to entreat her to forget for the present both her

rank and her sorrows, and condescend, as the most probable chance of

remaining concealed, to mix in the society of those with whom she was to

travel.

The Countess allowed the necessity of the case, and when they resumed

their journey, endeavoured to comply with her guide's advice, by

addressing herself to a female near her, and expressing her concern for

the woman whom they were thus obliged to leave behind them.

"Oh, she is well attended, madam," replied the dame whom she addressed,

who, from her jolly and laughter-loving demeanour, might have been the

very emblem of the Wife of Bath; "and my gossip Laneham thinks as little

of these matters as any one. By the ninth day, an the revels last so

long, we shall have her with us at Kenilworth, even if she should travel

with her bantling on her back."

There was something in this speech which took away all desire on the

Countess of Leicester's part to continue the conversation. But having

broken the charm by speaking to her fellow-traveller first, the good

dame, who was to play Rare Gillian of Croydon in one of the interludes,

took care that silence did not again settle on the journey, but

entertained her mute companion with a thousand anecdotes of revels, from

the days of King Harry downwards, with the reception given them by

the great folk, and all the names of those who played the principal

characters; but ever concluding with "they would be nothing to the

princely pleasures of Kenilworth."

"And when shall we reach Kenilworth? said the Countess, with an

agitation which she in vain attempted to conceal.

"We that have horses may, with late riding, get to Warwick to-night, and

Kenilworth may be distant some four or five miles. But then we must

wait till the foot-people come up; although it is like my good Lord of

Leicester will have horses or light carriages to meet them, and bring

them up without being travel-toiled, which last is no good preparation,

as you may suppose, for dancing before your betters. And yet, Lord help

me, I have seen the day I would have tramped five leagues of lea-land,

and turned an my toe the whole evening after, as a juggler spins a

pewter platter on the point of a needle. But age has clawed me somewhat

in his clutch, as the song says; though, if I like the tune and like

my partner, I'll dance the hays yet with any merry lass in Warwickshire

that writes that unhappy figure four with a round O after it."

If the Countess was overwhelmed with the garrulity of this good dame,

Wayland Smith, on his part, had enough to do to sustain and parry the

constant attacks made upon him by the indefatigable curiosity of his

old acquaintance Richard Sludge. Nature had given that arch youngster a

prying cast of disposition, which matched admirably with his sharp wit;

the former inducing him to plant himself as a spy on other people's

affairs, and the latter quality leading him perpetually to interfere,

after he had made himself master of that which concerned him not.

He spent the livelong day in attempting to peer under the Countess's

muffler, and apparently what he could there discern greatly sharpened

his curiosity.

"That sister of thine, Wayland," he said, "has a fair neck to have been

born in a smithy, and a pretty taper hand to have been used for twirling

a spindle--faith, I'll believe in your relationship when the crow's egg

is hatched into a cygnet."

"Go to," said Wayland, "thou art a prating boy, and should be breeched

for thine assurance."

"Well," said the imp, drawing off, "all I say is--remember you have kept

a secret from me, and if I give thee not a Roland for thine Oliver, my

name is not Dickon Sludge!"

This threat, and the distance at which Hobgoblin kept from him for the

rest of the way, alarmed Wayland very much, and he suggested to his

pretended sister that, on pretext of weariness, she should express a

desire to stop two or three miles short of the fair town of Warwick,

promising to rejoin the troop in the morning. A small village inn

afforded them a resting-place, and it was with secret pleasure that

Wayland saw the whole party, including Dickon, pass on, after a

courteous farewell, and leave them behind.

"To-morrow, madam," he said to his charge, "we will, with your leave,

again start early, and reach Kenilworth before the rout which are to

assemble there."

The Countess gave assent to the proposal of her faithful guide; but,

somewhat to his surprise, said nothing further on the subject, which

left Wayland under the disagreeable uncertainty whether or no she had

formed any plan for her own future proceedings, as he knew her situation

demanded circumspection, although he was but imperfectly acquainted with

all its peculiarities. Concluding, however, that she must have friends

within the castle, whose advice and assistance she could safely trust,

he supposed his task would be best accomplished by conducting her

thither in safety, agreeably to her repeated commands.

CHAPTER XXV.

Hark, the bells summon, and the bugle calls,

But she the fairest answers not--the tide

Of nobles and of ladies throngs the halls,

But she the loveliest must in secret hide.

What eyes were thine, proud Prince, which in the gleam

Of yon gay meteors lost that better sense,

That o'er the glow-worm doth the star esteem,

And merit's modest blush o'er courtly insolence?

--THE GLASS SLIPPER.

The unfortunate Countess of Leicester had, from her infancy upwards,

been treated by those around her with indulgence as unbounded as

injudicious. The natural sweetness of her disposition had saved her from

becoming insolent and ill-humoured; but the caprice which preferred

the handsome and insinuating Leicester before Tressilian, of whose high

honour and unalterable affection she herself entertained so firm an

opinion--that fatal error, which ruined the happiness of her life, had

its origin in the mistaken kindness; that had spared her childhood the

painful but most necessary lesson of submission and self-command. From

the same indulgence it followed that she had only been accustomed to

form and to express her wishes, leaving to others the task of fulfilling

them; and thus, at the most momentous period of her life, she was alike

destitute of presence of mind, and of ability to form for herself any

reasonable or prudent plan of conduct.

These difficulties pressed on the unfortunate lady with overwhelming

force on the morning which seemed to be the crisis of her fate.

Overlooking every intermediate consideration, she had only desired to be

at Kenilworth, and to approach her husband's presence; and now, when

she was in the vicinity of both, a thousand considerations arose at once

upon her mind, startling her with accumulated doubts and dangers, some

real, some imaginary, and all exalted and exaggerated by a situation

alike helpless and destitute of aid and counsel.

A sleepless night rendered her so weak in the morning that she was

altogether unable to attend Wayland's early summons. The trusty guide

became extremely distressed on the lady's account, and somewhat alarmed

on his own, and was on the point of going alone to Kenilworth, in

the hope of discovering Tressilian, and intimating to him the lady's

approach, when about nine in the morning he was summoned to attend her.

He found her dressed, and ready for resuming her journey, but with a

paleness of countenance which alarmed him for her health. She intimated

her desire that the horses might be got instantly ready, and resisted

with impatience her guide's request that she would take some refreshment

before setting forward. "I have had," she said, "a cup of water--the

wretch who is dragged to execution needs no stronger cordial, and that

may serve me which suffices for him. Do as I command you." Wayland Smith

still hesitated. "What would you have?" said she. "Have I not spoken

plainly?"

"Yes, madam," answered Wayland; "but may I ask what is your further

purpose? I only wish to know, that I may guide myself by your wishes.

The whole country is afloat, and streaming towards the Castle of

Kenilworth. It will be difficult travelling thither, even if we had the

necessary passports for safe-conduct and free admittance; unknown

and unfriended, we may come by mishap. Your ladyship will forgive my

speaking my poor mind--were we not better try to find out the maskers,

and again join ourselves with them?" The Countess shook her head, and

her guide proceeded, "Then I see but one other remedy."

"Speak out, then," said the lady, not displeased, perhaps, that he

should thus offer the advice which she was ashamed to ask; "I believe

thee faithful--what wouldst thou counsel?"

"That I should warn Master Tressilian," said Wayland, "that you are in

this place. I am right certain he would get to horse with a few of Lord

Sussex's followers, and ensure your personal safety."

"And is it to ME you advise," said the Countess, "to put myself under

the protection of Sussex, the unworthy rival of the noble Leicester?"

Then, seeing the surprise with which Wayland stared upon her, and afraid

of having too strongly intimated her interest in Leicester, she added,

"And for Tressilian, it must not be--mention not to him, I charge you,

my unhappy name; it would but double MY misfortunes, and involve HIM in

dangers beyond the power of rescue." She paused; but when she observed

that Wayland continued to look on her with that anxious and uncertain

gaze which indicated a doubt whether her brain was settled, she assumed

an air of composure, and added, "Do thou but guide me to Kenilworth

Castle, good fellow, and thy task is ended, since I will then judge what

further is to be done. Thou hast yet been true to me--here is something

that will make thee rich amends."

She offered the artist a ring containing a valuable stone. Wayland

looked at it, hesitated a moment, and then returned it. "Not," he said,

"that I am above your kindness, madam, being but a poor fellow, who have

been forced, God help me! to live by worse shifts than the bounty of

such a person as you. But, as my old master the farrier used to say to

his customers, 'No cure, no pay.' We are not yet in Kenilworth Castle,

and it is time enough to discharge your guide, as they say, when you

take your boots off. I trust in God your ladyship is as well assured of

fitting reception when you arrive, as you may hold yourself certain

of my best endeavours to conduct you thither safely. I go to get the

horses; meantime, let me pray you once more, as your poor physician as

well as guide, to take some sustenance."

"I will--I will," said the lady hastily. "Begone, begone instantly!--It

is in vain I assume audacity," said she, when he left the room; "even

this poor groom sees through my affectation of courage, and fathoms the

very ground of my fears."

She then attempted to follow her guide's advice by taking some food, but

was compelled to desist, as the effort to swallow even a single morsel

gave her so much uneasiness as amounted well-nigh to suffocation. A

moment afterwards the horses appeared at the latticed window. The lady

mounted, and found that relief from the free air and change of place

which is frequently experienced in similar circumstances.

It chanced well for the Countess's purpose that Wayland Smith, whose

previous wandering and unsettled life had made him acquainted with

almost all England, was intimate with all the byroads, as well as direct

communications, through the beautiful county of Warwick. For such and so

great was the throng which flocked in all directions towards Kenilworth,

to see the entry of Elizabeth into that splendid mansion of her prime

favourite, that the principal roads were actually blocked up and

interrupted, and it was only by circuitous by-paths that the travellers

could proceed on their journey.

The Queen's purveyors had been abroad, sweeping the farms and villages

of those articles usually exacted during a royal Progress, and for which

the owners were afterwards to obtain a tardy payment from the Board

of Green Cloth. The Earl of Leicester's household officers had been

scouring the country for the same purpose; and many of his friends and

allies, both near and remote, took this opportunity of ingratiating

themselves by sending large quantities of provisions and delicacies

of all kinds, with game in huge numbers, and whole tuns of the best

liquors, foreign and domestic. Thus the highroads were filled with

droves of bullocks, sheep, calves, and hogs, and choked with loaded

wains, whose axle-trees cracked under their burdens of wine-casks and

hogsheads of ale, and huge hampers of grocery goods, and slaughtered

game, and salted provisions, and sacks of flour. Perpetual stoppages

took place as these wains became entangled; and their rude drivers,

swearing and brawling till their wild passions were fully raised, began

to debate precedence with their wagon-whips and quarterstaves, which

occasional riots were usually quieted by a purveyor, deputy-marshal's

man, or some other person in authority, breaking the heads of both

parties.

Here were, besides, players and mummers, jugglers and showmen, of every

description, traversing in joyous bands the paths which led to the

Palace of Princely Pleasure; for so the travelling minstrels had termed

Kenilworth in the songs which already had come forth in anticipation of

the revels which were there expected. In the midst of this motley show,

mendicants were exhibiting their real or pretended miseries, forming a

strange though common contrast betwixt the vanities and the sorrows

of human existence. All these floated along with the immense tide

of population whom mere curiosity had drawn together; and where the

mechanic, in his leathern apron, elbowed the dink and dainty dame, his

city mistress; where clowns, with hobnailed shoes, were treading on the

kibes of substantial burghers and gentlemen of worship; and where Joan

of the dairy, with robust pace, and red, sturdy arms, rowed her way

unward, amongst those prim and pretty moppets whose sires were knights

and squires.

The throng and confusion was, however, of a gay and cheerful character.

All came forth to see and to enjoy, and all laughed at the trifling

inconveniences which at another time might have chafed their temper.

Excepting the occasional brawls which we have mentioned among that

irritable race the carmen, the mingled sounds which arose from the

multitude were those of light-hearted mirth and tiptoe jollity. The

musicians preluded on their instruments--the minstrels hummed their

songs--the licensed jester whooped betwixt mirth and madness, as he

brandished his bauble--the morrice-dancers jangled their bells--the

rustics hallooed and whistled-men laughed loud, and maidens giggled

shrill; while many a broad jest flew like a shuttlecock from one party,

to be caught in the air and returned from the opposite side of the road

by another, at which it was aimed.

No infliction can be so distressing to a mind absorbed in melancholy,

as being plunged into a scene of mirth and revelry, forming an

accompaniment so dissonant from its own feelings. Yet, in the case of

the Countess of Leicester, the noise and tumult of this giddy scene

distracted her thoughts, and rendered her this sad service, that

it became impossible for her to brood on her own misery, or to form

terrible anticipations of her approaching fate. She travelled on like

one in a dream, following implicitly the guidance of Wayland, who,

with great address, now threaded his way through the general throng of

passengers, now stood still until a favourable opportunity occurred

of again moving forward, and frequently turning altogether out of the

direct road, followed some circuitous bypath, which brought them into

the highway again, after having given them the opportunity of traversing

a considerable way with greater ease and rapidity.

It was thus he avoided Warwick, within whose Castle (that fairest

monument of ancient and chivalrous splendour which yet remains uninjured

by time) Elizabeth had passed the previous night, and where she was

to tarry until past noon, at that time the general hour of dinner

throughout England, after which repast she was to proceed to Kenilworth,

In the meanwhile, each passing group had something to say in the

Sovereign's praise, though not absolutely without the usual mixture

of satire which qualifies more or less our estimate of our neighbours,

especially if they chance to be also our betters.

"Heard you," said one, "how graciously she spoke to Master Bailiff and

the Recorder, and to good Master Griffin the preacher, as they kneeled

down at her coach-window?"

"Ay, and how she said to little Aglionby, 'Master Recorder, men would

have persuaded me that you were afraid of me, but truly I think, so well

did you reckon up to me the virtues of a sovereign, that I have more

reason to be afraid of you.' and then with what grace she took the

fair-wrought purse with the twenty gold sovereigns, seeming as though

she would not willingly handle it, and yet taking it withal."

"Ay, ay," said another, "her fingers closed on it pretty willingly

methought, when all was done; and methought, too, she weighed them for a

second in her hand, as she would say, I hope they be avoirdupois."

"She needed not, neighbour," said a third; "it is only when the

corporation pay the accounts of a poor handicraft like me, that they put

him off with clipped coin. Well, there is a God above all--little Master

Recorder, since that is the word, will be greater now than ever."

"Come, good neighbour," said the first speaker "be not envious. She is

a good Queen, and a generous; she gave the purse to the Earl of

Leicester."

"I envious?--beshrew thy heart for the word!" replied the handicraft.

"But she will give all to the Earl of Leicester anon, methinks."

"You are turning ill, lady," said Wayland Smith to the Countess of

Leicester, and proposed that she should draw off from the road, and halt

till she recovered. But, subduing her feelings at this and different

speeches to the same purpose, which caught her ear as they passed on,

she insisted that her guide should proceed to Kenilworth with all

the haste which the numerous impediments of their journey permitted.

Meanwhile, Wayland's anxiety at her repeated fits of indisposition, and

her obvious distraction of mind, was hourly increasing, and he became

extremely desirous that, according to her reiterated requests, she

should be safely introduced into the Castle, where, he doubted not, she

was secure of a kind reception, though she seemed unwilling to reveal on

whom she reposed her hopes.

"An I were once rid of this peril," thought he, "and if any man shall

find me playing squire of the body to a damosel-errant, he shall have

leave to beat my brains out with my own sledge-hammer!"

At length the princely Castle appeared, upon improving which, and the

domains around, the Earl of Leicester had, it is said, expended sixty

thousand pounds sterling, a sum equal to half a million of our present

money.

The outer wall of this splendid and gigantic structure enclosed seven

acres, a part of which was occupied by extensive stables, and by a

pleasure garden, with its trim arbours and parterres, and the rest

formed the large base-court or outer yard of the noble Castle. The

lordly structure itself, which rose near the centre of this spacious

enclosure, was composed of a huge pile of magnificent castellated

buildings, apparently of different ages, surrounding an inner court, and

bearing in the names attached to each portion of the magnificent mass,

and in the armorial bearings which were there blazoned, the emblems

of mighty chiefs who had long passed away, and whose history, could

Ambition have lent ear to it, might have read a lesson to the haughty

favourite who had now acquired and was augmenting the fair domain. A

large and massive Keep, which formed the citadel of the Castle, was of

uncertain though great antiquity. It bore the name of Caesar, perhaps

from its resemblance to that in the Tower of London so called. Some

antiquaries ascribe its foundation to the time of Kenelph, from whom the

Castle had its name, a Saxon King of Mercia, and others to an early era

after the Norman Conquest. On the exterior walls frowned the scutcheon

of the Clintons, by whom they were founded in the reign of Henry I.; and

of the yet more redoubted Simon de Montfort, by whom, during the Barons'

wars, Kenilworth was long held out against Henry III. Here Mortimer,

Earl of March, famous alike for his rise and his fall, had once gaily

revelled in Kenilworth, while his dethroned sovereign, Edward

II., languished in its dungeons. Old John of Gaunt, "time-honoured

Lancaster," had widely extended the Castle, erecting that noble and

massive pile which yet bears the name of Lancaster's Buildings; and

Leicester himself had outdone the former possessors, princely and

powerful as they were, by erecting another immense structure, which now

lies crushed under its own ruins, the monument of its owner's ambition.

The external wall of this royal Castle was, on the south and west sides,

adorned and defended by a lake partly artificial, across which Leicester

had constructed a stately bridge, that Elizabeth might enter the Castle

by a path hitherto untrodden, instead of the usual entrance to the

northward, over which he had erected a gatehouse or barbican, which

still exists, and is equal in extent, and superior in architecture, to

the baronial castle of many a northern chief.

Beyond the lake lay an extensive chase, full of red deer, fallow deer,

roes, and every species of game, and abounding with lofty trees, from

amongst which the extended front and massive towers of the Castle were

seen to rise in majesty and beauty. We cannot but add, that of this

lordly palace, where princes feasted and heroes fought, now in the

bloody earnest of storm and siege, and now in the games of chivalry,

where beauty dealt the prize which valour won, all is now desolate.

The bed of the lake is but a rushy swamp; and the massive ruins of the

Castle only serve to show what their splendour once was, and to impress

on the musing visitor the transitory value of human possessions, and the

happiness of those who enjoy a humble lot in virtuous contentment.

It was with far different feelings that the unfortunate Countess of

Leicester viewed those grey and massive towers, when she first beheld

them rise above the embowering and richly-shaded woods, over which

they seemed to preside. She, the undoubted wife of the great Earl, of

Elizabeth's minion, and England's mighty favourite, was approaching

the presence of her husband, and that husband's sovereign, under the

protection, rather than the guidance, of a poor juggler; and though

unquestioned Mistress of that proud Castle, whose lightest word ought

to have had force sufficient to make its gates leap from their massive

hinges to receive her, yet she could not conceal from herself the

difficulty and peril which she must experience in gaining admission into

her own halls.

The risk and difficulty, indeed, seemed to increase every moment, and

at length threatened altogether to put a stop to her further progress at

the great gate leading to a broad and fair road, which, traversing the

breadth of the chase for the space of two miles, and commanding several

most beautiful views of the Castle and lake, terminated at the newly

constructed bridge, to which it was an appendage, and which was destined

to form the Queen's approach to the Castle on that memorable occasion.

Here the Countess and Wayland found the gate at the end of this avenue,

which opened on the Warwick road, guarded by a body of the Queen's

mounted yeomen of the guard, armed in corselets richly carved and

gilded, and wearing morions instead of bonnets, having their carabines

resting with the butt-end on their thighs. These guards, distinguished

for strength and stature, who did duty wherever the Queen went in

person, were here stationed under the direction of a pursuivant, graced

with the Bear and Ragged Staff on his arm, as belonging to the Earl of

Leicester, and peremptorily refused all admittance, excepting to such as

were guests invited to the festival, or persons who were to perform some

part in the mirthful exhibitions which were proposed.

The press was of consequence great around the entrance, and persons

of all kinds presented every sort of plea for admittance; to which the

guards turned an inexorable ear, pleading, in return to fair words,

and even to fair offers, the strictness of their orders, founded on the

Queen's well-known dislike to the rude pressing of a multitude. With

those whom such reasons did not serve they dealt more rudely, repelling

them without ceremony by the pressure of their powerful, barbed horses,

and good round blows from the stock of their carabines. These last

manoeuvres produced undulations amongst the crowd, which rendered

Wayland much afraid that he might perforce be separated from his charge

in the throng. Neither did he know what excuse to make in order to

obtain admittance, and he was debating the matter in his head with great

uncertainty, when the Earl's pursuivant, having cast an eye upon him,

exclaimed, to his no small surprise, "Yeomen, make room for the fellow

in the orange-tawny cloak.--Come forward, Sir Coxcomb, and make haste.

What, in the fiend's name, has kept you waiting? Come forward with your

bale of woman's gear."

While the pursuivant gave Wayland this pressing yet uncourteous

invitation, which, for a minute or two, he could not imagine was applied

to him, the yeomen speedily made a free passage for him, while, only

cautioning his companion to keep the muffler close around her face, he

entered the gate leading her palfrey, but with such a drooping crest,

and such a look of conscious fear and anxiety, that the crowd, not

greatly pleased at any rate with the preference bestowed upon them,

accompanied their admission with hooting and a loud laugh of derision.

Admitted thus within the chase, though with no very flattering notice

or distinction, Wayland and his charge rode forward, musing what

difficulties it would be next their lot to encounter, through the

broad avenue, which was sentinelled on either side by a long line of

retainers, armed with swords, and partisans richly dressed in the Earl

of Leicester's liveries, and bearing his cognizance of the Bear and

Ragged Staff, each placed within three paces of each other, so as to

line the whole road from the entrance into the park to the bridge. And,

indeed, when the lady obtained the first commanding view of the Castle,

with its stately towers rising from within a long, sweeping line of

outward walls, ornamented with battlements and turrets and platforms at

every point of defence, with many a banner streaming from its walls, and

such a bustle of gay crests and waving plumes disposed on the terraces

and battlements, and all the gay and gorgeous scene, her heart,

unaccustomed to such splendour, sank as if it died within her, and for a

moment she asked herself what she had offered up to Leicester to deserve

to become the partner of this princely splendour. But her pride and

generous spirit resisted the whisper which bade her despair.

"I have given him," she said, "all that woman has to give. Name and

fame, heart and hand, have I given the lord of all this magnificence

at the altar, and England's Queen could give him no more. He is my

husband--I am his wife--whom God hath joined, man cannot sunder. I

will be bold in claiming my right; even the bolder, that I come thus

unexpected, and thus forlorn. I know my noble Dudley well! He will be

something impatient at my disobeying him, but Amy will weep, and Dudley

will forgive her."

These meditations were interrupted by a cry of surprise from her guide

Wayland, who suddenly felt himself grasped firmly round the body by a

pair of long, thin black arms, belonging to some one who had dropped

himself out of an oak tree upon the croup of his horse, amidst the

shouts of laughter which burst from the sentinels.

"This must be the devil, or Flibbertigibbet again!" said Wayland, after

a vain struggle to disengage himself, and unhorse the urchin who clung

to him; "do Kenilworth oaks bear such acorns?"

"In sooth do they, Master Wayland," said his unexpected adjunct, "and

many others, too hard for you to crack, for as old as you are, without

my teaching you. How would you have passed the pursuivant at the upper

gate yonder, had not I warned him our principal juggler was to follow

us? And here have I waited for you, having clambered up into the tree

from the top of the wain; and I suppose they are all mad for want of me

by this time."

"Nay, then, thou art a limb of the devil in good earnest," said Wayland.

"I give thee way, good imp, and will walk by thy counsel; only, as thou

art powerful be merciful."

As he spoke, they approached a strong tower, at the south extremity of

the long bridge we have mentioned, which served to protect the outer

gateway of the Castle of Kenilworth.

Under such disastrous circumstances, and in such singular company, did

the unfortunate Countess of Leicester approach, for the first time, the

magnificent abode of her almost princely husband.

CHAPTER XXVI.

SNUG. Have you the lion's part written? pray, if it be, give

it me, for I am slow of study.

QUINCE. You may do it extempore, for it is nothing but roaring.

--MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM.

When the Countess of Leicester arrived at the outer gate of the Castle

of Kenilworth, she found the tower, beneath which its ample portal arch

opened, guarded in a singular manner. Upon the battlements were placed

gigantic warders, with clubs, battle-axes, and other implements of

ancient warfare, designed to represent the soldiers of King Arthur;

those primitive Britons, by whom, according to romantic tradition,

the Castle had been first tenanted, though history carried back its

antiquity only to the times of the Heptarchy.

Some of these tremendous figures were real men, dressed up with vizards

and buskins; others were mere pageants composed of pasteboard and

buckram, which, viewed from beneath, and mingled with those that

were real, formed a sufficiently striking representation of what was

intended. But the gigantic porter who waited at the gate beneath, and

actually discharged the duties of warder, owed none of his terrors to

fictitious means. We was a man whose huge stature, thews, sinews, and

bulk in proportion, would have enabled him to enact Colbrand, Ascapart,

or any other giant of romance, without raising himself nearer to heaven

even by the altitude of a chopin. The legs and knees of this son of Anak

were bare, as were his arms from a span below the shoulder; but his

feet were defended with sandals, fastened with cross straps of scarlet

leather studded with brazen knobs. A close jerkin of scarlet velvet

looped with gold, with short breeches of the same, covered his body and

a part of his limbs; and he wore on his shoulders, instead of a cloak,

the skin of a black bear. The head of this formidable person was

uncovered, except by his shaggy, black hair, which descended on either

side around features of that huge, lumpish, and heavy cast which are

often annexed to men of very uncommon size, and which, notwithstanding

some distinguished exceptions, have created a general prejudice against

giants, as being a dull and sullen kind of persons. This tremendous

warder was appropriately armed with a heavy club spiked with steel. In

fine, he represented excellently one of those giants of popular romance,

who figure in every fairy tale or legend of knight-errantry.

The demeanour of this modern Titan, when Wayland Smith bent his

attention to him, had in it something arguing much mental embarrassment

and vexation; for sometimes he sat down for an instant on a massive

stone bench, which seemed placed for his accommodation beside the

gateway, and then ever and anon he started up, scratching his huge head,

and striding to and fro on his post, like one under a fit of impatience

and anxiety. It was while the porter was pacing before the gate in this

agitated manner, that Wayland, modestly, yet as a matter of course (not,

however, without some mental misgiving), was about to pass him, and

enter the portal arch. The porter, however, stopped his progress,

bidding him, in a thundering voice, "Stand back!" and enforcing his

injunction by heaving up his steel-shod mace, and dashing it on the

ground before Wayland's horse's nose with such vehemence that the

pavement flashed fire, and the archway rang to the clamour. Wayland,

availing himself of Dickie's hints, began to state that he belonged to a

band of performers to which his presence was indispensable, that he had

been accidentally detained behind, and much to the same purpose. But

the warder was inexorable, and kept muttering and murmuring something

betwixt his teeth, which Wayland could make little of; and addressing

betwixt whiles a refusal of admittance, couched in language which was

but too intelligible. A specimen of his speech might run thus:--"What,

how now, my masters?" (to himself)--"Here's a stir--here's a

coil."--(Then to Wayland)--"You are a loitering knave, and shall have no

entrance."--(Again to himself)--"Here's a throng--here's a thrusting.--I

shall ne'er get through with it--Here's a--humph--ha."--(To

Wayland)--"Back from the gate, or I'll break the pate of thee."--(Once

more to himself)--"Here's a--no--I shall never get through it."

"Stand still," whispered Flibbertigibbet into Wayland's ear, "I know

where the shoe pinches, and will tame him in an instant."

He dropped down from the horse, and skipping up to the porter, plucked

him by the tail of the bearskin, so as to induce him to decline his huge

head, and whispered something in his ear. Not at the command of the lord

of some Eastern talisman did ever Afrite change his horrid frown into

a look of smooth submission more suddenly than the gigantic porter

of Kenilworth relaxed the terrors of his looks at the instant

Flibbertigibbet's whisper reached his ears. He flung his club upon the

ground, and caught up Dickie Sludge, raising him to such a distance from

the earth as might have proved perilous had he chanced to let him slip.

"It is even so," he said, with a thundering sound of exultation--"it is

even so, my little dandieprat. But who the devil could teach it thee?"

"Do not thou care about that," said Flibbertigibbet--"but--" he looked

at Wayland and the lady, and then sunk what he had to say in a

whisper, which needed not be a loud one, as the giant held him for his

convenience close to his ear. The porter then gave Dickie a warm caress,

and set him on the ground with the same care which a careful housewife

uses in replacing a cracked china cup upon her mantelpiece, calling out

at the same time to Wayland and the lady, "In with you--in with you! and

take heed how you come too late another day when I chance to be porter."

"Ay, ay, in with you," added Flibbertigibbet; "I must stay a short space

with mine honest Philistine, my Goliath of Gath here; but I will be with

you anon, and at the bottom of all your secrets, were they as deep and

dark as the Castle dungeon."

"I do believe thou wouldst," said Wayland; "but I trust the secret will

be soon out of my keeping, and then I shall care the less whether thou

or any one knows it."

They now crossed the entrance tower, which obtained the name of the

Gallery-tower, from the following circumstance: The whole bridge,

extending from the entrance to another tower on the opposite side of

the lake, called Mortimer's Tower, was so disposed as to make a spacious

tilt-yard, about one hundred and thirty yards in length, and ten in

breadth, strewed with the finest sand, and defended on either side by

strong and high palisades. The broad and fair gallery, destined for the

ladies who were to witness the feats of chivalry presented on this area,

was erected on the northern side of the outer tower, to which it gave

name. Our travellers passed slowly along the bridge or tilt-yard, and

arrived at Mortimer's Tower, at its farthest extremity, through which

the approach led into the outer or base-court of the Castle. Mortimer's

Tower bore on its front the scutcheon of the Earl of March, whose daring

ambition overthrew the throne of Edward II., and aspired to share his

power with the "She-wolf of France," to whom the unhappy monarch was

wedded. The gate, which opened under this ominous memorial, was guarded

by many warders in rich liveries; but they offered no opposition to the

entrance of the Countess and her guide, who, having passed by license of

the principal porter at the Gallery-tower, were not, it may be supposed,

liable to interruption from his deputies. They entered accordingly, in

silence, the great outward court of the Castle, having then full before

them that vast and lordly pile, with all its stately towers, each gate

open, as if in sign of unlimited hospitality, and the apartments filled

with noble guests of every degree, besides dependants, retainers,

domestics of every description, and all the appendages and promoters of

mirth and revelry.

Amid this stately and busy scene Wayland halted his horse, and looked

upon the lady, as if waiting her commands what was next to be done,

since they had safely reached the place of destination. As she remained

silent, Wayland, after waiting a minute or two, ventured to ask her, in

direct terms, what were her next commands. She raised her hand to her

forehead, as if in the act of collecting her thoughts and resolution,

while she answered him in a low and suppressed voice, like the murmurs

of one who speaks in a dream--"Commands? I may indeed claim right to

command, but who is there will obey me!"

Then suddenly raising her head, like one who has formed a decisive

resolution, she addressed a gaily-dressed domestic, who was crossing the

court with importance and bustle in his countenance, "Stop, sir," she

said; "I desire to speak with, the Earl of Leicester."

"With whom, an it please you?" said the man, surprised at the demand;

and then looking upon the mean equipage of her who used towards him such

a tone of authority, he added, with insolence, "Why, what Bess of Bedlam

is this would ask to see my lord on such a day as the present?"

"Friend," said the Countess, "be not insolent--my business with the Earl

is most urgent."

"You must get some one else to do it, were it thrice as urgent," said

the fellow. "I should summon my lord from the Queen's royal presence

to do YOUR business, should I?--I were like to be thanked with a

horse-whip. I marvel our old porter took not measure of such ware with

his club, instead of giving them passage; but his brain is addled with

getting his speech by heart."

Two or three persons stopped, attracted by the fleering way in which the

serving-man expressed himself; and Wayland, alarmed both for himself and

the lady, hastily addressed himself to one who appeared the most civil,

and thrusting a piece of money into his hand, held a moment's counsel

with him on the subject of finding a place of temporary retreat for the

lady. The person to whom he spoke, being one in some authority, rebuked

the others for their incivility, and commanding one fellow to take care

of the strangers' horses, he desired them to follow him. The Countess

retained presence of mind sufficient to see that it was absolutely

necessary she should comply with his request; and leaving the rude

lackeys and grooms to crack their brutal jests about light heads,

light heels, and so forth, Wayland and she followed in silence the

deputy-usher, who undertook to be their conductor.

They entered the inner court of the Castle by the great gateway, which

extended betwixt the principal Keep, or Donjon, called Caesar's Tower,

and a stately building which passed by the name of King Henry's Lodging,

and were thus placed in the centre of the noble pile, which presented

on its different fronts magnificent specimens of every species of

castellated architecture, from the Conquest to the reign of Elizabeth,

with the appropriate style and ornaments of each.

Across this inner court also they were conducted by their guide to a

small but strong tower, occupying the north-east angle of the building,

adjacent to the great hall, and filling up a space betwixt the immense

range of kitchens and the end of the great hall itself. The lower

part of this tower was occupied by some of the household officers of

Leicester, owing to its convenient vicinity to the places where their

duty lay; but in the upper story, which was reached by a narrow, winding

stair, was a small octangular chamber, which, in the great demand for

lodgings, had been on the present occasion fitted up for the reception

of guests, though generally said to have been used as a place of

confinement for some unhappy person who had been there murdered.

Tradition called this prisoner Mervyn, and transferred his name to the

tower. That it had been used as a prison was not improbable; for the

floor of each story was arched, the walls of tremendous thickness, while

the space of the chamber did not exceed fifteen feet in diameter. The

window, however, was pleasant, though narrow, and commanded a delightful

view of what was called the Pleasance; a space of ground enclosed

and decorated with arches, trophies, statues, fountains, and other

architectural monuments, which formed one access from the Castle

itself into the garden. There was a bed in the apartment, and other

preparations for the reception of a guest, to which the Countess paid

but slight attention, her notice being instantly arrested by the sight

of writing materials placed on the table (not very commonly to be found

in the bedrooms of those days), which instantly suggested the idea of

writing to Leicester, and remaining private until she had received his

answer.

The deputy-usher having introduced them into this commodious apartment,

courteously asked Wayland, whose generosity he had experienced, whether

he could do anything further for his service. Upon receiving a gentle

hint that some refreshment would not be unacceptable, he presently

conveyed the smith to the buttery-hatch, where dressed provisions of all

sorts were distributed, with hospitable profusion, to all who asked for

them. Wayland was readily supplied with some light provisions, such as

he thought would best suit the faded appetite of the lady, and did not

omit the opportunity of himself making a hasty but hearty meal on more

substantial fare. He then returned to the apartment in the turret, where

he found the Countess, who had finished her letter to Leicester, and in

lieu of a seal and silken thread, had secured it with a braid of her own

beautiful tresses, fastened by what is called a true-love knot.

"Good friend," said she to Wayland, "whom God hath sent to aid me at my

utmost need, I do beseech thee, as the last trouble you shall take

for an unfortunate lady, to deliver this letter to the noble Earl of

Leicester. Be it received as it may," she said, with features agitated

betwixt hope and fear, "thou, good fellow, shalt have no more cumber

with me. But I hope the best; and if ever lady made a poor man rich,

thou hast surely deserved it at my hand, should my happy days ever come

round again. Give it, I pray you, into Lord Leicester's own hand, and

mark how he looks on receiving it."

Wayland, on his part, readily undertook the commission, but anxiously

prayed the lady, in his turn, to partake of some refreshment; in which

he at length prevailed, more through importunity and her desire to see

him begone on his errand than from any inclination the Countess felt to

comply with his request. He then left her, advising her to lock her door

on the inside, and not to stir from her little apartment; and went to

seek an opportunity of discharging her errand, as well as of carrying

into effect a purpose of his own, which circumstances had induced him to

form.

In fact, from the conduct of the lady during the journey--her long fits

of profound silence, the irresolution and uncertainty which seemed to

pervade all her movements, and the obvious incapacity of thinking and

acting for herself under which she seemed to labour--Wayland had formed

the not improbable opinion that the difficulties of her situation had in

some degree affected her understanding.

When she had escaped from the seclusion of Cumnor Place, and the dangers

to which she was there exposed, it would have seemed her most rational

course to retire to her father's, or elsewhere at a distance from the

power of those by whom these dangers had been created. When, instead of

doing so, she demanded to be conveyed to Kenilworth, Wayland had been

only able to account for her conduct by supposing that she meant to

put herself under the tutelage of Tressilian, and to appeal to the

protection of the Queen. But now, instead of following this natural

course, she entrusted him with a letter to Leicester, the patron of

Varney, and within whose jurisdiction at least, if not under his express

authority, all the evils she had already suffered were inflicted upon

her. This seemed an unsafe and even a desperate measure, and Wayland

felt anxiety for his own safety, as well as that of the lady, should he

execute her commission before he had secured the advice and countenance

of a protector.

He therefore resolved, before delivering the letter to Leicester, that

he would seek out Tressilian, and communicate to him the arrival of

the lady at Kenilworth, and thus at once rid himself of all further

responsibility, and devolve the task of guiding and protecting this

unfortunate lady upon the patron who had at first employed him in her

service.

"He will be a better judge than I am," said Wayland, "whether she is

to be gratified in this humour of appeal to my Lord of Leicester, which

seems like an act of insanity; and, therefore, I will turn the matter

over on his hands, deliver him the letter, receive what they list to

give me by way of guerdon, and then show the Castle of Kenilworth a pair

of light heels; for, after the work I have been engaged in, it will be,

I fear, neither a safe nor wholesome place of residence, and I would

rather shoe colts an the coldest common in England than share in their

gayest revels."

CHAPTER XXVII.

In my time I have seen a boy do wonders.

Robin, the red tinker, had a boy

Would ha run through a cat-hole. --THE COXCOMB.

Amid the universal bustle which filled the Castle and its environs, it

was no easy matter to find out any individual; and Wayland was still

less likely to light upon Tressilian, whom he sought so anxiously,

because, sensible of the danger of attracting attention in the

circumstances in which he was placed, he dared not make general

inquiries among the retainers or domestics of Leicester. He learned,

however, by indirect questions, that in all probability Tressilian must

have been one of a large party of gentlemen in attendance on the Earl

of Sussex, who had accompanied their patron that morning to Kenilworth,

when Leicester had received them with marks of the most formal respect

and distinction. He further learned that both Earls, with their

followers, and many other nobles, knights, and gentlemen, had taken

horse, and gone towards Warwick several hours since, for the purpose of

escorting the Queen to Kenilworth.

Her Majesty's arrival, like other great events, was delayed from hour

to hour; and it was now announced by a breathless post that her Majesty,

being detained by her gracious desire to receive the homage of her

lieges who had thronged to wait upon her at Warwick, it would be the

hour of twilight ere she entered the Castle. The intelligence released

for a time those who were upon duty, in the immediate expectation of the

Queen's appearance, and ready to play their part in the solemnities with

which it was to be accompanied; and Wayland, seeing several horsemen

enter the Castle, was not without hopes that Tressilian might be of the

number. That he might not lose an opportunity of meeting his patron

in the event of this being the case, Wayland placed himself in the

base-court of the Castle, near Mortimer's Tower, and watched every one

who went or came by the bridge, the extremity of which was protected by

that building. Thus stationed, nobody could enter or leave the Castle

without his observation, and most anxiously did he study the garb and

countenance of every horseman, as, passing from under the opposite

Gallery-tower, they paced slowly, or curveted, along the tilt-yard, and

approached the entrance of the base-court.

But while Wayland gazed thus eagerly to discover him whom he saw not, he

was pulled by the sleeve by one by whom he himself would not willingly

have been seen.

This was Dickie Sludge, or Flibbertigibbet, who, like the imp whose name

he bore, and whom he had been accoutred in order to resemble, seemed

to be ever at the ear of those who thought least of him. Whatever were

Wayland's internal feelings, he judged it necessary to express pleasure

at their unexpected meeting.

"Ha! is it thou, my minikin--my miller's thumb--my prince of

cacodemons--my little mouse?"

"Ay," said Dickie, "the mouse which gnawed asunder the toils, just when

the lion who was caught in them began to look wonderfully like an ass."

"Thy, thou little hop-the-gutter, thou art as sharp as vinegar this

afternoon! But tell me, how didst thou come off with yonder jolterheaded

giant whom I left thee with? I was afraid he would have stripped thy

clothes, and so swallowed thee, as men peel and eat a roasted chestnut."

"Had he done so," replied the boy, "he would have had more brains in

his guts than ever he had in his noddle. But the giant is a courteous

monster, and more grateful than many other folk whom I have helped at a

pinch, Master Wayland Smith."

"Beshrew me, Flibbertigibbet," replied Wayland, "but thou art sharper

than a Sheffield whittle! I would I knew by what charm you muzzled

yonder old bear."

"Ay, that is in your own manner," answered Dickie; "you think fine

speeches will pass muster instead of good-will. However, as to this

honest porter, you must know that when we presented ourselves at the

gate yonder, his brain was over-burdened with a speech that had been

penned for him, and which proved rather an overmatch for his gigantic

faculties. Now this same pithy oration had been indited, like sundry

others, by my learned magister, Erasmus Holiday, so I had heard it often

enough to remember every line. As soon as I heard him blundering and

floundering like a fish upon dry land, through the first verse, and

perceived him at a stand, I knew where the shoe pinched, and helped him

to the next word, when he caught me up in an ecstasy, even as you saw

but now. I promised, as the price of your admission, to hide me under

his bearish gaberdine, and prompt him in the hour of need. I have just

now been getting some food in the Castle, and am about to return to

him."

"That's right--that's right, my dear Dickie," replied Wayland;

"haste thee, for Heaven's sake! else the poor giant will be utterly

disconsolate for want of his dwarfish auxiliary. Away with thee,

Dickie!"

"Ay, ay!" answered the boy--"away with Dickie, when we have got what

good of him we can. You will not let me know the story of this lady,

then, who is as much sister of thine as I am?"

"Why, what good would it do thee, thou silly elf?" said Wayland.

"Oh, stand ye on these terms?" said the boy. "Well, I care not greatly

about the matter--only, I never smell out a secret but I try to be

either at the right or the wrong end of it, and so good evening to ye."

"Nay, but, Dickie," said Wayland, who knew the boy's restless and

intriguing disposition too well not to fear his enmity--"stay, my dear

Dickie--part not with old friends so shortly! Thou shalt know all I know

of the lady one day."

"Ay!" said Dickie; "and that day may prove a nigh one. Fare thee well,

Wayland--I will to my large-limbed friend, who, if he have not so sharp

a wit as some folk, is at least more grateful for the service which

other folk render him. And so again, good evening to ye."

So saying, he cast a somerset through the gateway, and lighting on

the bridge, ran with the extraordinary agility which was one of his

distinguishing attributes towards the Gallery-tower, and was out of

sight in an instant.

"I would to God I were safe out of this Castle again!" prayed Wayland

internally; "for now that this mischievous imp has put his finger in the

pie, it cannot but prove a mess fit for the devil's eating. I would to

Heaven Master Tressilian would appear!"

Tressilian, whom he was thus anxiously expecting in one direction, had

returned to Kenilworth by another access. It was indeed true, as Wayland

had conjectured, that in the earlier part of the day he had accompanied

the Earls on their cavalcade towards Warwick, not without hope that he

might in that town hear some tidings of his emissary. Being disappointed

in this expectation, and observing Varney amongst Leicester's

attendants, seeming as if he had some purpose of advancing to and

addressing him, he conceived, in the present circumstances, it was

wisest to avoid the interview. He, therefore, left the presence-chamber

when the High-Sheriff of the county was in the very midst of his dutiful

address to her Majesty; and mounting his horse, rode back to Kenilworth

by a remote and circuitous road, and entered the Castle by a small

sallyport in the western wall, at which he was readily admitted as

one of the followers of the Earl of Sussex, towards whom Leicester had

commanded the utmost courtesy to be exercised. It was thus that he

met not Wayland, who was impatiently watching his arrival, and whom he

himself would have been at least equally desirous to see.

Having delivered his horse to the charge of his attendant, he walked

for a space in the Pleasance and in the garden, rather to indulge in

comparative solitude his own reflections, than to admire those singular

beauties of nature and art which the magnificence of Leicester had there

assembled. The greater part of the persons of condition had left the

Castle for the present, to form part of the Earl's cavalcade; others,

who remained behind, were on the battlements, outer walls, and towers,

eager to view the splendid spectacle of the royal entry. The garden,

therefore, while every other part of the Castle resounded with the human

voice, was silent but for the whispering of the leaves, the emulous

warbling of the tenants of a large aviary with their happier companions

who remained denizens of the free air, and the plashing of the

fountains, which, forced into the air from sculptures of fatastic and

grotesque forms, fell down with ceaseless sound into the great basins of

Italian marble.

The melancholy thoughts of Tressilian cast a gloomy shade on all the

objects with which he was surrounded. He compared the magnificent scenes

which he here traversed with the deep woodland and wild moorland which

surrounded Lidcote Hall, and the image of Amy Robsart glided like a

phantom through every landscape which his imagination summoned up.

Nothing is perhaps more dangerous to the future happiness of men of deep

thought and retired habits than the entertaining an early, long, and

unfortunate attachment. It frequently sinks so deep into the mind that

it becomes their dream by night and their vision by day--mixes itself

with every source of interest and enjoyment; and when blighted and

withered by final disappointment, it seems as if the springs of the

heart were dried up along with it. This aching of the heart, this

languishing after a shadow which has lost all the gaiety of its

colouring, this dwelling on the remembrance of a dream from which

we have been long roughly awakened, is the weakness of a gentle and

generous heart, and it was that of Tressilian.

He himself at length became sensible of the necessity of forcing other

objects upon his mind; and for this purpose he left the Pleasance,

in order to mingle with the noisy crowd upon the walls, and view the

preparation for the pageants. But as he left the garden, and heard the

busy hum, mixed with music and laughter, which floated around him, he

felt an uncontrollable reluctance to mix with society whose feelings

were in a tone so different from his own, and resolved, instead of doing

so, to retire to the chamber assigned him, and employ himself in study

until the tolling of the great Castle bell should announce the arrival

of Elizabeth.

Tressilian crossed accordingly by the passage betwixt the immense range

of kitchens and the great hall, and ascended to the third story of

Mervyn's Tower, and applying himself to the door of the small apartment

which had been allotted to him, was surprised to find it was locked. He

then recollected that the deputy-chamberlain had given him a master-key,

advising him, in the present confused state of the Castle, to keep his

door as much shut as possible. He applied this key to the lock, the bolt

revolved, he entered, and in the same instant saw a female form seated

in the apartment, and recognized that form to be, Amy Robsart. His first

idea was that a heated imagination had raised the image on which it

doted into visible existence; his second, that he beheld an apparition;

the third and abiding conviction, that it was Amy herself, paler,

indeed, and thinner, than in the days of heedless happiness, when

she possessed the form and hue of a wood-nymph, with the beauty of a

sylph--but still Amy, unequalled in loveliness by aught which had ever

visited his eyes.

The astonishment of the Countess was scarce less than that of

Tressilian, although it was of shorter duration, because she had heard

from Wayland that he was in the Castle. She had started up at his first

entrance, and now stood facing him, the paleness of her cheeks having

given way to a deep blush.

"Tressilian," she said, at length, "why come you here?"

"Nay, why come you here, Amy," returned Tressilian, "unless it be at

length to claim that aid, which, as far as one man's heart and arm can

extend, shall instantly be rendered to you?"

She was silent a moment, and then answered in a sorrowful rather than an

angry tone, "I require no aid, Tressilian, and would rather be injured

than benefited by any which your kindness can offer me. Believe me, I am

near one whom law and love oblige to protect me."

"The villain, then, hath done you the poor justice which remained in his

power," said Tressilian, "and I behold before me the wife of Varney!"

"The wife of Varney!" she replied, with all the emphasis of scorn. "With

what base name, sir, does your boldness stigmatize the--the--the--" She

hesitated, dropped her tone of scorn, looked down, and was confused and

silent; for she recollected what fatal consequences might attend her

completing the sentence with "the Countess of Leicester," which were

the words that had naturally suggested themselves. It would have been

a betrayal of the secret, on which her husband had assured her that his

fortunes depended, to Tressilian, to Sussex, to the Queen, and to the

whole assembled court. "Never," she thought, "will I break my promised

silence. I will submit to every suspicion rather than that."

The tears rose to her eyes, as she stood silent before Tressilian;

while, looking on her with mingled grief and pity, he said, "Alas! Amy,

your eyes contradict your tongue. That speaks of a protector, willing

and able to watch over you; but these tell me you are ruined, and

deserted by the wretch to whom you have attached yourself."

She looked on him with eyes in which anger sparkled through her tears,

but only repeated the word "wretch!" with a scornful emphasis.

"Yes, WRETCH!" said Tressilian; "for were he aught better, why are you

here, and alone, in my apartment? why was not fitting provision made for

your honourable reception?"

"In your apartment?" repeated Amy--"in YOUR apartment? It shall

instantly be relieved of my presence." She hastened towards the door;

but the sad recollection of her deserted state at once pressed on her

mind, and pausing on the threshold, she added, in a tone unutterably

pathetic, "Alas! I had forgot--I know not where to go--"

"I see--I see it all," said Tressilian, springing to her side, and

leading her back to the seat, on which she sunk down. "You DO need

aid--you do need protection, though you will not own it; and you shall

not need it long. Leaning on my arm, as the representative of your

excellent and broken-hearted father, on the very threshold of the Castle

gate, you shall meet Elizabeth; and the first deed she shall do in

the halls of Kenilworth shall be an act of justice to her sex and her

subjects. Strong in my good cause, and in the Queen's justice, the

power of her minion shall not shake my resolution. I will instantly seek

Sussex."

"Not for all that is under heaven!" said the Countess, much alarmed,

and feeling the absolute necessity of obtaining time, at least, for

consideration. "Tressilian, you were wont to be generous. Grant me one

request, and believe, if it be your wish to save me from misery and from

madness, you will do more by making me the promise I ask of you, than

Elizabeth can do for me with all her power."

"Ask me anything for which you can allege reason," said Tressilian; "but

demand not of me--"

"Oh, limit not your boon, dear Edmund!" exclaimed the Countess--"you

once loved that I should call you so--limit not your boon to reason; for

my case is all madness, and frenzy must guide the counsels which alone

can aid me."

"If you speak thus wildly," said Tressilian, astonishment again

overpowering both his grief and his resolution, "I must believe you

indeed incapable of thinking or acting for yourself."

"Oh, no!" she exclaimed, sinking on one knee before him, "I am not

mad--I am but a creature unutterably miserable, and, from circumstances

the most singular, dragged on to a precipice by the arm of him who

thinks he is keeping me from it--even by yours, Tressilian--by

yours, whom I have honoured, respected--all but loved--and yet loved,

too--loved, too, Tressilian--though not as you wished to be."

There was an energy, a self-possession, an abandonment in her voice

and manner, a total resignation of herself to his generosity, which,

together with the kindness of her expressions to himself, moved him

deeply. He raised her, and, in broken accents, entreated her to be

comforted.

"I cannot," she said, "I will not be comforted, till you grant me

my request! I will speak as plainly as I dare. I am now awaiting the

commands of one who has a right to issue them. The interference of a

third person--of you in especial, Tressilian--will be ruin--utter ruin

to me. Wait but four-and-twenty hours, and it may be that the poor

Amy may have the means to show that she values, and can reward, your

disinterested friendship--that she is happy herself, and has the means

to make you so. It is surely worth your patience, for so short a space?"

Tressilian paused, and weighing in his mind the various probabilities

which might render a violent interference on his part more prejudicial

than advantageous, both to the happiness and reputation of Amy;

considering also that she was within the walls of Kenilworth, and could

suffer no injury in a castle honoured with the Queen's residence, and

filled with her guards and attendants--he conceived, upon the whole,

that he might render her more evil than good service by intruding upon

her his appeal to Elizabeth in her behalf. He expressed his resolution

cautiously, however, doubting naturally whether Amy's hopes of

extricating herself from her difficulties rested on anything stronger

than a blinded attachment to Varney, whom he supposed to be her seducer.

"Amy," he said, while he fixed his sad and expressive eyes on hers,

which, in her ecstasy of doubt, terror, and perplexity, she cast up

towards him, "I have ever remarked that when others called thee girlish

and wilful, there lay under that external semblance of youthful and

self-willed folly deep feeling and strong sense. In this I will confide,

trusting your own fate in your own hands for the space of twenty-four

hours, without my interference by word or act."

"Do you promise me this, Tressilian?" said the Countess. "Is it possible

you can yet repose so much confidence in me? Do you promise, as you are

a gentleman and a man of honour, to intrude in my matters neither by

speech nor action, whatever you may see or hear that seems to you to

demand your interference? Will you so far trust me?"

"I will upon my honour," said Tressilian; "but when that space is

expired--"

"Then that space is expired," she said, interrupting him, "you are free

to act as your judgment shall determine."

"Is there nought besides which I can do for you, Amy?" said Tressilian.

"Nothing," said she, "save to leave me,--that is, if--I blush to

acknowledge my helplessness by asking it--if you can spare me the use of

this apartment for the next twenty-four hours."

"This is most wonderful!" said Tressilian; "what hope or interest can

you have in a Castle where you cannot command even an apartment?"

"Argue not, but leave me," she said; and added, as he slowly and

unwillingly retired, "Generous Edmund! the time may come when Amy may

show she deserved thy noble attachment."

CHAPTER XXVIII.

What, man, ne'er lack a draught, when the full can

Stands at thine elbow, and craves emptying!--

Nay, fear not me, for I have no delight

To watch men's vices, since I have myself

Of virtue nought to boast of--I'm a striker,

Would have the world strike with me, pell-mell, all.

--PANDEMONIUM.

Tressilian, in strange agitation of mind, had hardly stepped down the

first two or three steps of the winding staircase, when, greatly to his

surprise and displeasure, he met Michael Lambourne, wearing an impudent

familiarity of visage, for which Tressilian felt much disposed to throw

him down-stairs; until he remembered the prejudice which Amy, the only

object of his solicitude, was likely to receive from his engaging in any

act of violence at that time and in that place.

He therefore contented himself with looking sternly upon Lambourne, as

upon one whom he deemed unworthy of notice, and attempted to pass him in

his way downstairs, without any symptom of recognition. But Lambourne,

who, amidst the profusion of that day's hospitality, had not failed

to take a deep though not an overpowering cup of sack, was not in the

humour of humbling himself before any man's looks. He stopped Tressilian

upon the staircase without the least bashfulness or embarrassment, and

addressed him as if he had been on kind and intimate terms:--"What, no

grudge between us, I hope, upon old scores, Master Tressilian?--nay,

I am one who remembers former kindness rather than latter feud. I'll

convince you that I meant honestly and kindly, ay, and comfortably by

you."

"I desire none of your intimacy," said Tressilian--"keep company with

your mates."

"Now, see how hasty he is!" said Lambourne; "and how these gentles, that

are made questionless out of the porcelain clay of the earth, look down

upon poor Michael Lambourne! You would take Master Tressilian now for

the most maid-like, modest, simpering squire of dames that ever made

love when candles were long i' the stuff--snuff; call you it? Why, you

would play the saint on us, Master Tressilian, and forget that even now

thou hast a commodity in thy very bedchamber, to the shame of my lord's

castle, ha! ha! ha! Have I touched you, Master Tressilian?"

"I know not what you mean," said Tressilian, inferring, however, too

surely, that this licentious ruffian must have been sensible of Amy's

presence in his apartment; "'i but if," he continued, "thou art

varlet of the chambers, and lackest a fee, there is one to leave mine

unmolested."

Lambourne looked at the piece of gold, and put it in his pocket saying,

"Now, I know not but you might have done more with me by a kind word

than by this chiming rogue. But after all he pays well that pays with

gold; and Mike Lambourne was never a makebate, or a spoil-sport, or the

like. E'en live, and let others live, that is my motto-only, I would not

let some folks cock their beaver at me neither, as if they were made

of silver ore, and I of Dutch pewter. So if I keep your secret, Master

Tressilian, you may look sweet on me at least; and were I to want a

little backing or countenance, being caught, as you see the best of us

may be, in a sort of peccadillo--why, you owe it me--and so e'en make

your chamber serve you and that same bird in bower beside--it's all one

to Mike Lambourne."

"Make way, sir," said Tressilian, unable to bridle his indignation, "you

have had your fee."

"Um!" said Lambourne, giving place, however, while he sulkily muttered

between his teeth, repeating Tressilian's words, "Make way--and you

have had your fee; but it matters not, I will spoil no sport, as I said

before. I am no dog in the manger--mind that."

He spoke louder and louder, as Tressilian, by whom he felt himself

overawed, got farther and farther out of hearing.

"I am no dog in the manger; but I will not carry coals neither--mind

that, Master Tressilian; and I will have a peep at this wench whom

you have quartered so commodiously in your old haunted room--afraid of

ghosts, belike, and not too willing to sleep alone. If I had done this

now in a strange lord's castle, the word had been, The porter's lodge

for the knave! and, have him flogged--trundle him downstairs like a

turnip! Ay, but your virtuous gentlemen take strange privileges over

us, who are downright servants of our senses. Well--I have my Master

Tressilian's head under my belt by this lucky discovery, that is one

thing certain; and I will try to get a sight of this Lindabrides of his,

that is another."

CHAPTER XXIX.

Now fare thee well, my master--if true service

Be guerdon'd with hard looks, e'en cut the tow-line,

And let our barks across the pathless flood

Hold different courses--THE SHIPWRECK.

Tressilian walked into the outer yard of the Castle scarce knowing what

to think of his late strange and most unexpected interview with Amy

Robsart, and dubious if he had done well, being entrusted with the

delegated authority of her father, to pass his word so solemnly to leave

her to her own guidance for so many hours. Yet how could he have denied

her request--dependent as she had too probably rendered herself upon

Varney? Such was his natural reasoning. The happiness of her future

life might depend upon his not driving her to extremities; and since no

authority of Tressilian's could extricate her from the power of Varney,

supposing he was to acknowledge Amy to be his wife, what title had he

to destroy the hope of domestic peace, which might yet remain to her,

by setting enmity betwixt them? Tressilian resolved, therefore,

scrupulously to observe his word pledged to Amy, both because it had

been given, and because, as he still thought, while he considered and

reconsidered that extraordinary interview, it could not with justice or

propriety have been refused.

In one respect, he had gained much towards securing effectual protection

for this unhappy and still beloved object of his early affection. Amy

was no longer mewed up in a distant and solitary retreat under the

charge of persons of doubtful reputation. She was in the Castle of

Kenilworth, within the verge of the Royal Court for the time, free from

all risk of violence, and liable to be produced before Elizabeth on

the first summons. These were circumstances which could not but assist

greatly the efforts which he might have occasion to use in her behalf.

While he was thus balancing the advantages and perils which attended her

unexpected presence in Kenilworth, Tressilian was hastily and anxiously

accosted by Wayland, who, after ejaculating, "Thank God, your worship is

found at last!" proceeded with breathless caution to pour into his ear

the intelligence that the lady had escaped from Cumnor Place.

"And is at present in this Castle," said Tressilian. "I know it, and

I have seen her. Was it by her own choice she found refuge in my

apartment?"

"No," answered Wayland; "but I could think of no other way of safely

bestowing her, and was but too happy to find a deputy-usher who knew

where you were quartered--in jolly society truly, the hall on the one

hand, and the kitchen on the other!"

"Peace, this is no time for jesting," answered Tressilian sternly.

"I wot that but too well," said the artist, "for I have felt these three

days as if I had a halter round my neck. This lady knows not her own

mind--she will have none of your aid--commands you not to be named to

her--and is about to put herself into the hands of my Lord Leicester.

I had never got her safe into your chamber, had she known the owner of

it."

"Is it possible," said Tressilian. "But she may have hopes the Earl will

exert his influence in her favour over his villainous dependant."

"I know nothing of that," said Wayland; "but I believe, if she is to

reconcile herself with either Leicester or Varney, the side of the

Castle of Kenilworth which will be safest for us will be the outside,

from which we can fastest fly away. It is not my purpose to abide an

instant after delivery of the letter to Leicester, which waits but your

commands to find its way to him. See, here it is--but no--a plague on

it--I must have left it in my dog-hole, in the hay-loft yonder, where I

am to sleep."

"Death and fury!" said Tressilian, transported beyond his usual

patience; "thou hast not lost that on which may depend a stake more

important than a thousand such lives as thine?"

"Lost it!" answered Wayland readily; "that were a jest indeed! No, sir,

I have it carefully put up with my night-sack, and some matters I have

occasion to use; I will fetch it in an instant."

"Do so," said Tressilian; "be faithful, and thou shalt be well rewarded.

But if I have reason to suspect thee, a dead dog were in better case

than thou!"

Wayland bowed, and took his leave with seeming confidence and alacrity,

but, in fact, filled with the utmost dread and confusion. The letter was

lost, that was certain, notwithstanding the apology which he had made to

appease the impatient displeasure of Tressilian. It was lost--it might

fall into wrong hands--it would then certainly occasion a discovery

of the whole intrigue in which he had been engaged; nor, indeed, did

Wayland see much prospect of its remaining concealed, in any event. He

felt much hurt, besides, at Tressilian's burst of impatience.

"Nay, if I am to be paid in this coin for services where my neck is

concerned, it is time I should look to myself. Here have I offended, for

aught I know, to the death, the lord of this stately castle, whose word

were as powerful to take away my life as the breath which speaks it

to blow out a farthing candle. And all this for a mad lady, and a

melancholy gallant, who, on the loss of a four-nooked bit of paper, has

his hand on his poignado, and swears death and fury!--Then there is the

Doctor and Varney.--I will save myself from the whole mess of them. Life

is dearer than gold. I will fly this instant, though I leave my reward

behind me."

These reflections naturally enough occurred to a mind like Wayland's,

who found himself engaged far deeper than he had expected in a train

of mysterious and unintelligible intrigues, in which the actors seemed

hardly to know their own course. And yet, to do him justice, his

personal fears were, in some degree, counterbalanced by his compassion

for the deserted state of the lady.

"I care not a groat for Master Tressilian," he said; "I have done more

than bargain by him, and I have brought his errant-damosel within his

reach, so that he may look after her himself. But I fear the poor thing

is in much danger amongst these stormy spirits. I will to her chamber,

and tell her the fate which has befallen her letter, that she may write

another if she list. She cannot lack a messenger, I trow, where there

are so many lackeys that can carry a letter to their lord. And I will

tell her also that I leave the Castle, trusting her to God, her own

guidance, and Master Tressilian's care and looking after. Perhaps she

may remember the ring she offered me--it was well earned, I trow; but

she is a lovely creature, and--marry hang the ring! I will not bear

a base spirit for the matter. If I fare ill in this world for my

good-nature, I shall have better chance in the next. So now for the

lady, and then for the road."

With the stealthy step and jealous eye of the cat that steals on her

prey, Wayland resumed the way to the Countess's chamber, sliding along

by the side of the courts and passages, alike observant of all around

him, and studious himself to escape observation. In this manner he

crossed the outward and inward Castle yard, and the great arched

passage, which, running betwixt the range of kitchen offices and the

hall, led to the bottom of the little winding-stair that gave access to

the chambers of Mervyn's Tower.

The artist congratulated himself on having escaped the various perils of

his journey, and was in the act of ascending by two steps at once, when

he observed that the shadow of a man, thrown from a door which stood

ajar, darkened the opposite wall of the staircase. Wayland drew back

cautiously, went down to the inner courtyard, spent about a quarter of

an hour, which seemed at least quadruple its usual duration, in walking

from place to place, and then returned to the tower, in hopes to find

that the lurker had disappeared. He ascended as high as the suspicious

spot--there was no shadow on the wall; he ascended a few yards

farther--the door was still ajar, and he was doubtful whether to advance

or retreat, when it was suddenly thrown wide open, and Michael Lambourne

bolted out upon the astonished Wayland. "Who the devil art thou? and

what seekest thou in this part of the Castle? march into that chamber,

and be hanged to thee!"

"I am no dog, to go at every man's whistle," said the artist, affecting

a confidence which was belied by a timid shake in his voice.

"Sayest thou me so?--Come hither, Lawrence Staples."

A huge, ill-made and ill-looked fellow, upwards of six feet high,

appeared at the door, and Lambourne proceeded: "If thou be'st so fond of

this tower, my friend, thou shalt see its foundations, good twelve feet

below the bed of the lake, and tenanted by certain jolly toads, snakes,

and so forth, which thou wilt find mighty good company. Therefore, once

more I ask you in fair play, who thou art, and what thou seekest here?"

"If the dungeon-grate once clashes behind me," thought Wayland, "I am a

gone man." He therefore answered submissively, "He was the poor juggler

whom his honour had met yesterday in Weatherly Bottom."

"And what juggling trick art thou playing in this tower? Thy gang," said

Lambourne, "lie over against Clinton's buildings."

"I came here to see my sister," said the juggler, "who is in Master

Tressilian's chamber, just above."

"Aha!" said Lambourne, smiling, "here be truths! Upon my honour, for a

stranger, this same Master Tressilian makes himself at home among us,

and furnishes out his cell handsomely, with all sorts of commodities.

This will be a precious tale of the sainted Master Tressilian, and will

be welcome to some folks, as a purse of broad pieces to me.--Hark ye,

fellow," he continued, addressing Wayland, "thou shalt not give Puss

a hint to steal away we must catch her in her form. So, back with that

pitiful sheep-biting visage of thine, or I will fling thee from the

window of the tower, and try if your juggling skill can save your

bones."

"Your worship will not be so hardhearted, I trust," said Wayland; "poor

folk must live. I trust your honour will allow me to speak with my

sister?"

"Sister on Adam's side, I warrant," said Lambourne; "or, if otherwise,

the more knave thou. But sister or no sister, thou diest on point of

fox, if thou comest a-prying to this tower once more. And now I think of

it--uds daggers and death!--I will see thee out of the Castle, for this

is a more main concern than thy jugglery."

"But, please your worship," said Wayland, "I am to enact Arion in the

pageant upon the lake this very evening."

"I will act it myself by Saint Christopher!" said Lambourne. "Orion,

callest thou him?--I will act Orion, his belt and his seven stars

to boot. Come along, for a rascal knave as thou art--follow me! Or

stay--Lawrence, do thou bring him along."

Lawrence seized by the collar of the cloak the unresisting juggler;

while Lambourne, with hasty steps, led the way to that same sallyport,

or secret postern, by which Tressilian had returned to the Castle, and

which opened in the western wall at no great distance from Mervyn's

Tower.

While traversing with a rapid foot the space betwixt the tower and the

sallyport, Wayland in vain racked his brain for some device which might

avail the poor lady, for whom, notwithstanding his own imminent danger,

he felt deep interest. But when he was thrust out of the Castle, and

informed by Lambourne, with a tremendous oath, that instant death would

be the consequence of his again approaching it, he cast up his hands

and eyes to heaven, as if to call God to witness he had stood to the

uttermost in defence of the oppressed; then turned his back on the proud

towers of Kenilworth, and went his way to seek a humbler and safer place

of refuge.

Lawrence and Lambourne gazed a little while after Wayland, and then

turned to go back to their tower, when the former thus addressed his

companion: "Never credit me, Master Lambourne, if I can guess why thou

hast driven this poor caitiff from the Castle, just when he was to bear

a part in the show that was beginning, and all this about a wench."

"Ah, Lawrence," replied Lambourne, "thou art thinking of Black Joan

Jugges of Slingdon, and hast sympathy with human frailty. But, corragio,

most noble Duke of the Dungeon and Lord of Limbo, for thou art as dark

in this matter as thine own dominions of Little-ease. My most reverend

Signior of the Low Countries of Kenilworth, know that our most notable

master, Richard Varney, would give as much to have a hole in this same

Tressilian's coat, as would make us some fifty midnight carousals, with

the full leave of bidding the steward go snick up, if he came to startle

us too soon from our goblets."

"Nay, an that be the case, thou hast right," said Lawrence Staples,

the upper-warder, or, in common phrase, the first jailer, of Kenilworth

Castle, and of the Liberty and Honour belonging thereto. "But how

will you manage when you are absent at the Queen's entrance, Master

Lambourne; for methinks thou must attend thy master there?"

"Why thou, mine honest prince of prisons, must keep ward in my absence.

Let Tressilian enter if he will, but see thou let no one come out. If

the damsel herself would make a break, as 'tis not unlike she may, scare

her back with rough words; she is but a paltry player's wench after

all."

"Nay for that matter," said Lawrence, "I might shut the iron wicket upon

her that stands without the double door, and so force per force she will

be bound to her answer without more trouble."

"Then Tressilian will not get access to her," said Lambourne, reflecting

a moment. "But 'tis no matter; she will be detected in his chamber, and

that is all one. But confess, thou old bat's-eyed dungeon-keeper, that

you fear to keep awake by yourself in that Mervyn's Tower of thine?"

"Why, as to fear, Master Lambourne," said the fellow, "I mind it not the

turning of a key; but strange things have been heard and seen in that

tower. You must have heard, for as short time as you have been in

Kenilworth, that it is haunted by the spirit of Arthur ap Mervyn, a

wild chief taken by fierce Lord Mortimer when he was one of the Lords

Marchers of Wales, and murdered, as they say, in that same tower which

bears his name."

"Oh, I have heard the tale five hundred times," said Lambourne, "and how

the ghost is always most vociferous when they boil leeks and stirabout,

or fry toasted cheese, in the culinary regions. Santo Diavolo, man, hold

thy tongue, I know all about it!"

"Ay, but thou dost not, though," said the turnkey, "for as wise as thou

wouldst make thyself. Ah, it is an awful thing to murder a prisoner in

his ward!--you that may have given a man a stab in a dark street know

nothing of it. To give a mutinous fellow a knock on the head with the

keys, and bid him be quiet, that's what I call keeping order in the

ward; but to draw weapon and slay him, as was done to this Welsh lord,

THAT raises you a ghost that will render your prison-house untenantable

by any decent captive for some hundred years. And I have that regard

for my prisoners, poor things, that I have put good squires and men of

worship, that have taken a ride on the highway, or slandered my Lord of

Leicester, or the like, fifty feet under ground, rather than I would

put them into that upper chamber yonder that they call Mervyn's Bower.

Indeed, by good Saint Peter of the Fetters, I marvel my noble lord, or

Master Varney, could think of lodging guests there; and if this Master

Tressilian could get any one to keep him company, and in especial a

pretty wench, why, truly, I think he was in the right on't."

"I tell thee," said Lambourne, leading the way into the turnkey's

apartment, "thou art an ass. Go bolt the wicket on the stair, and

trouble not thy noddle about ghosts. Give me the wine stoup, man; I am

somewhat heated with chafing with yonder rascal."

While Lambourne drew a long draught from a pitcher of claret, which he

made use of without any cup, the warder went on, vindicating his own

belief in the supernatural.

"Thou hast been few hours in this Castle, and hast been for the whole

space so drunk, Lambourne, that thou art deaf, dumb, and blind. But we

should hear less of your bragging were you to pass a night with us at

full moon; for then the ghost is busiest, and more especially when a

rattling wind sets in from the north-west, with some sprinkling of rain,

and now and then a growl of thunder. Body o' me, what crackings and

clashings, what groanings and what howlings, will there be at such times

in Mervyn's Bower, right as it were over our heads, till the matter of

two quarts of distilled waters has not been enough to keep my lads and

me in some heart!"

"Pshaw, man!" replied Lambourne, on whom his last draught, joined to

repeated visitations of the pitcher upon former occasions, began to make

some innovation, "thou speakest thou knowest not what about spirits. No

one knows justly what to say about them; and, in short, least said may

in that matter be soonest amended. Some men believe in one thing, some

in another--it is all matter of fancy. I have known them of all sorts,

my dear Lawrence Lock-the-door, and sensible men too. There's a great

lord--we'll pass his name, Lawrence--he believes in the stars and the

moon, the planets and their courses, and so forth, and that they twinkle

exclusively for his benefit, when in sober, or rather in drunken truth,

Lawrence, they are only shining to keep honest fellows like me out

of the kennel. Well, sir, let his humour pass; he is great enough to

indulge it. Then, look ye, there is another--a very learned man, I

promise you, and can vent Greek and Hebrew as fast as I can Thieves'

Latin he has an humour of sympathies and antipathies--of changing lead

into gold, and the like; why, via, let that pass too, and let him pay

those in transmigrated coin who are fools enough to let it be current

with them. Then here comest thou thyself, another great man, though

neither learned nor noble, yet full six feet high, and thou, like a

purblind mole, must needs believe in ghosts and goblins, and such like.

Now, there is, besides, a great man--that is, a great little man, or a

little great man, my dear Lawrence--and his name begins with V, and what

believes he? Why, nothing, honest Lawrence--nothing in earth, heaven, or

hell; and for my part, if I believe there is a devil, it is only because

I think there must be some one to catch our aforesaid friend by the back

'when soul and body sever,' as the ballad says; for your antecedent will

have a consequent--RARO ANTECEDENTEM, as Doctor Bircham was wont to say.

But this is Greek to you now, honest Lawrence, and in sooth learning is

dry work. Hand me the pitcher once more."

"In faith, if you drink more, Michael," said the warder, "you will be

in sorry case either to play Arion or to wait on your master on such a

solemn night; and I expect each moment to hear the great bell toll for

the muster at Mortimer's Tower, to receive the Queen."

While Staples remonstrated, Lambourne drank; and then setting down the

pitcher, which was nearly emptied, with a deep sigh, he said, in an

undertone, which soon rose to a high one as his speech proceeded, "Never

mind, Lawrence; if I be drunk, I know that shall make Varney uphold

me sober. But, as I said, never mind; I can carry my drink discreetly.

Moreover, I am to go on the water as Orion, and shall take cold unless

I take something comfortable beforehand. Not play Orion? Let us see the

best roarer that ever strained his lungs for twelve pence out-mouth

me! What if they see me a little disguised? Wherefore should any man be

sober to-night? answer me that. It is matter of loyalty to be merry;

and I tell thee there are those in the Castle who, if they are not merry

when drunk, have little chance to be merry when sober--I name no names,

Lawrence. But your pottle of sack is a fine shoeing-horn to pull on a

loyal humour, and a merry one. Huzza for Queen Elizabeth!--for the

noble Leicester!--for the worshipful Master Varney!--and for Michael

Lambourne, that can turn them all round his finger!"

So saying, he walked downstairs, and across the inner court.

The warder looked after him, shook his head, and while he drew close and

locked a wicket, which, crossing the staircase, rendered it impossible

for any one to ascend higher than the story immediately beneath Mervyn's

Bower, as Tressilian's chamber was named, he thus soliloquized with

himself--"It's a good thing to be a favourite. I well-nigh lost mine

office, because one frosty morning Master Varney thought I smelled of

aqua vitae; and this fellow can appear before him drunk as a wineskin,

and yet meet no rebuke. But then he is a pestilent clever fellow withal,

and no one can understand above one half of what he says."

CHAPTER XXX.

Now bid the steeple rock--she comes, she comes!--

Speak for us, bells--speak for us, shrill-tongued tuckets.

Stand to thy linstock, gunner; let thy cannon

Play such a peal, as if a paynim foe

Came stretch'd in turban'd ranks to storm the ramparts.

We will have pageants too--but that craves wit,

And I'm a rough-hewn soldier.--THE VIRGIN QUEEN--A TRAGI-COMEDY.

Tressilian, when Wayland had left him, as mentioned in the last chapter,

remained uncertain what he ought next to do, when Raleigh and Blount

came up to him arm in arm, yet, according to their wont, very eagerly

disputing together. Tressilian had no great desire for their society

in the present state of his feelings, but there was no possibility of

avoiding them; and indeed he felt that, bound by his promise not to

approach Amy, or take any step in her behalf, it would be his best

course at once to mix with general society, and to exhibit on his brow

as little as he could of the anguish and uncertainty which sat heavy

at his heart. He therefore made a virtue of necessity, and hailed his

comrades with, "All mirth to you, gentlemen! Whence come ye?"

"From Warwick, to be sure," said Blount; "we must needs home to change

our habits, like poor players, who are fain to multiply their persons to

outward appearance by change of suits; and you had better do the like,

Tressilian."

"Blount is right," said Raleigh; "the Queen loves such marks of

deference, and notices, as wanting in respect, those who, not arriving

in her immediate attendance, may appear in their soiled and ruffled

riding-dress. But look at Blount himself, Tressilian, for the love of

laughter, and see how his villainous tailor hath apparelled him--in

blue, green, and crimson, with carnation ribbons, and yellow roses in

his shoes!"

"Why, what wouldst thou have?" said Blount. "I told the cross-legged

thief to do his best, and spare no cost; and methinks these things are

gay enough--gayer than thine own. I'll be judged by Tressilian."

"I agree--I agree," said Walter Raleigh. "Judge betwixt us, Tressilian,

for the love of heaven!"

Tressilian, thus appealed to, looked at them both, and was immediately

sensible at a single glance that honest Blount had taken upon the

tailor's warrant the pied garments which he had chosen to make, and

was as much embarrassed by the quantity of points and ribbons which

garnished his dress, as a clown is in his holiday clothes; while the

dress of Raleigh was a well-fancied and rich suit, which the wearer bore

as a garb too well adapted to his elegant person to attract particular

attention. Tressilian said, therefore, "That Blount's dress was finest,

but Raleigh's the best fancied."

Blount was satisfied with his decision. "I knew mine was finest," he

said; "if that knave Doublestitch had brought me home such a simple

doublet as that of Raleigh's, I would have beat his brains out with his

own pressing-iron. Nay, if we must be fools, ever let us be fools of the

first head, say I."

"But why gettest thou not on thy braveries, Tressilian?" said Raleigh.

"I am excluded from my apartment by a silly mistake," said Tressilian,

"and separated for the time from my baggage. I was about to seek thee,

to beseech a share of thy lodging."

"And welcome," said Raleigh; "it is a noble one. My Lord of Leicester

has done us that kindness, and lodged us in princely fashion. If his

courtesy be extorted reluctantly, it is at least extended far. I would

advise you to tell your strait to the Earl's chamberlain--you will have

instant redress."

"Nay, it is not worth while, since you can spare me room," replied

Tressilian--"I would not be troublesome. Has any one come hither with

you?"

"Oh, ay," said Blount; "Varney and a whole tribe of Leicestrians,

besides about a score of us honest Sussex folk. We are all, it seems, to

receive the Queen at what they call the Gallery-tower, and witness some

fooleries there; and then we're to remain in attendance upon the Queen

in the Great Hall--God bless the mark!--while those who are now waiting

upon her Grace get rid of their slough, and doff their riding-suits.

Heaven help me, if her Grace should speak to me, I shall never know what

to answer!"

"And what has detained them so long at Warwick?" said Tressilian,

unwilling that their conversation should return to his own affairs.

"Such a succession of fooleries," said Blount, "as were never seen at

Bartholomew-fair. We have had speeches and players, and dogs and bears,

and men making monkeys and women moppets of themselves--I marvel the

Queen could endure it. But ever and anon came in something of 'the

lovely light of her gracious countenance,' or some such trash. Ah!

vanity makes a fool of the wisest. But come, let us on to this same

Gallery-tower--though I see not what thou Tressilian, canst do with thy

riding-dress and boots."

"I will take my station behind thee, Blount," said Tressilian, who

saw that his friend's unusual finery had taken a strong hold of his

imagination; "thy goodly size and gay dress will cover my defects."

"And so thou shalt, Edmund," said Blount. "In faith I am glad thou

thinkest my garb well-fancied, for all Mr. Wittypate here; for when one

does a foolish thing, it is right to do it handsomely."

So saying, Blount cocked his beaver, threw out his leg, and marched

manfully forward, as if at the head of his brigade of pikemen, ever and

anon looking with complaisance on his crimson stockings, and the huge

yellow roses which blossomed on his shoes. Tressilian followed, wrapt

in his own sad thoughts, and scarce minding Raleigh, whose quick fancy,

amused by the awkward vanity of his respectable friend, vented itself in

jests, which he whispered into Tressilian's ear.

In this manner they crossed the long bridge, or tilt-yard, and took

their station, with other gentlemen of quality, before the outer gate

of the Gallery, or Entrance-tower. The whole amounted to about forty

persons, all selected as of the first rank under that of knighthood, and

were disposed in double rows on either side of the gate, like a guard of

honour, within the close hedge of pikes and partisans which was formed

by Leicester's retainers, wearing his liveries. The gentlemen carried no

arms save their swords and daggers. These gallants were as gaily dressed

as imagination could devise; and as the garb of the time permitted

a great display of expensive magnificence, nought was to be seen but

velvet and cloth of gold and silver, ribbons, leathers, gems, and golden

chains. In spite of his more serious subjects of distress, Tressilian

could not help feeling that he, with his riding-suit, however handsome

it might be, made rather an unworthy figure among these "fierce

vanities," and the rather because he saw that his deshabille was

the subject of wonder among his own friends, and of scorn among the

partisans of Leicester.

We could not suppress this fact, though it may seem something at

variance with the gravity of Tressilian's character; but the truth is,

that a regard for personal appearance is a species of self-love,

from which the wisest are not exempt, and to which the mind clings so

instinctively that not only the soldier advancing to almost inevitable

death, but even the doomed criminal who goes to certain execution, shows

an anxiety to array his person to the best advantage. But this is a

digression.

It was the twilight of a summer night (9th July, 1575), the sun having

for some time set, and all were in anxious expectation of the Queen's

immediate approach. The multitude had remained assembled for many

hours, and their numbers were still rather on the increase. A profuse

distribution of refreshments, together with roasted oxen, and barrels of

ale set a-broach in different places of the road, had kept the populace

in perfect love and loyalty towards the Queen and her favourite, which

might have somewhat abated had fasting been added to watching. They

passed away the time, therefore, with the usual popular amusements of

whooping, hallooing, shrieking, and playing rude tricks upon each other,

forming the chorus of discordant sounds usual on such occasions. These

prevailed all through the crowded roads and fields, and especially

beyond the gate of the Chase, where the greater number of the common

sort were stationed; when, all of a sudden, a single rocket was seen to

shoot into the atmosphere, and, at the instant, far heard over flood and

field, the great bell of the Castle tolled.

Immediately there was a pause of dead silence, succeeded by a deep hum

of expectation, the united voice of many thousands, none of whom spoke

above their breath--or, to use a singular expression, the whisper of an

immense multitude.

"They come now, for certain," said Raleigh. "Tressilian, that sound is

grand. We hear it from this distance as mariners, after a long voyage,

hear, upon their night-watch, the tide rush upon some distant and

unknown shore."

"Mass!" answered Blount, "I hear it rather as I used to hear mine own

kine lowing from the close of Wittenswestlowe."

"He will assuredly graze presently," said Raleigh to Tressilian; "his

thought is all of fat oxen and fertile meadows. He grows little better

than one of his own beeves, and only becomes grand when he is provoked

to pushing and goring."

"We shall have him at that presently," said Tressilian, "if you spare

not your wit."

"Tush, I care not," answered Raleigh; "but thou too, Tressilian, hast

turned a kind of owl, that flies only by night--hast exchanged thy songs

for screechings, and good company for an ivy-tod."

"But what manner of animal art thou thyself, Raleigh," said Tressilian,

"that thou holdest us all so lightly?"

"Who--I?" replied Raleigh. "An eagle am I, that never will think of dull

earth while there is a heaven to soar in, and a sun to gaze upon."

"Well bragged, by Saint Barnaby!" said Blount; "but, good Master Eagle,

beware the cage, and beware the fowler. Many birds have flown as high

that I have seen stuffed with straw and hung up to scare kites.--But

hark, what a dead silence hath fallen on them at once!"

"The procession pauses," said Raleigh, "at the gate of the Chase, where

a sibyl, one of the FATIDICAE, meets the Queen, to tell her fortune. I

saw the verses; there is little savour in them, and her Grace has been

already crammed full with such poetical compliments. She whispered to

me, during the Recorder's speech yonder, at Ford-mill, as she entered

the liberties of Warwick, how she was 'PERTAESA BARBARAE LOQUELAE.'"

"The Queen whispered to HIM!" said Blount, in a kind of soliloquy; "Good

God, to what will this world come!"

His further meditations were interrupted by a shout of applause from the

multitude, so tremendously vociferous that the country echoed for miles

round. The guards, thickly stationed upon the road by which the Queen

was to advance, caught up the acclamation, which ran like wildfire to

the Castle, and announced to all within that Queen Elizabeth had entered

the Royal Chase of Kenilworth. The whole music of the Castle sounded

at once, and a round of artillery, with a salvo of small arms, was

discharged from the battlements; but the noise of drums and trumpets,

and even of the cannon themselves, was but faintly heard amidst the

roaring and reiterated welcomes of the multitude.

As the noise began to abate, a broad glare of light was seen to appear

from the gate of the Park, and broadening and brightening as it came

nearer, advanced along the open and fair avenue that led towards the

Gallery-tower; and which, as we have already noticed, was lined on

either hand by the retainers of the Earl of Leicester. The word was

passed along the line, "The Queen! The Queen! Silence, and stand fast!"

Onward came the cavalcade, illuminated by two hundred thick waxen

torches, in the hands of as many horsemen, which cast a light like that

of broad day all around the procession, but especially on the principal

group, of which the Queen herself, arrayed in the most splendid manner,

and blazing with jewels, formed the central figure. She was mounted on a

milk-white horse, which she reined with peculiar grace and dignity; and

in the whole of her stately and noble carriage you saw the daughter of

an hundred kings.

The ladies of the court, who rode beside her Majesty, had taken especial

care that their own external appearance should not be more glorious than

their rank and the occasion altogether demanded, so that no inferior

luminary might appear to approach the orbit of royalty. But their

personal charms, and the magnificence by which, under every prudential

restraint, they were necessarily distinguished, exhibited them as

the very flower of a realm so far famed for splendour and beauty. The

magnificence of the courtiers, free from such restraints as prudence

imposed on the ladies, was yet more unbounded.

Leicester, who glittered like a golden image with jewels and cloth of

gold, rode on her Majesty's right hand, as well in quality of her host

as of her master of the horse. The black steed which he mounted had

not a single white hair on his body, and was one of the most renowned

chargers in Europe, having been purchased by the Earl at large expense

for this royal occasion. As the noble animal chafed at the slow pace

of the procession, and, arching his stately neck, champed on the silver

bits which restrained him, the foam flew from his mouth, and speckled

his well-formed limbs as if with spots of snow. The rider well became

the high place which he held, and the proud steed which he bestrode; for

no man in England, or perhaps in Europe, was more perfect than Dudley in

horsemanship, and all other exercises belonging to his quality. He

was bareheaded as were all the courtiers in the train; and the red

torchlight shone upon his long, curled tresses of dark hair, and on his

noble features, to the beauty of which even the severest criticism

could only object the lordly fault, as it may be termed, of a forehead

somewhat too high. On that proud evening those features wore all the

grateful solicitude of a subject, to show himself sensible of the high

honour which the Queen was conferring on him, and all the pride and

satisfaction which became so glorious a moment. Yet, though neither eye

nor feature betrayed aught but feelings which suited the occasion, some

of the Earl's personal attendants remarked that he was unusually pale,

and they expressed to each other their fear that he was taking more

fatigue than consisted with his health.

Varney followed close behind his master, as the principal esquire in

waiting, and had charge of his lordship's black velvet bonnet, garnished

with a clasp of diamonds and surmounted by a white plume. He kept his

eye constantly on his master, and, for reasons with which the reader is

not unacquainted, was, among Leicester's numerous dependants, the one

who was most anxious that his lord's strength and resolution should

carry him successfully through a day so agitating. For although Varney

was one of the few, the very few moral monsters who contrive to lull

to sleep the remorse of their own bosoms, and are drugged into moral

insensibility by atheism, as men in extreme agony are lulled by opium,

yet he knew that in the breast of his patron there was already awakened

the fire that is never quenched, and that his lord felt, amid all the

pomp and magnificence we have described, the gnawing of the worm that

dieth not. Still, however, assured as Lord Leicester stood, by Varney's

own intelligence, that his Countess laboured under an indisposition

which formed an unanswerable apology to the Queen for her not appearing

at Kenilworth, there was little danger, his wily retainer thought, that

a man so ambitious would betray himself by giving way to any external

weakness.

The train, male and female, who attended immediately upon the Queen's

person, were, of course, of the bravest and the fairest--the highest

born nobles, and the wisest counsellors, of that distinguished reign,

to repeat whose names were but to weary the reader. Behind came a

long crowd of knights and gentlemen, whose rank and birth, however

distinguished, were thrown into shade, as their persons into the rear of

a procession whose front was of such august majesty.

Thus marshalled, the cavalcade approached the Gallery-tower, which

formed, as we have often observed, the extreme barrier of the Castle.

It was now the part of the huge porter to step forward; but the lubbard

was so overwhelmed with confusion of spirit--the contents of one immense

black jack of double ale, which he had just drunk to quicken his memory,

having treacherously confused the brain it was intended to clear--that

he only groaned piteously, and remained sitting on his stone seat; and

the Queen would have passed on without greeting, had not the gigantic

warder's secret ally, Flibbertigibbet, who lay perdue behind him, thrust

a pin into the rear of the short femoral garment which we elsewhere

described.

The porter uttered a sort of yell, which came not amiss into his part,

started up with his club, and dealt a sound douse or two on each side

of him; and then, like a coach-horse pricked by the spur, started off

at once into the full career of his address, and by dint of active

prompting on the part of Dickie Sludge, delivered, in sounds of gigantic

intonation, a speech which may be thus abridged--the reader being to

suppose that the first lines were addressed to the throng who approached

the gateway; the conclusion, at the approach of the Queen, upon sight of

whom, as struck by some heavenly vision, the gigantic warder dropped his

club, resigned his keys, and gave open way to the Goddess of the night,

and all her magnificent train.

"What stir, what turmoil, have we for the nones?

Stand back, my masters, or beware your bones!

Sirs, I'm a warder, and no man of straw,

My voice keeps order, and my club gives law.

Yet soft--nay, stay--what vision have we here?

What dainty darling's this--what peerless peer?

What loveliest face, that loving ranks unfold,

Like brightest diamond chased in purest gold?

Dazzled and blind, mine office I forsake,

My club, my key, my knee, my homage take.

Bright paragon, pass on in joy and bliss;--

Beshrew the gate that opes not wide at such a sight as this!"

[This is an imitation of Gascoigne's verses spoken by the

Herculean porter, as mentioned in the text. The original may be

found in the republication of the Princely Pleasures of

Kenilworth, by the same author, in the History of Kenilworth

already quoted. Chiswick, 1821.]

Elizabeth received most graciously the homage of the Herculean porter,

and, bending her head to him in requital, passed through his guarded

tower, from the top of which was poured a clamorous blast of warlike

music, which was replied to by other bands of minstrelsy placed at

different points on the Castle walls, and by others again stationed

in the Chase; while the tones of the one, as they yet vibrated on

the echoes, were caught up and answered by new harmony from different

quarters.

Amidst these bursts of music, which, as if the work of enchantment,

seemed now close at hand, now softened by distant space, now wailing so

low and sweet as if that distance were gradually prolonged until only

the last lingering strains could reach the ear, Queen Elizabeth crossed

the Gallery-tower, and came upon the long bridge, which extended from

thence to Mortimer's Tower, and which was already as light as day, so

many torches had been fastened to the palisades on either side. Most

of the nobles here alighted, and sent their horses to the neighbouring

village of Kenilworth, following the Queen on foot, as did the gentlemen

who had stood in array to receive her at the Gallery-tower.

On this occasion, as at different times during the evening, Raleigh

addressed himself to Tressilian, and was not a little surprised at

his vague and unsatisfactory answers; which, joined to his leaving his

apartment without any assigned reason, appearing in an undress when

it was likely to be offensive to the Queen, and some other symptoms of

irregularity which he thought he discovered, led him to doubt whether

his friend did not labour under some temporary derangement.

Meanwhile, the Queen had no sooner stepped on the bridge than a new

spectacle was provided; for as soon as the music gave signal that she

was so far advanced, a raft, so disposed as to resemble a small floating

island, illuminated by a great variety of torches, and surrounded by

floating pageants formed to represent sea-horses, on which sat Tritons,

Nereids, and other fabulous deities of the seas and rivers, made its

appearance upon the lake, and issuing from behind a small heronry where

it had been concealed, floated gently towards the farther end of the

bridge.

On the islet appeared a beautiful woman, clad in a watchet-coloured

silken mantle, bound with a broad girdle inscribed with characters like

the phylacteries of the Hebrews. Her feet and arms were bare, but her

wrists and ankles were adorned with gold bracelets of uncommon size.

Amidst her long, silky black hair she wore a crown or chaplet of

artificial mistletoe, and bore in her hand a rod of ebony tipped with

silver. Two Nymphs attended on her, dressed in the same antique and

mystical guise.

The pageant was so well managed that this Lady of the Floating Island,

having performed her voyage with much picturesque effect, landed at

Mortimer's Tower with her two attendants just as Elizabeth presented

herself before that outwork. The stranger then, in a well-penned speech,

announced herself as that famous Lady of the Lake renowned in the

stories of King Arthur, who had nursed the youth of the redoubted Sir

Lancelot, and whose beauty 'had proved too powerful both for the wisdom

and the spells of the mighty Merlin. Since that early period she had

remained possessed of her crystal dominions, she said, despite the

various men of fame and might by whom Kenilworth had been successively

tenanted. 'The Saxons, the Danes, the Normans, the Saintlowes, the

Clintons, the Montforts, the Mortimers, the Plantagenets, great though

they were in arms and magnificence, had never, she said, caused her

to raise her head from the waters which hid her crystal palace. But a

greater than all these great names had now appeared, and she came in

homage and duty to welcome the peerless Elizabeth to all sport which the

Castle and its environs, which lake or land, could afford.

The Queen received this address also with great courtesy, and made

answer in raillery, "We thought this lake had belonged to our own

dominions, fair dame; but since so famed a lady claims it for hers,

we will be glad at some other time to have further communing with you

touching our joint interests."

With this gracious answer the Lady of the Lake vanished, and Arion,

who was amongst the maritime deities, appeared upon his dolphin. But

Lambourne, who had taken upon him the part in the absence of Wayland,

being chilled with remaining immersed in an element to which he was not

friendly, having never got his speech by heart, and not having, like the

porter, the advantage of a prompter, paid it off with impudence, tearing

off his vizard, and swearing, "Cogs bones! he was none of Arion or Orion

either, but honest Mike Lambourne, that had been drinking her Majesty's

health from morning till midnight, and was come to bid her heartily

welcome to Kenilworth Castle."

This unpremeditated buffoonery answered the purpose probably better than

the set speech would have done. The Queen laughed heartily, and swore

(in her turn) that he had made the best speech she had heard that day.

Lambourne, who instantly saw his jest had saved his bones, jumped on

shore, gave his dolphin a kick, and declared he would never meddle with

fish again, except at dinner.

At the same time that the Queen was about to enter the Castle, that

memorable discharge of fireworks by water and land took place, which

Master Laneham, formerly introduced to the reader, has strained all his

eloquence to describe.

"Such," says the Clerk of the Council-chamber door "was the blaze of

burning darts, the gleams of stars coruscant, the streams and hail of

fiery sparks, lightnings of wildfire, and flight-shot of thunderbolts,

with continuance, terror, and vehemency, that the heavens thundered, the

waters surged, and the earth shook; and for my part, hardy as I am, it

made me very vengeably afraid."

[See Laneham's Account of the Queen's Entertainment at Killingworth

Castle, in 1575, a very diverting tract, written by as great a coxcomb

as ever blotted paper. [See Note 6] The original is extremely rare,

but it has been twice reprinted; once in Mr. Nichols's very curious and

interesting collection of the Progresses and Public Processions of

Queen Elizabeth, vol.i. and more lately in a beautiful antiquarian

publication, termed KENILWORTH ILLUSTRATED, printed at Chiswick, for

Meridew of Coventry and Radcliffe of Birmingham. It contains reprints

of Laneham's Letter, Gascoigne's Princely Progress, and other scarce

pieces, annotated with accuracy and ability. The author takes the

liberty to refer to this work as his authority for the account of the

festivities.

I am indebted for a curious ground-plan of the Castle of Kenilworth,

as it existed in Queen Elizabeth's time, to the voluntary kindness of

Richard Badnall Esq. of Olivebank, near Liverpool. From his obliging

communication, I learn that the original sketch was found among the

manuscripts of the celebrated J. J. Rousseau, when he left England.

These were entrusted by the philosopher to the care of his friend

Mr. Davenport, and passed from his legatee into the possession of Mr.

Badnall.]

CHAPTER XXXI.

Nay, this is matter for the month of March,

When hares are maddest. Either speak in reason,

Giving cold argument the wall of passion,

Or I break up the court. --BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER.

It is by no means our purpose to detail minutely all the princely

festivities of Kenilworth, after the fashion of Master Robert Laneham,

whom we quoted in the conclusion of the last chapter. It is sufficient

to say that under discharge of the splendid fireworks, which we

have borrowed Laneham's eloquence to describe, the Queen entered the

base-court of Kenilworth, through Mortimer's Tower, and moving on

through pageants of heathen gods and heroes of antiquity, who offered

gifts and compliments on the bended knee, at length found her way to

the Great Hall of the Castle, gorgeously hung for her reception with the

richest silken tapestry, misty with perfumes, and sounding to strains

of soft and delicious music. From the highly-carved oaken roof hung

a superb chandelier of gilt bronze, formed like a spread eagle, whose

outstretched wings supported three male and three female figures,

grasping a pair of branches in each hand. The Hall was thus illuminated

by twenty-four torches of wax. At the upper end of the splendid

apartment was a state canopy, overshadowing a royal throne, and beside

it was a door, which opened to a long suite of apartments, decorated

with the utmost magnificence for the Queen and her ladies, whenever it

should be her pleasure to be private.

The Earl of Leicester having handed the Queen up to her throne, and

seated her there, knelt down before her, and kissing the hand which she

held out, with an air in which romantic and respectful gallantry was

happily mingled with the air of loyal devotion, he thanked her, in terms

of the deepest gratitude, for the highest honour which a sovereign could

render to a subject. So handsome did he look when kneeling before her,

that Elizabeth was tempted to prolong the scene a little longer than

there was, strictly speaking, necessity for; and ere she raised him,

she passed her hand over his head, so near as almost to touch his long,

curled, and perfumed hair, and with a movement of fondness that seemed

to intimate she would, if she dared, have made the motion a slight

caress.

[To justify what may be considered as a high-coloured picture, the

author quotes the original of the courtly and shrewd Sir James Melville,

being then Queen Mary's envoy at the court of London.

"I was required," says Sir James, "to stay till I had seen him made

Earle of Leicester, and Baron of Denbigh, with great solemnity; herself

(Elizabeth) helping to put on his ceremonial, he sitting on his knees

before her, keeping a great gravity and a discreet behaviour; but she

could not refrain from putting her hand to his neck to kittle (i.e.,

tickle) him, smilingly, the French Ambassador and I standing beside

her."--MELVILLE'S MEMOIRS, BANNATYNE EDITION, p. 120.]

She at length raised him, and standing beside the throne, he explained

to her the various preparations which had been made for her amusement

and accommodation, all of which received her prompt and gracious

approbation. The Earl then prayed her Majesty for permission that he

himself, and the nobles who had been in attendance upon her during the

journey, might retire for a few minutes, and put themselves into a guise

more fitting for dutiful attendance, during which space those gentlemen

of worship (pointing to Varney, Blount, Tressilian, and others), who

had already put themselves into fresh attire, would have the honour of

keeping her presence-chamber.

"Be it so, my lord," answered the Queen; "you could manage a theatre

well, who can thus command a double set of actors. For ourselves, we

will receive your courtesies this evening but clownishly, since it is

not our purpose to change our riding attire, being in effect something

fatigued with a journey which the concourse of our good people hath

rendered slow, though the love they have shown our person hath, at the

same time, made it delightful."

Leicester, having received this permission, retired accordingly, and

was followed by those nobles who had attended the Queen to Kenilworth

in person. The gentlemen who had preceded them, and were, of course,

dressed for the solemnity, remained in attendance. But being most of

them of rather inferior rank, they remained at an awful distance

from the throne which Elizabeth occupied. The Queen's sharp eye soon

distinguished Raleigh amongst them, with one or two others who were

personally known to her, and she instantly made them a sign to approach,

and accosted them very graciously. Raleigh, in particular, the adventure

of whose cloak, as well as the incident of the verses, remained on

her mind, was very graciously received; and to him she most frequently

applied for information concerning the names and rank of those who

were in presence. These he communicated concisely, and not without some

traits of humorous satire, by which Elizabeth seemed much amused. "And

who is yonder clownish fellow?" she said, looking at Tressilian, whose

soiled dress on this occasion greatly obscured his good mien.

"A poet, if it please your Grace," replied Raleigh.

"I might have guessed that from his careless garb," said Elizabeth.

"I have known some poets so thoughtless as to throw their cloaks into

gutters."

"It must have been when the sun dazzled both their eyes and their

judgment," answered Raleigh.

Elizabeth smiled, and proceeded, "I asked that slovenly fellow's name,

and you only told me his profession."

"Tressilian is his name," said Raleigh, with internal reluctance, for

he foresaw nothing favourable to his friend from the manner in which she

took notice of him.

"Tressilian!" answered Elizabeth. "Oh, the Menelaus of our romance. Why,

he has dressed himself in a guise that will go far to exculpate his fair

and false Helen. And where is Farnham, or whatever his name is--my Lord

of Leicester's man, I mean--the Paris of this Devonshire tale?"

With still greater reluctance Raleigh named and pointed out to her

Varney, for whom the tailor had done all that art could perform in

making his exterior agreeable; and who, if he had not grace, had a sort

of tact and habitual knowledge of breeding, which came in place of it.

The Queen turned her eyes from the one to the other. "I doubt," she

said, "this same poetical Master Tressilian, who is too learned, I

warrant me, to remember whose presence he was to appear in, may be one

of those of whom Geoffrey Chaucer says wittily, the wisest clerks are

not the wisest men. I remember that Varney is a smooth-tongued varlet. I

doubt this fair runaway hath had reasons for breaking her faith."

To this Raleigh durst make no answer, aware how little he should benefit

Tressilian by contradicting the Queen's sentiments, and not at all

certain, on the whole, whether the best thing that could befall him

would not be that she should put an end at once by her authority to this

affair, upon which it seemed to him Tressilian's thoughts were fixed

with unavailing and distressing pertinacity. As these reflections

passed through his active brain, the lower door of the hall opened, and

Leicester, accompanied by several of his kinsmen, and of the nobles who

had embraced his faction, re-entered the Castle Hall.

The favourite Earl was now apparelled all in white, his shoes being of

white velvet; his under-stocks (or stockings) of knit silk; his upper

stocks of white velvet, lined with cloth of silver, which was shown at

the slashed part of the middle thigh; his doublet of cloth of

silver, the close jerkin of white velvet, embroidered with silver and

seed-pearl, his girdle and the scabbard of his sword of white velvet

with golden buckles; his poniard and sword hilted and mounted with gold;

and over all a rich, loose robe of white satin, with a border of golden

embroidery a foot in breadth. The collar of the Garter, and the azure

garter itself around his knee, completed the appointments of the Earl

of Leicester; which were so well matched by his fair stature, graceful

gesture, fine proportion of body, and handsome countenance, that at that

moment he was admitted by all who saw him as the goodliest person whom

they had ever looked upon. Sussex and the other nobles were also richly

attired, but in point of splendour and gracefulness of mien Leicester

far exceeded them all.

Elizabeth received him with great complacency. "We have one piece of

royal justice," she said, "to attend to. It is a piece of justice, too,

which interests us as a woman, as well as in the character of mother and

guardian of the English people."

An involuntary shudder came over Leicester as he bowed low, expressive

of his readiness to receive her royal commands; and a similar cold fit

came over Varney, whose eyes (seldom during that evening removed from

his patron) instantly perceived from the change in his looks, slight as

that was, of what the Queen was speaking. But Leicester had wrought

his resolution up to the point which, in his crooked policy, he judged

necessary; and when Elizabeth added, "it is of the matter of Varney

and Tressilian we speak--is the lady here, my lord?" his answer was

ready--"Gracious madam, she is not."

Elizabeth bent her brews and compressed her lips. "Our orders were

strict and positive, my lord," was her answer--

"And should have been obeyed, good my liege," replied Leicester, "had

they been expressed in the form of the lightest wish. But--Varney, step

forward--this gentleman will inform your Grace of the cause why the

lady" (he could not force his rebellious tongue to utter the words--HIS

WIFE) "cannot attend on your royal presence."

Varney advanced, and pleaded with readiness, what indeed he firmly

believed, the absolute incapacity of the party (for neither did he dare,

in Leicester's presence, term her his wife) to wait on her Grace.

"Here," said he, "are attestations from a most learned physician, whose

skill and honour are well known to my good Lord of Leicester, and from

an honest and devout Protestant, a man of credit and substance, one

Anthony Foster, the gentleman in whose house she is at present bestowed,

that she now labours under an illness which altogether unfits her for

such a journey as betwixt this Castle and the neighbourhood of Oxford."

"This alters the matter," said the Queen, taking the certificates in

her hand, and glancing at their contents.--"Let Tressilian come

forward.--Master Tressilian, we have much sympathy for your situation,

the rather that you seem to have set your heart deeply on this Amy

Robsart, or Varney. Our power, thanks to God, and the willing obedience

of a loving people, is worth much, but there are some things which it

cannot compass. We cannot, for example, command the affections of a

giddy young girl, or make her love sense and learning better than a

courtier's fine doublet; and we cannot control sickness, with which it

seems this lady is afflicted, who may not, by reason of such infirmity,

attend our court here, as we had required her to do. Here are the

testimonials of the physician who hath her under his charge, and the

gentleman in whose house she resides, so setting forth."

"Under your Majesty's favour," said Tressilian hastily, and in his alarm

for the consequence of the imposition practised on the Queen forgetting

in part at least his own promise to Amy, "these certificates speak not

the truth."

"How, sir!" said the Queen--"impeach my Lord of Leicester's veracity!

But you shall have a fair hearing. In our presence the meanest of

our subjects shall be heard against the proudest, and the least known

against the most favoured; therefore you shall be heard fairly, but

beware you speak not without a warrant! Take these certificates in your

own hand, look at them carefully, and say manfully if you impugn the

truth of them, and upon what evidence."

As the Queen spoke, his promise and all its consequences rushed on the

mind of the unfortunate Tressilian, and while it controlled his natural

inclination to pronounce that a falsehood which he knew from the

evidence of his senses to be untrue, gave an indecision and irresolution

to his appearance and utterance which made strongly against him in

the mind of Elizabeth, as well as of all who beheld him. He turned

the papers over and over, as if he had been an idiot, incapable of

comprehending their contents. The Queen's impatience began to become

visible. "You are a scholar, sir," she said, "and of some note, as I

have heard; yet you seem wondrous slow in reading text hand. How say

you, are these certificates true or no?"

"Madam," said Tressilian, with obvious embarrassment and hesitation,

anxious to avoid admitting evidence which he might afterwards have

reason to confute, yet equally desirous to keep his word to Amy, and to

give her, as he had promised, space to plead her own cause in her own

way--"Madam--Madam, your Grace calls on me to admit evidence which ought

to be proved valid by those who found their defence upon them."

"Why, Tressilian, thou art critical as well as poetical," said the

Queen, bending on him a brow of displeasure; "methinks these writings,

being produced in the presence of the noble Earl to whom this Castle

pertains, and his honour being appealed to as the guarantee of their

authenticity, might be evidence enough for thee. But since thou listest

to be so formal--Varney, or rather my Lord of Leicester, for the affair

becomes yours" (these words, though spoken at random, thrilled through

the Earl's marrow and bones), "what evidence have you as touching these

certificates?"

Varney hastened to reply, preventing Leicester--"So please your Majesty,

my young Lord of Oxford, who is here in presence, knows Master Anthony

Foster's hand and his character."

The Earl of Oxford, a young unthrift, whom Foster had more than once

accommodated with loans on usurious interest, acknowledged, on this

appeal, that he knew him as a wealthy and independent franklin, supposed

to be worth much money, and verified the certificate produced to be his

handwriting.

"And who speaks to the Doctor's certificate?" said the Queen. "Alasco,

methinks, is his name."

Masters, her Majesty's physician (not the less willingly that he

remembered his repulse from Sayes Court, and thought that his present

testimony might gratify Leicester, and mortify the Earl of Sussex and

his faction), acknowledged he had more than once consulted with Doctor

Alasco, and spoke of him as a man of extraordinary learning and hidden

acquirements, though not altogether in the regular course of practice.

The Earl of Huntingdon, Lord Leicester's brother-in-law, and the old

Countess of Rutland, next sang his praises, and both remembered the

thin, beautiful Italian hand in which he was wont to write his receipts,

and which corresponded to the certificate produced as his.

"And now, I trust, Master Tressilian, this matter is ended," said the

Queen. "We will do something ere the night is older to reconcile old Sir

Hugh Robsart to the match. You have done your duty something more than

boldly; but we were no woman had we not compassion for the wounds which

true love deals, so we forgive your audacity, and your uncleansed

boots withal, which have well-nigh overpowered my Lord of Leicester's

perfumes."

So spoke Elizabeth, whose nicety of scent was one of the characteristics

of her organization, as appeared long afterwards when she expelled Essex

from her presence, on a charge against his boots similar to that which

she now expressed against those of Tressilian.

But Tressilian had by this time collected himself, astonished as he had

at first been by the audacity of the falsehood so feasibly supported,

and placed in array against the evidence of his own eyes. He rushed

forward, kneeled down, and caught the Queen by the skirt of her robe.

"As you are Christian woman," he said, "madam, as you are crowned Queen,

to do equal justice among your subjects--as you hope yourself to have

fair hearing (which God grant you) at that last bar at which we must all

plead, grant me one small request! Decide not this matter so hastily.

Give me but twenty-four hours' interval, and I will, at the end of that

brief space, produce evidence which will show to demonstration that

these certificates, which state this unhappy lady to be now ill at ease

in Oxfordshire, are false as hell!"

"Let go my train, sir!" said Elizabeth, who was startled at his

vehemence, though she had too much of the lion in her to fear; "the

fellow must be distraught. That witty knave, my godson Harrington, must

have him into his rhymes of Orlando Furioso! And yet, by this light,

there is something strange in the vehemence of his demand.--Speak,

Tressilian, what wilt thou do if, at the end of these four-and-twenty

hours, thou canst not confute a fact so solemnly proved as this lady's

illness?"

"I will lay down my head on the block," answered Tressilian.

"Pshaw!" replied the Queen, "God's light! thou speakest like a fool.

What head falls in England but by just sentence of English law? I ask

thee, man--if thou hast sense to understand me--wilt thou, if thou

shalt fail in this improbable attempt of thine, render me a good and

sufficient reason why thou dost undertake it?"

Tressilian paused, and again hesitated; because he felt convinced that

if, within the interval demanded, Amy should become reconciled to her

husband, he would in that case do her the worst of offices by again

ripping up the whole circumstances before Elizabeth, and showing

how that wise and jealous princess had been imposed upon by false

testimonials. The consciousness of this dilemma renewed his extreme

embarrassment of look, voice, and manner; he hesitated, looked down, and

on the Queen repeating her question with a stern voice and flashing

eye, he admitted with faltering words, "That it might be--he could not

positively--that is, in certain events--explain the reasons and grounds

on which he acted."

"Now, by the soul of King Henry," said the Queen, "this is either

moonstruck madness or very knavery!--Seest thou, Raleigh, thy friend is

far too Pindaric for this presence. Have him away, and make us quit of

him, or it shall be the worse for him; for his flights are too unbridled

for any place but Parnassus, or Saint Luke's Hospital. But come back

instantly thyself, when he is placed under fitting restraint.--We wish

we had seen the beauty which could make such havoc in a wise man's

brain."

Tressilian was again endeavouring to address the Queen, when Raleigh, in

obedience to the orders he had received, interfered, and with Blount's

assistance, half led, half forced him out of the presence-chamber, where

he himself indeed began to think his appearance did his cause more harm

than good.

When they had attained the antechamber, Raleigh entreated Blount to see

Tressilian safely conducted into the apartments allotted to the Earl of

Sussex's followers, and, if necessary, recommended that a guard should

be mounted on him.

"This extravagant passion," he said, "and, as it would seem, the news of

the lady's illness, has utterly wrecked his excellent judgment. But it

will pass away if he be kept quiet. Only let him break forth again at

no rate; for he is already far in her Highness's displeasure, and

should she be again provoked, she will find for him a worse place of

confinement, and sterner keepers."

"I judged as much as that he was mad," said Nicholas Blount, looking

down upon his own crimson stockings and yellow roses, "whenever I saw

him wearing yonder damned boots, which stunk so in her nostrils. I will

but see him stowed, and be back with you presently. But, Walter, did the

Queen ask who I was?--methought she glanced an eye at me."

"Twenty--twenty eye-glances she sent! and I told her all--how thou wert

a brave soldier, and a--But for God's sake, get off Tressilian!"

"I will--I will," said Blount; "but methinks this court-haunting is no

such bad pastime, after all. We shall rise by it, Walter, my brave lad.

Thou saidst I was a good soldier, and a--what besides, dearest Walter?"

"An all unutterable-codshead. For God's sake, begone!"

Tressilian, without further resistance or expostulation followed, or

rather suffered himself to be conducted by Blount to Raleigh's lodging,

where he was formally installed into a small truckle-bed placed in a

wardrobe, and designed for a domestic. He saw but too plainly that

no remonstrances would avail to procure the help or sympathy of his

friends, until the lapse of the time for which he had pledged himself

to remain inactive should enable him either to explain the whole

circumstances to them, or remove from him every pretext or desire of

further interference with the fortunes of Amy, by her having found means

to place herself in a state of reconciliation with her husband.

With great difficulty, and only by the most patient and mild

remonstrances with Blount, he escaped the disgrace and mortification of

having two of Sussex's stoutest yeomen quartered in his apartment.

At last, however, when Nicholas had seen him fairly deposited in his

truckle-bed, and had bestowed one or two hearty kicks, and as hearty

curses, on the boots, which, in his lately acquired spirit of foppery,

he considered as a strong symptom, if not the cause, of his friend's

malady, he contented himself with the modified measure of locking the

door on the unfortunate Tressilian, whose gallant and disinterested

efforts to save a female who had treated him with ingratitude thus

terminated for the present in the displeasure of his Sovereign and the

conviction of his friends that he was little better than a madman.

CHAPTER XXXII.

The wisest Sovereigns err like private men,

And royal hand has sometimes laid the sword

Of chivalry upon a worthless shoulder,

Which better had been branded by the hangman.

What then?--Kings do their best; and they and we

Must answer for the intent, and not the event.--OLD PLAY.

"It is a melancholy matter," said the Queen, when Tressilian was

withdrawn, "to see a wise and learned man's wit thus pitifully

unsettled. Yet this public display of his imperfection of brain plainly

shows us that his supposed injury and accusation were fruitless; and

therefore, my Lord of Leicester, we remember your suit formerly made

to us in behalf of your faithful servant Varney, whose good gifts and

fidelity, as they are useful to you, ought to have due reward from us,

knowing well that your lordship, and all you have, are so earnestly

devoted to our service. And we render Varney the honour more especially

that we are a guest, and, we fear, a chargeable and troublesome one,

under your lordship's roof; and also for the satisfaction of the good

old Knight of Devon, Sir Hugh Robsart, whose daughter he hath married,

and we trust the especial mark of grace which we are about to confer may

reconcile him to his son-in-law.--Your sword, my Lord of Leicester."

The Earl unbuckled his sword, and taking it by the point, presented on

bended knee the hilt to Elizabeth.

She took it slowly drew it from the scabbard, and while the ladies who

stood around turned away their eyes with real or affected shuddering,

she noted with a curious eye the high polish and rich, damasked

ornaments upon the glittering blade.

"Had I been a man," she said, "methinks none of my ancestors would have

loved a good sword better. As it is with me, I like to look on one, and

could, like the Fairy of whom I have read in some Italian rhymes--were

my godson Harrington here, he could tell me the passage--even trim

my hair, and arrange my head-gear, in such a steel mirror as this

is.--Richard Varney, come forth, and kneel down. In the name of God and

Saint George, we dub thee knight! Be Faithful, Brave, and Fortunate.

Arise, Sir Richard Varney."

[The incident alluded to occurs in the poem of Orlando Innamorato

of Boiardo, libro ii. canto 4, stanza 25.

"Non era per ventura," etc.

It may be rendered thus:--

As then, perchance, unguarded was the tower,

So enter'd free Anglante's dauntless knight.

No monster and no giant guard the bower

In whose recess reclined the fairy light,

Robed in a loose cymar of lily white,

And on her lap a sword of breadth and might,

In whose broad blade, as in a mirror bright,

Like maid that trims her for a festal night,

The fairy deck'd her hair, and placed her coronet aright.

Elizabeth's attachment to the Italian school of poetry was singularly

manifested on a well-known occasion. Her godson, Sir John Harrington,

having offended her delicacy by translating some of the licentious

passages of the Orlando Furioso, she imposed on him, as a penance, the

task of rendering the WHOLE poem into English.]

Varney arose and retired, making a deep obeisance to the Sovereign who

had done him so much honour.

"The buckling of the spur, and what other rites remain," said the Queen,

"may be finished to-morrow in the chapel; for we intend Sir Richard

Varney a companion in his honours. And as we must not be partial in

conferring such distinction, we mean on this matter to confer with our

cousin of Sussex."

That noble Earl, who since his arrival at Kenilworth, and indeed since

the commencement of this Progress, had found himself in a subordinate

situation to Leicester, was now wearing a heavy cloud on his brow; a

circumstance which had not escaped the Queen, who hoped to appease his

discontent, and to follow out her system of balancing policy by a mark

of peculiar favour, the more gratifying as it was tendered at a moment

when his rival's triumph appeared to be complete.

At the summons of Queen Elizabeth, Sussex hastily approached her person;

and being asked on which of his followers, being a gentleman and of

merit, he would wish the honour of knighthood to be conferred, he

answered, with more sincerity than policy, that he would have ventured

to speak for Tressilian, to whom he conceived he owed his own life, and

who was a distinguished soldier and scholar, besides a man of unstained

lineage, "only," he said, "he feared the events of that night--" And

then he stopped.

"I am glad your lordship is thus considerate," said Elizabeth. "The

events of this night would make us, in the eyes of our subjects, as mad

as this poor brain-sick gentleman himself--for we ascribe his conduct to

no malice--should we choose this moment to do him grace."

"In that case," said the Earl of Sussex, somewhat discountenanced, "your

Majesty will allow me to name my master of the horse, Master Nicholas

Blount, a gentleman of fair estate and ancient name, who has served your

Majesty both in Scotland and Ireland, and brought away bloody marks on

his person, all honourably taken and requited."

The Queen could not help shrugging her shoulders slightly even at this

second suggestion; and the Duchess of Rutland, who read in the Queen's

manner that she had expected that Sussex would have named Raleigh, and

thus would have enabled her to gratify her own wish while she honoured

his recommendation, only waited the Queen's assent to what he had

proposed, and then said that she hoped, since these two high nobles had

been each permitted to suggest a candidate for the honours of chivalry,

she, in behalf of the ladies in presence, might have a similar

indulgence.

"I were no woman to refuse you such a boon," said the Queen, smiling.

"Then," pursued the Duchess, "in the name of these fair ladies present,

I request your Majesty to confer the rank of knighthood on Walter

Raleigh, whose birth, deeds of arms, and promptitude to serve our sex

with sword or pen, deserve such distinction from us all."

"Gramercy, fair ladies," said Elizabeth, smiling, "your boon is

granted, and the gentle squire Lack-Cloak shall become the good knight

Lack-Cloak, at your desire. Let the two aspirants for the honour of

chivalry step forward."

Blount was not as yet returned from seeing Tressilian, as he conceived,

safely disposed of; but Raleigh came forth, and kneeling down, received

at the hand of the Virgin Queen that title of honour, which was never

conferred on a more distinguished or more illustrious object.

Shortly afterwards Nicholas Blount entered, and hastily apprised by

Sussex, who met him at the door of the hall, of the Queen's gracious

purpose regarding him, he was desired to advance towards the throne. It

is a sight sometimes seen, and it is both ludicrous and pitiable; when

an honest man of plain common sense is surprised, by the coquetry of a

pretty woman, or any other cause, into those frivolous fopperies

which only sit well upon the youthful, the gay, and those to whom long

practice has rendered them a second nature. Poor Blount was in this

situation. His head was already giddy from a consciousness of unusual

finery, and the supposed necessity of suiting his manners to the gaiety

of his dress; and now this sudden view of promotion altogether completed

the conquest of the newly inhaled spirit of foppery over his natural

disposition, and converted a plain, honest, awkward man into a coxcomb

of a new and most ridiculous kind.

The knight-expectant advanced up the hall, the whole length of which he

had unfortunately to traverse, turning out his toes with so much zeal

that he presented his leg at every step with its broadside foremost,

so that it greatly resembled an old-fashioned table-knife with a curved

point, when seen sideways. The rest of his gait was in proportion

to this unhappy amble; and the implied mixture of bashful rear and

self-satisfaction was so unutterably ridiculous that Leicester's friends

did not suppress a titter, in which many of Sussex's partisans

were unable to resist joining, though ready to eat their nails with

mortification. Sussex himself lost all patience, and could not forbear

whispering into the ear of his friend, "Curse thee! canst thou not walk

like a man and a soldier?" an interjection which only made honest Blount

start and stop, until a glance at his yellow roses and crimson stockings

restored his self-confidence, when on he went at the same pace as

before.

The Queen conferred on poor Blount the honour of knighthood with a

marked sense of reluctance. That wise Princess was fully aware of the

propriety of using great circumspection and economy in bestowing those

titles of honour, which the Stewarts, who succeeded to her throne,

distributed with an imprudent liberality which greatly diminished their

value. Blount had no sooner arisen and retired than she turned to the

Duchess of Rutland. "Our woman wit," she said, "dear Rutland, is sharper

than that of those proud things in doublet and hose. Seest thou, out of

these three knights, thine is the only true metal to stamp chivalry's

imprint upon?"

"Sir Richard Varney, surely--the friend of my Lord of Leicester--surely

he has merit," replied the Duchess.

"Varney has a sly countenance and a smooth tongue," replied the Queen;

"I fear me he will prove a knave. But the promise was of ancient

standing. My Lord of Sussex must have lost his own wits, I think, to

recommend to us first a madman like Tressilian, and then a clownish fool

like this other fellow. I protest, Rutland, that while he sat on his

knees before me, mopping and mowing as if he had scalding porridge in

his mouth, I had much ado to forbear cutting him over the pate, instead

of striking his shoulder."

"Your Majesty gave him a smart ACCOLADE," said the Duchess; "we who

stood behind heard the blade clatter on his collar-bone, and the poor

man fidgeted too as if he felt it."

"I could not help it, wench," said the Queen, laughing. "But we will

have this same Sir Nicholas sent to Ireland or Scotland, or somewhere,

to rid our court of so antic a chevalier; he may be a good soldier in

the field, though a preposterous ass in a banqueting-hall."

The discourse became then more general, and soon after there was a

summons to the banquet.

In order to obey this signal, the company were under the necessity of

crossing the inner court of the Castle, that they might reach the new

buildings containing the large banqueting-room, in which preparations

for supper were made upon a scale of profuse magnificence, corresponding

to the occasion.

The livery cupboards were loaded with plate of the richest description,

and the most varied--some articles tasteful, some perhaps grotesque, in

the invention and decoration, but all gorgeously magnificent, both from

the richness of the work and value of the materials. Thus the chief

table was adorned by a salt, ship-fashion, made of mother-of-pearl,

garnished with silver and divers warlike ensigns and other ornaments,

anchors, sails, and sixteen pieces of ordnance. It bore a figure of

Fortune, placed on a globe, with a flag in her hand. Another salt was

fashioned of silver, in form of a swan in full sail. That chivalry might

not be omitted amid this splendour, a silver Saint George was presented,

mounted and equipped in the usual fashion in which he bestrides the

dragon. The figures were moulded to be in some sort useful. The horse's

tail was managed to hold a case of knives, while the breast of the

dragon presented a similar accommodation for oyster knives.

In the course of the passage from the hall of reception to the

banqueting-room, and especially in the courtyard, the new-made knights

were assailed by the heralds, pursuivants, minstrels, etc., with the

usual cry of LARGESSE, LARGESSE, CHEVALIERS TRES HARDIS! an ancient

invocation, intended to awaken the bounty of the acolytes of chivalry

towards those whose business it was to register their armorial bearings,

and celebrate the deeds by which they were illustrated. The call was,

of course, liberally and courteously answered by those to whom it was

addressed. Varney gave his largesse with an affectation of complaisance

and humility. Raleigh bestowed his with the graceful ease peculiar to

one who has attained his own place, and is familiar with its dignity.

Honest Blount gave what his tailor had left him of his half-year's rent,

dropping some pieces in his hurry, then stooping down to look for them,

and then distributing them amongst the various claimants, with the

anxious face and mien of the parish beadle dividing a dole among

paupers.

The donations were accepted with the usual clamour and VIVATS of

applause common on such occasions; but as the parties gratified were

chiefly dependants of Lord Leicester, it was Varney whose name

was repeated with the loudest acclamations. Lambourne, especially,

distinguished himself by his vociferations of "Long life to Sir Richard

Varney!--Health and honour to Sir Richard!--Never was a more worthy

knight dubbed!"--then, suddenly sinking his voice, he added--"since the

valiant Sir Pandarus of Troy,"--a winding-up of his clamorous applause

which set all men a-laughing who were within hearing of it.

It is unnecessary to say anything further of the festivities of the

evening, which were so brilliant in themselves, and received with such

obvious and willing satisfaction by the Queen, that Leicester retired

to his own apartment with all the giddy raptures of successful ambition.

Varney, who had changed his splendid attire, and now waited on his

patron in a very modest and plain undress, attended to do the honours of

the Earl's COUCHER.

"How! Sir Richard," said Leicester, smiling, "your new rank scarce suits

the humility of this attendance."

"I would disown that rank, my Lord," said Varney, "could I think it was

to remove me to a distance from your lordship's person."

"Thou art a grateful fellow," said Leicester; "but I must not allow you

to do what would abate you in the opinion of others."

While thus speaking, he still accepted without hesitation the offices

about his person, which the new-made knight seemed to render as eagerly

as if he had really felt, in discharging the task, that pleasure which

his words expressed.

"I am not afraid of men's misconstruction," he said, in answer to

Leicester's remark, "since there is not--(permit me to undo the

collar)--a man within the Castle who does not expect very soon to see

persons of a rank far superior to that which, by your goodness, I now

hold, rendering the duties of the bedchamber to you, and accounting it

an honour."

"It might, indeed, so have been"--said the Earl, with an involuntary

sigh; and then presently added, "My gown, Varney; I will look out on the

night. Is not the moon near to the full?"

"I think so, my lord, according to the calendar," answered Varney.

There was an abutting window, which opened on a small projecting balcony

of stone, battlemented as is usual in Gothic castles. The Earl undid the

lattice, and stepped out into the open air. The station he had chosen

commanded an extensive view of the lake and woodlands beyond, where the

bright moonlight rested on the clear blue waters and the distant masses

of oak and elm trees. The moon rode high in the heavens, attended by

thousands and thousands of inferior luminaries. All seemed already to

be hushed in the nether world, excepting occasionally the voice of the

watch (for the yeomen of the guard performed that duty wherever the

Queen was present in person) and the distant baying of the hounds,

disturbed by the preparations amongst the grooms and prickers for a

magnificent hunt, which was to be the amusement of the next day.

Leicester looked out on the blue arch of heaven, with gestures and a

countenance expressive of anxious exultation, while Varney, who remained

within the darkened apartment, could (himself unnoticed), with a

secret satisfaction, see his patron stretch his hands with earnest

gesticulation towards the heavenly bodies.

"Ye distant orbs of living fire," so ran the muttered invocation of the

ambitious Earl, "ye are silent while you wheel your mystic rounds; but

Wisdom has given to you a voice. Tell me, then, to what end is my high

course destined? Shall the greatness to which I have aspired be bright,

pre-eminent, and stable as your own; or am I but doomed to draw a brief

and glittering train along the nightly darkness, and then to sink down

to earth, like the base refuse of those artificial fires with which men

emulate your rays?"

He looked on the heavens in profound silence for a minute or two longer,

and then again stepped into the apartment, where Varney seemed to have

been engaged in putting the Earl's jewels into a casket.

"What said Alasco of my horoscope?" demanded Leicester. "You already

told me; but it has escaped me, for I think but lightly of that art."

"Many learned and great men have thought otherwise," said Varney; "and,

not to flatter your lordship, my own opinion leans that way."

"Ay, Saul among the prophets?" said Leicester. "I thought thou wert

sceptical in all such matters as thou couldst neither see, hear, smell,

taste, or touch, and that thy belief was limited by thy senses."

"Perhaps, my lord," said Varney, "I may be misled on the present

occasion by my wish to find the predictions of astrology true. Alasco

says that your favourite planet is culminating, and that the adverse

influence--he would not use a plainer term--though not overcome, was

evidently combust, I think he said, or retrograde."

"It is even so," said Leicester, looking at an abstract of astrological

calculations which he had in his hand; "the stronger influence will

prevail, and, as I think, the evil hour pass away. Lend me your hand,

Sir Richard, to doff my gown; and remain an instant, if it is not

too burdensome to your knighthood, while I compose myself to sleep.

I believe the bustle of this day has fevered my blood, for it streams

through my veins like a current of molten lead. Remain an instant, I

pray you--I would fain feel my eyes heavy ere I closed them."

Varney officiously assisted his lord to bed, and placed a massive silver

night-lamp, with a short sword, on a marble table which stood close by

the head of the couch. Either in order to avoid the light of the lamp,

or to hide his countenance from Varney, Leicester drew the curtain,

heavy with entwined silk and gold, so as completely to shade his face.

Varney took a seat near the bed, but with his back towards his master,

as if to intimate that he was not watching him, and quietly waited

till Leicester himself led the way to the topic by which his mind was

engrossed.

"And so, Varney," said the Earl, after waiting in vain till his

dependant should commence the conversation, "men talk of the Queen's

favour towards me?"

"Ay, my good lord," said Varney; "of what can they else, since it is so

strongly manifested?"

"She is indeed my good and gracious mistress," said Leicester, after

another pause; "but it is written, 'Put not thy trust in princes.'"

"A good sentence and a true," said Varney, "unless you can unite their

interest with yours so absolutely that they must needs sit on your wrist

like hooded hawks."

"I know what thou meanest," said Leicester impatiently, "though thou art

to-night so prudentially careful of what thou sayest to me. Thou wouldst

intimate I might marry the Queen if I would?"

"It is your speech, my lord, not mine," answered Varney; "but

whosesoever be the speech, it is the thought of ninety-nine out of an

hundred men throughout broad England."

"Ay, but," said Leicester, turning himself in his bed, "the hundredth

man knows better. Thou, for example, knowest the obstacle that cannot be

overleaped."

"It must, my lord, if the stars speak true," said Varney composedly.

"What, talkest thou of them," said Leicester, "that believest not in

them or in aught else?"

"You mistake, my lord, under your gracious pardon," said Varney; "I

believe in many things that predict the future. I believe, if showers

fall in April, that we shall have flowers in May; that if the sun

shines, grain will ripen; and I believe in much natural philosophy to

the same effect, which, if the stars swear to me, I will say the stars

speak the truth. And in like manner, I will not disbelieve that which

I see wished for and expected on earth, solely because the astrologers

have read it in the heavens."

"Thou art right," said Leicester, again tossing himself on his couch

"Earth does wish for it. I have had advices from the reformed churches

of Germany--from the Low Countries--from Switzerland--urging this as a

point on which Europe's safety depends. France will not oppose it. The

ruling party in Scotland look to it as their best security. Spain fears

it, but cannot prevent it. And yet thou knowest it is impossible."

"I know not that, my lord," said Varney; "the Countess is indisposed."

"Villain!" said Leicester, starting up on his couch, and seizing

the sword which lay on the table beside him, "go thy thoughts that

way?--thou wouldst not do murder?"

"For whom, or what, do you hold me, my lord?" said Varney, assuming the

superiority of an innocent man subjected to unjust suspicion. "I said

nothing to deserve such a horrid imputation as your violence infers. I

said but that the Countess was ill. And Countess though she be--lovely

and beloved as she is--surely your lordship must hold her to be mortal?

She may die, and your lordship's hand become once more your own."

"Away! away!" said Leicester; "let me have no more of this."

"Good night, my lord," said Varney, seeming to understand this as a

command to depart; but Leicester's voice interrupted his purpose.

"Thou 'scapest me not thus, Sir Fool," said he; "I think thy knighthood

has addled thy brains. Confess thou hast talked of impossibilities as of

things which may come to pass."

"My lord, long live your fair Countess," said Varney; "but neither your

love nor my good wishes can make her immortal. But God grant she live

long to be happy herself, and to render you so! I see not but you may be

King of England notwithstanding."

"Nay, now, Varney, thou art stark mad," said Leicester.

"I would I were myself within the same nearness to a good estate of

freehold," said Varney. "Have we not known in other countries how

a left-handed marriage might subsist betwixt persons of differing

degree?--ay, and be no hindrance to prevent the husband from conjoining

himself afterwards with a more suitable partner?"

"I have heard of such things in Germany," said Leicester.

"Ay, and the most learned doctors in foreign universities justify the

practice from the Old Testament," said Varney. "And after all, where is

the harm? The beautiful partner whom you have chosen for true love has

your secret hours of relaxation and affection. Her fame is safe her

conscience may slumber securely. You have wealth to provide royally for

your issue, should Heaven bless you with offspring. Meanwhile you may

give to Elizabeth ten times the leisure, and ten thousand times the

affection, that ever Don Philip of Spain spared to her sister Mary; yet

you know how she doted on him though so cold and neglectful. It requires

but a close mouth and an open brow, and you keep your Eleanor and your

fair Rosamond far enough separate. Leave me to build you a bower to

which no jealous Queen shall find a clew."

Leicester was silent for a moment, then sighed, and said, "It is

impossible. Good night, Sir Richard Varney--yet stay. Can you guess what

meant Tressilian by showing himself in such careless guise before the

Queen to-day?--to strike her tender heart, I should guess, with all

the sympathies due to a lover abandoned by his mistress and abandoning

himself."

Varney, smothering a sneering laugh, answered, "He believed Master

Tressilian had no such matter in his head."

"How!" said Leicester; "what meanest thou? There is ever knavery in that

laugh of thine, Varney."

"I only meant, my lord," said Varney, "that Tressilian has taken the

sure way to avoid heart-breaking. He hath had a companion--a female

companion--a mistress--a sort of player's wife or sister, as I

believe--with him in Mervyn's Bower, where I quartered him for certain

reasons of my own."

"A mistress!--meanest thou a paramour?"

"Ay, my lord; what female else waits for hours in a gentleman's

chamber?"

"By my faith, time and space fitting, this were a good tale to tell,"

said Leicester. "I ever distrusted those bookish, hypocritical,

seeming-virtuous scholars. Well--Master Tressilian makes somewhat

familiar with my house; if I look it over, he is indebted to it for

certain recollections. I would not harm him more than I can help. Keep

eye on him, however, Varney."

"I lodged him for that reason," said Varney, "in Mervyn's Tower, where

he is under the eye of my very vigilant, if he were not also my very

drunken, servant, Michael Lambourne, whom I have told your Grace of."

"Grace!" said Leicester; "what meanest thou by that epithet?"

"It came unawares, my lord; and yet it sounds so very natural that I

cannot recall it."

"It is thine own preferment that hath turned thy brain," said Leicester,

laughing; "new honours are as heady as new wine."

"May your lordship soon have cause to say so from experience," said

Varney; and wishing his patron good night, he withdrew. [See Note 8.

Furniture of Kenilworth.]

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Here stands the victim--there the proud betrayer,

E'en as the hind pull'd down by strangling dogs

Lies at the hunter's feet--who courteous proffers

To some high dame, the Dian of the chase,

To whom he looks for guerdon, his sharp blade,

To gash the sobbing throat. --THE WOODSMAN.

We are now to return to Mervyn's Bower, the apartment, or rather the

prison, of the unfortunate Countess of Leicester, who for some time kept

within bounds her uncertainty and her impatience. She was aware that, in

the tumult of the day, there might be some delay ere her letter could be

safely conveyed to the hands of Leicester, and that some time more might

elapse ere he could extricate himself from the necessary attendance on

Elizabeth, to come and visit her in her secret bower. "I will not expect

him," she said, "till night; he cannot be absent from his royal guest,

even to see me. He will, I know, come earlier if it be possible, but I

will not expect him before night." And yet all the while she did expect

him; and while she tried to argue herself into a contrary belief, each

hasty noise of the hundred which she heard sounded like the hurried step

of Leicester on the staircase, hasting to fold her in his arms.

The fatigue of body which Amy had lately undergone, with the agitation

of mind natural to so cruel a state of uncertainty, began by degrees

strongly to affect her nerves, and she almost feared her total inability

to maintain the necessary self-command through the scenes which might

lie before her. But although spoiled by an over-indulgent system of

education, Amy had naturally a mind of great power, united with a

frame which her share in her father's woodland exercises had rendered

uncommonly healthy. She summoned to her aid such mental and bodily

resources; and not unconscious how much the issue of her fate might

depend on her own self-possession, she prayed internally for strength of

body and for mental fortitude, and resolved at the same time to yield to

no nervous impulse which might weaken either.

Yet when the great bell of the Castle, which was placed in Caesar's

Tower, at no great distance from that called Mervyn's, began to send

its pealing clamour abroad, in signal of the arrival of the royal

procession, the din was so painfully acute to ears rendered nervously

sensitive by anxiety, that she could hardly forbear shrieking with

anguish, in answer to every stunning clash of the relentless peal.

Shortly afterwards, when the small apartment was at once enlightened by

the shower of artificial fires with which the air was suddenly filled,

and which crossed each other like fiery spirits, each bent on his own

separate mission, or like salamanders executing a frolic dance in the

region of the Sylphs, the Countess felt at first as if each rocket shot

close by her eyes, and discharged its sparks and flashes so nigh that

she could feel a sense of the heat. But she struggled against these

fantastic terrors, and compelled herself to arise, stand by the window,

look out, and gaze upon a sight which at another time would have

appeared to her at once captivating and fearful. The magnificent towers

of the Castle were enveloped in garlands of artificial fire, or shrouded

with tiaras of pale smoke. The surface of the lake glowed like molten

iron, while many fireworks (then thought extremely wonderful, though now

common), whose flame continued to exist in the opposing element, dived

and rose, hissed and roared, and spouted fire, like so many dragons of

enchantment sporting upon a burning lake.

Even Amy was for a moment interested by what was to her so new a scene.

"I had thought it magical art," she said, "but poor Tressilian taught me

to judge of such things as they are. Great God! and may not these idle

splendours resemble my own hoped-for happiness--a single spark, which is

instantly swallowed up by surrounding darkness--a precarious glow,

which rises but for a brief space into the air, that its fall may be the

lower? O Leicester! after all--all that thou hast said--hast sworn--that

Amy was thy love, thy life, can it be that thou art the magician

at whose nod these enchantments arise, and that she sees them as an

outcast, if not a captive?"

The sustained, prolonged, and repeated bursts of music, from so many

different quarters, and at so many varying points of distance, which

sounded as if not the Castle of Kenilworth only, but the whole country

around, had been at once the scene of solemnizing some high national

festival, carried the same oppressive thought still closer to her heart,

while some notes would melt in distant and falling tones, as if in

compassion for her sorrows, and some burst close and near upon her, as

if mocking her misery, with all the insolence of unlimited mirth. "These

sounds," she said, "are mine--mine, because they are HIS; but I cannot

say, Be still, these loud strains suit me not; and the voice of the

meanest peasant that mingles in the dance would have more power to

modulate the music than the command of her who is mistress of all."

By degrees the sounds of revelry died away, and the Countess withdrew

from the window at which she had sat listening to them. It was night,

but the moon afforded considerable light in the room, so that Amy was

able to make the arrangement which she judged necessary. There was hope

that Leicester might come to her apartment as soon as the revel in the

Castle had subsided; but there was also risk she might be disturbed by

some unauthorized intruder. She had lost confidence in the key since

Tressilian had entered so easily, though the door was locked on the

inside; yet all the additional security she could think of was to place

the table across the door, that she might be warned by the noise should

any one attempt to enter. Having taken these necessary precautions, the

unfortunate lady withdrew to her couch, stretched herself down on it,

mused in anxious expectation, and counted more than one hour after

midnight, till exhausted nature proved too strong for love, for grief,

for fear, nay, even for uncertainty, and she slept.

Yes, she slept. The Indian sleeps at the stake in the intervals between

his tortures; and mental torments, in like manner, exhaust by long

continuance the sensibility of the sufferer, so that an interval of

lethargic repose must necessarily ensue, ere the pangs which they

inflict can again be renewed.

The Countess slept, then, for several hours, and dreamed that she was

in the ancient house at Cumnor Place, listening for the low whistle with

which Leicester often used to announce his presence in the courtyard

when arriving suddenly on one of his stolen visits. But on this

occasion, instead of a whistle, she heard the peculiar blast of a

bugle-horn, such as her father used to wind on the fall of the stag, and

which huntsmen then called a MORT. She ran, as she thought, to a

window that looked into the courtyard, which she saw filled with men

in mourning garments. The old Curate seemed about to read the funeral

service. Mumblazen, tricked out in an antique dress, like an ancient

herald, held aloft a scutcheon, with its usual decorations of skulls,

cross-bones, and hour-glasses, surrounding a coat-of-arms, of which she

could only distinguish that it was surmounted with an Earl's coronet.

The old man looked at her with a ghastly smile, and said, "Amy, are they

not rightly quartered?" Just as he spoke, the horns again poured on her

ear the melancholy yet wild strain of the MORT, or death-note, and she

awoke.

The Countess awoke to hear a real bugle-note, or rather the combined

breath of many bugles, sounding not the MORT. but the jolly REVEILLE, to

remind the inmates of the Castle of Kenilworth that the pleasures of the

day were to commence with a magnificent stag-hunting in the neighbouring

Chase. Amy started up from her couch, listened to the sound, saw the

first beams of the summer morning already twinkle through the lattice

of her window, and recollected, with feelings of giddy agony, where she

was, and how circumstanced.

"He thinks not of me," she said; "he will not come nigh me! A Queen is

his guest, and what cares he in what corner of his huge Castle a wretch

like me pines in doubt, which is fast fading into despair?" At once a

sound at the door, as of some one attempting to open it softly, filled

her with an ineffable mixture of joy and fear; and hastening to remove

the obstacle she had placed against the door, and to unlock it, she had

the precaution to ask! "Is it thou, my love?"

"Yes, my Countess," murmured a whisper in reply.

She threw open the door, and exclaiming, "Leicester!" flung her arms

around the neck of the man who stood without, muffled in his cloak.

"No--not quite Leicester," answered Michael Lambourne, for he it was,

returning the caress with vehemence--"not quite Leicester, my lovely and

most loving duchess, but as good a man."

With an exertion of force, of which she would at another time have

thought herself incapable, the Countess freed herself from the profane

and profaning grasp of the drunken debauchee, and retreated into the

midst of her apartment where despair gave her courage to make a stand.

As Lambourne, on entering, dropped the lap of his cloak from his face,

she knew Varney's profligate servant, the very last person, excepting

his detested master, by whom she would have wished to be discovered. But

she was still closely muffled in her travelling dress, and as Lambourne

had scarce ever been admitted to her presence at Cumnor Place, her

person, she hoped, might not be so well known to him as his was to her,

owing to Janet's pointing him frequently out as he crossed the court,

and telling stories of his wickedness. She might have had still greater

confidence in her disguise had her experience enabled her to discover

that he was much intoxicated; but this could scarce have consoled her

for the risk which she might incur from such a character in such a time,

place, and circumstances.

Lambourne flung the door behind him as he entered, and folding his

arms, as if in mockery of the attitude of distraction into which Amy

had thrown herself, he proceeded thus: "Hark ye, most fair Calipolis--or

most lovely Countess of clouts, and divine Duchess of dark corners--if

thou takest all that trouble of skewering thyself together, like a

trussed fowl, that there may be more pleasure in the carving, even save

thyself the labour. I love thy first frank manner the best---like thy

present as little"--(he made a step towards her, and staggered)--"as

little as--such a damned uneven floor as this, where a gentleman may

break his neck if he does not walk as upright as a posture-master on the

tight-rope."

"Stand back!" said the Countess; "do not approach nearer to me on thy

peril!"

"My peril!--and stand back! Why, how now, madam? Must you have a better

mate than honest Mike Lambourne? I have been in America, girl, where the

gold grows, and have brought off such a load on't--"

"Good friend," said the Countess, in great terror at the ruffian's

determined and audacious manner, "I prithee begone, and leave me."

"And so I will, pretty one, when we are tired of each other's

company--not a jot sooner." He seized her by the arm, while, incapable

of further defence, she uttered shriek upon shriek. "Nay, scream away if

you like it," said he, still holding her fast; "I have heard the sea

at the loudest, and I mind a squalling woman no more than a miauling

kitten. Damn me! I have heard fifty or a hundred screaming at once, when

there was a town stormed."

The cries of the Countess, however, brought unexpected aid in the person

of Lawrence Staples, who had heard her exclamations from his apartment

below, and entered in good time to save her from being discovered,

if not from more atrocious violence. Lawrence was drunk also from the

debauch of the preceding night, but fortunately his intoxication had

taken a different turn from that of Lambourne.

"What the devil's noise is this in the ward?" he said. "What! man and

woman together in the same cell?--that is against rule. I will have

decency under my rule, by Saint Peter of the Fetters!"

"Get thee downstairs, thou drunken beast," said Lambourne; "seest thou

not the lady and I would be private?"

"Good sir, worthy sir!" said the Countess, addressing the jailer, "do

but save me from him, for the sake of mercy!"

"She speaks fairly," said the jailer, "and I will take her part. I love

my prisoners; and I have had as good prisoners under my key as they have

had in Newgate or the Compter. And so, being one of my lambkins, as I

say, no one shall disturb her in her pen-fold. So let go the woman: or

I'll knock your brains out with my keys."

"I'll make a blood-pudding of thy midriff first," answered Lambourne,

laying his left hand on his dagger, but still detaining the Countess by

the arm with his right. "So have at thee, thou old ostrich, whose only

living is upon a bunch of iron keys."

Lawrence raised the arm of Michael, and prevented him from drawing his

dagger; and as Lambourne struggled and strove to shake him off; the

Countess made a sudden exertion on her side, and slipping her hand

out of the glove on which the ruffian still kept hold, she gained her

liberty, and escaping from the apartment, ran downstairs; while at the

same moment she heard the two combatants fall on the floor with a noise

which increased her terror. The outer wicket offered no impediment to

her flight, having been opened for Lambourne's admittance; so that she

succeeded in escaping down the stair, and fled into the Pleasance, which

seemed to her hasty glance the direction in which she was most likely to

avoid pursuit.

Meanwhile, Lawrence and Lambourne rolled on the floor of the apartment,

closely grappled together. Neither had, happily, opportunity to draw

their daggers; but Lawrence found space enough to clash his heavy keys

across Michael's face, and Michael in return grasped the turnkey so

felly by the throat that the blood gushed from nose and mouth, so that

they were both gory and filthy spectacles when one of the other officers

of the household, attracted by the noise of the fray, entered the room,

and with some difficulty effected the separation of the combatants.

"A murrain on you both," said the charitable mediator, "and especially

on you, Master Lambourne! What the fiend lie you here for, fighting on

the floor like two butchers' curs in the kennel of the shambles?"

Lambourne arose, and somewhat sobered by the interposition of a third

party, looked with something less than his usual brazen impudence of

visage. "We fought for a wench, an thou must know," was his reply.

"A wench! Where is she?" said the officer.

"Why, vanished, I think," said Lambourne, looking around him, "unless

Lawrence hath swallowed her, That filthy paunch of his devours as

many distressed damsels and oppressed orphans as e'er a giant in King

Arthur's history. They are his prime food; he worries them body, soul,

and substance."

"Ay, ay! It's no matter," said Lawrence, gathering up his huge, ungainly

form from the floor; "but I have had your betters, Master Michael

Lambourne, under the little turn of my forefinger and thumb, and I shall

have thee, before all's done, under my hatches. The impudence of thy

brow will not always save thy shin-bones from iron, and thy foul,

thirsty gullet from a hempen cord." The words were no sooner out of his

mouth, when Lambourne again made at him.

"Nay, go not to it again," said the sewer, "or I will call for him shall

tame you both, and that is Master Varney--Sir Richard, I mean. He is

stirring, I promise you; I saw him cross the court just now."

"Didst thou, by G--!" said Lambourne, seizing on the basin and ewer

which stood in the apartment. "Nay, then, element, do thy work. I

thought I had enough of thee last night, when I floated about for Orion,

like a cork on a fermenting cask of ale."

So saying, he fell to work to cleanse from his face and hands the signs

of the fray, and get his apparel into some order.

"What hast thou done to him?" said the sewer, speaking aside to the

jailer; "his face is fearfully swelled."

"It is but the imprint of the key of my cabinet--too good a mark for

his gallows-face. No man shall abuse or insult my prisoners; they are my

jewels, and I lock them in safe casket accordingly.--And so, mistress,

leave off your wailing.--Why! why, surely, there was a woman here!"

"I think you are all mad this morning," said the sewer. "I saw no woman

here, nor no man neither in a proper sense, but only two beasts rolling

on the floor."

"Nay, then I am undone," said the jailer; "the prison's broken, that is

all. Kenilworth prison is broken," he continued, in a tone of maudlin

lamentation, "which was the strongest jail betwixt this and the Welsh

Marches--ay, and a house that has had knights, and earls, and kings

sleeping in it, as secure as if they had been in the Tower of London.

It is broken, the prisoners fled, and the jailer in much danger of being

hanged!"

So saying, he retreated down to his own den to conclude his

lamentations, or to sleep himself sober. Lambourne and the sewer

followed him close; and it was well for them, since the jailer, out of

mere habit, was about to lock the wicket after him, and had they not

been within the reach of interfering, they would have had the pleasure

of being shut up in the turret-chamber, from which the Countess had been

just delivered.

That unhappy lady, as soon as she found herself at liberty, fled, as

we have already mentioned, into the Pleasance. She had seen this

richly-ornamented space of ground from the window of Mervyn's Tower; and

it occurred to her, at the moment of her escape, that among its numerous

arbours, bowers, fountains, statues, and grottoes, she might find some

recess in which she could lie concealed until she had an opportunity of

addressing herself to a protector, to whom she might communicate as much

as she dared of her forlorn situation, and through whose means she might

supplicate an interview with her husband.

"If I could see my guide," she thought, "I would learn if he had

delivered my letter. Even did I but see Tressilian, it were better to

risk Dudley's anger, by confiding my whole situation to one who is the

very soul of honour, than to run the hazard of further insult among the

insolent menials of this ill-ruled place. I will not again venture into

an enclosed apartment. I will wait, I will watch; amidst so many human

beings there must be some kind heart which can judge and compassionate

what mine endures."

In truth, more than one party entered and traversed the Pleasance. But

they were in joyous groups of four or five persons together, laughing

and jesting in their own fullness of mirth and lightness of heart.

The retreat which she had chosen gave her the easy alternative of

avoiding observation. It was but stepping back to the farthest recess of

a grotto, ornamented with rustic work and moss-seats, and terminated by

a fountain, and she might easily remain concealed, or at her pleasure

discover herself to any solitary wanderer whose curiosity might lead

him to that romantic retirement. Anticipating such an opportunity, she

looked into the clear basin which the silent fountain held up to her

like a mirror, and felt shocked at her own appearance, and doubtful at;

the same time, muffled and disfigured as her disguise made her seem to

herself, whether any female (and it was from the compassion of her own

sex that she chiefly expected sympathy) would engage in conference with

so suspicious an object. Reasoning thus like a woman, to whom external

appearance is scarcely in any circumstances a matter of unimportance,

and like a beauty, who had some confidence in the power of her own

charms, she laid aside her travelling cloak and capotaine hat, and

placed them beside her, so that she could assume them in an instant, ere

one could penetrate from the entrance of the grotto to its extremity, in

case the intrusion of Varney or of Lambourne should render such disguise

necessary. The dress which she wore under these vestments was somewhat

of a theatrical cast, so as to suit the assumed personage of one of the

females who was to act in the pageant, Wayland had found the means

of arranging it thus upon the second day of their journey, having

experienced the service arising from the assumption of such a character

on the preceding day. The fountain, acting both as a mirror and ewer,

afforded Amy the means of a brief toilette, of which she availed herself

as hastily as possible; then took in her hand her small casket of

jewels, in case she might find them useful intercessors, and retiring to

the darkest and most sequestered nook, sat down on a seat of moss,

and awaited till fate should give her some chance of rescue, or of

propitiating an intercessor.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Have you not seen the partridge quake,

Viewing the hawk approaching nigh?

She cuddles close beneath the brake,

Afraid to sit, afraid to fly, --PRIOR.

It chanced, upon that memorable morning, that one of the earliest of

the huntress train, who appeared from her chamber in full array for the

chase, was the Princess for whom all these pleasures were instituted,

England's Maiden Queen. I know not if it were by chance, or out of the

befitting courtesy due to a mistress by whom he was so much honoured,

that she had scarcely made one step beyond the threshold of her

chamber ere Leicester was by her side, and proposed to her, until the

preparations for the chase had been completed, to view the Pleasance,

and the gardens which it connected with the Castle yard.

To this new scene of pleasures they walked, the Earl's arm affording his

Sovereign the occasional support which she required, where flights

of steps, then a favourite ornament in a garden, conducted them from

terrace to terrace, and from parterre to parterre. The ladies in

attendance, gifted with prudence, or endowed perhaps with the amiable

desire of acting as they would be done by, did not conceive their duty

to the Queen's person required them, though they lost not sight of her,

to approach so near as to share, or perhaps disturb, the conversation

betwixt the Queen and the Earl, who was not only her host, but also her

most trusted, esteemed, and favoured servant. They contented themselves

with admiring the grace of this illustrious couple, whose robes of state

were now exchanged for hunting suits, almost equally magnificent.

Elizabeth's silvan dress, which was of a pale blue silk, with silver

lace and AIGUILLETTES, approached in form to that of the ancient

Amazons, and was therefore well suited at once to her height and to

the dignity of her mien, which her conscious rank and long habits of

authority had rendered in some degree too masculine to be seen to the

best advantage in ordinary female weeds. Leicester's hunting suit of

Lincoln green, richly embroidered with gold, and crossed by the gay

baldric which sustained a bugle-horn, and a wood-knife instead of a

sword, became its master, as did his other vestments of court or of war.

For such were the perfections of his form and mien, that Leicester was

always supposed to be seen to the greatest advantage in the character

and dress which for the time he represented or wore.

The conversation of Elizabeth and the favourite Earl has not reached

us in detail. But those who watched at some distance (and the eyes of

courtiers and court ladies are right sharp) were of opinion that on no

occasion did the dignity of Elizabeth, in gesture and motion, seem

so decidedly to soften away into a mien expressive of indecision and

tenderness. Her step was not only slow, but even unequal, a thing most

unwonted in her carriage; her looks seemed bent on the ground; and there

was a timid disposition to withdraw from her companion, which external

gesture in females often indicates exactly the opposite tendency in

the secret mind. The Duchess of Rutland, who ventured nearest, was even

heard to aver that she discerned a tear in Elizabeth's eye and a blush

on her cheek; and still further, "She bent her looks on the ground to

avoid mine," said the Duchess, "she who, in her ordinary mood, could

look down a lion." To what conclusion these symptoms led is sufficiently

evident; nor were they probably entirely groundless. The progress of

a private conversation betwixt two persons of different sexes is often

decisive of their fate, and gives it a turn very different perhaps

from what they themselves anticipated. Gallantry becomes mingled with

conversation, and affection and passion come gradually to mix with

gallantry. Nobles, as well as shepherd swains, will, in such a trying

moment, say more than they intended; and Queens, like village maidens,

will listen longer than they should.

Horses in the meanwhile neighed and champed the bits with impatience in

the base-court; hounds yelled in their couples; and yeomen, rangers, and

prickers lamented the exhaling of the dew, which would prevent the scent

from lying. But Leicester had another chase in view--or, to speak more

justly towards him, had become engaged in it without premeditation, as

the high-spirited hunter which follows the cry of the hounds that have

crossed his path by accident. The Queen, an accomplished and handsome

woman, the pride of England, the hope of France and Holland, and the

dread of Spain, had probably listened with more than usual favour to

that mixture of romantic gallantry with which she always loved to be

addressed; and the Earl had, in vanity, in ambition, or in both, thrown

in more and more of that delicious ingredient, until his importunity

became the language of love itself.

"No, Dudley," said Elizabeth, yet it was with broken accents--"no, I

must be the mother of my people. Other ties, that make the lowly maiden

happy, are denied to her Sovereign. No, Leicester, urge it no more.

Were I as others, free to seek my own happiness, then, indeed--but it

cannot--cannot be. Delay the chase--delay it for half an hour--and leave

me, my lord."

"How! leave you, madam?" said Leicester,--"has my madness offended you?"

"No, Leicester, not so!" answered the Queen hastily; "but it is madness,

and must not be repeated. Go--but go not far from hence; and meantime

let no one intrude on my privacy."

While she spoke thus, Dudley bowed deeply, and retired with a slow

and melancholy air. The Queen stood gazing after him, and murmured to

herself, "Were it possible--were it BUT possible!--but no--no; Elizabeth

must be the wife and mother of England alone."

As she spoke thus, and in order to avoid some one whose step she heard

approaching, the Queen turned into the grotto in which her hapless, and

yet but too successful, rival lay concealed.

The mind of England's Elizabeth, if somewhat shaken by the agitating

interview to which she had just put a period, was of that firm and

decided character which soon recovers its natural tone. It was like one

of those ancient Druidical monuments called Rocking-stones. The finger

of Cupid, boy as he is painted, could put her feelings in motion; but

the power of Hercules could not have destroyed their equilibrium. As she

advanced with a slow pace towards the inmost extremity of the grotto,

her countenance, ere she had proceeded half the length, had recovered

its dignity of look, and her mien its air of command.

It was then the Queen became aware that a female figure was placed

beside, or rather partly behind, an alabaster column, at the foot of

which arose the pellucid fountain which occupied the inmost recess of

the twilight grotto. The classical mind of Elizabeth suggested the story

of Numa and Egeria, and she doubted not that some Italian sculptor had

here represented the Naiad whose inspirations gave laws to Rome. As she

advanced, she became doubtful whether she beheld a statue, or a form

of flesh and blood. The unfortunate Amy, indeed, remained motionless,

betwixt the desire which she had to make her condition known to one of

her own sex, and her awe for the stately form which approached her,

and which, though her eyes had never before beheld, her fears instantly

suspected to be the personage she really was. Amy had arisen from her

seat with the purpose of addressing the lady who entered the grotto

alone, and, as she at first thought, so opportunely. But when she

recollected the alarm which Leicester had expressed at the Queen's

knowing aught of their union, and became more and more satisfied that

the person whom she now beheld was Elizabeth herself, she stood with

one foot advanced and one withdrawn, her arms, head, and hands perfectly

motionless, and her cheek as pallid as the alabaster pedestal against

which she leaned. Her dress was of pale sea-green silk, little

distinguished in that imperfect light, and somewhat resembled the

drapery of a Grecian Nymph, such an antique disguise having been thought

the most secure, where so many maskers and revellers were assembled; so

that the Queen's doubt of her being a living form was well justified by

all contingent circumstances, as well as by the bloodless cheek and the

fixed eye.

Elizabeth remained in doubt, even after she had approached within a few

paces, whether she did not gaze on a statue so cunningly fashioned that

by the doubtful light it could not be distinguished from reality. She

stopped, therefore, and fixed upon this interesting object her princely

look with so much keenness that the astonishment which had kept Amy

immovable gave way to awe, and she gradually cast down her eyes, and

drooped her head under the commanding gaze of the Sovereign. Still,

however, she remained in all respects, saving this slow and profound

inclination of the head, motionless and silent.

From her dress, and the casket which she instinctively held in her hand,

Elizabeth naturally conjectured that the beautiful but mute figure which

she beheld was a performer in one of the various theatrical pageants

which had been placed in different situations to surprise her with their

homage; and that the poor player, overcome with awe at her presence, had

either forgot the part assigned her, or lacked courage to go through

it. It was natural and courteous to give her some encouragement; and

Elizabeth accordingly said, in a tone of condescending kindness, "How

now, fair Nymph of this lovely grotto, art thou spell-bound and struck

with dumbness by the charms of the wicked enchanter whom men term Fear?

We are his sworn enemy, maiden, and can reverse his charm. Speak, we

command thee."

Instead of answering her by speech, the unfortunate Countess dropped

on her knee before the Queen, let her casket fall from her hand, and

clasping her palms together, looked up in the Queen's face with such a

mixed agony of fear and supplication, that Elizabeth was considerably

affected.

"What may this mean?" she said; "this is a stronger passion than befits

the occasion. Stand up, damsel--what wouldst thou have with us?"

"Your protection, madam," faltered forth the unhappy petitioner.

"Each daughter of England has it while she is worthy of it," replied the

Queen; "but your distress seems to have a deeper root than a forgotten

task. Why, and in what, do you crave our protection?"

Amy hastily endeavoured to recall what she were best to say, which might

secure herself from the imminent dangers that surrounded her, without

endangering her husband; and plunging from one thought to another,

amidst the chaos which filled her mind, she could at length, in answer

to the Queen's repeated inquiries in what she sought protection, only

falter out, "Alas! I know not."

"This is folly, maiden," said Elizabeth impatiently; for there was

something in the extreme confusion of the suppliant which irritated her

curiosity, as well as interested her feelings. "The sick man must tell

his malady to the physician; nor are WE accustomed to ask questions so

oft without receiving an answer."

"I request--I implore," stammered forth the unfortunate Countess--"I

beseech your gracious protection--against--against one Varney." She

choked well-nigh as she uttered the fatal word, which was instantly

caught up by the Queen.

"What, Varney--Sir Richard Varney--the servant of Lord Leicester! what,

damsel, are you to him, or he to you?"

"I--I--was his prisoner--and he practised on my life--and I broke forth

to--to--"

"To throw thyself on my protection, doubtless," said Elizabeth. "Thou

shalt have it--that is, if thou art worthy; for we will sift this matter

to the uttermost. Thou art," she said, bending on the Countess an eye

which seemed designed to pierce her very inmost soul--"thou art Amy,

daughter of Sir Hugh Robsart of Lidcote Hall?"

"Forgive me--forgive me, most gracious Princess!" said Amy, dropping

once more on her knee, from which she had arisen.

"For what should I forgive thee, silly wench?" said Elizabeth; "for

being the daughter of thine own father? Thou art brain-sick, surely.

Well I see I must wring the story from thee by inches. Thou didst

deceive thine old and honoured father--thy look confesses it--cheated

Master Tressilian--thy blush avouches it--and married this same Varney."

Amy sprung on her feet, and interrupted the Queen eagerly with, "No,

madam, no! as there is a God above us, I am not the sordid wretch you

would make me! I am not the wife of that contemptible slave--of that

most deliberate villain! I am not the wife of Varney! I would rather be

the bride of Destruction!"

The Queen, overwhelmed in her turn by Amy's vehemence, stood silent for

an instant, and then replied, "Why, God ha' mercy, woman! I see thou

canst talk fast enough when the theme likes thee. Nay, tell me, woman,"

she continued, for to the impulse of curiosity was now added that of an

undefined jealousy that some deception had been practised on her--"tell

me, woman--for, by God's day, I WILL know--whose wife, or whose

paramour, art thou! Speak out, and be speedy. Thou wert better daily

with a lioness than with Elizabeth."

Urged to this extremity, dragged as it were by irresistible force to the

verge of the precipice which she saw, but could not avoid--permitted

not a moment's respite by the eager words and menacing gestures of the

offended Queen, Amy at length uttered in despair, "The Earl of Leicester

knows it all."

"The Earl of Leicester!" said Elizabeth, in utter astonishment. "The

Earl of Leicester!" she repeated with kindling anger. "Woman, thou art

set on to this--thou dost belie him--he takes no keep of such things

as thou art. Thou art suborned to slander the noblest lord and the

truest-hearted gentleman in England! But were he the right hand of our

trust, or something yet dearer to us, thou shalt have thy hearing, and

that in his presence. Come with me--come with me instantly!"

As Amy shrunk back with terror, which the incensed Queen interpreted as

that of conscious guilt, Elizabeth rapidly advanced, seized on her arm,

and hastened with swift and long steps out of the grotto, and along

the principal alley of the Pleasance, dragging with her the terrified

Countess, whom she still held by the arm, and whose utmost exertions

could but just keep pace with those of the indignant Queen.

Leicester was at this moment the centre of a splendid group of lords and

ladies, assembled together under an arcade, or portico, which closed

the alley. The company had drawn together in that place, to attend the

commands of her Majesty when the hunting-party should go forward, and

their astonishment may be imagined when, instead of seeing Elizabeth

advance towards them with her usual measured dignity of motion, they

beheld her walking so rapidly that she was in the midst of them ere they

were aware; and then observed, with fear and surprise, that her features

were flushed betwixt anger and agitation, that her hair was loosened by

her haste of motion, and that her eyes sparkled as they were wont when

the spirit of Henry VIII. mounted highest in his daughter. Nor were they

less astonished at the appearance of the pale, attenuated, half-dead,

yet still lovely female, whom the Queen upheld by main strength with

one hand, while with the other she waved aside the ladies and nobles

who pressed towards her, under the idea that she was taken suddenly ill.

"Where is my Lord of Leicester?" she said, in a tone that thrilled with

astonishment all the courtiers who stood around. "Stand forth, my Lord

of Leicester!"

If, in the midst of the most serene day of summer, when all is light and

laughing around, a thunderbolt were to fall from the clear blue vault of

heaven, and rend the earth at the very feet of some careless traveller,

he could not gaze upon the smouldering chasm, which so unexpectedly

yawned before him, with half the astonishment and fear which Leicester

felt at the sight that so suddenly presented itself. He had that

instant been receiving, with a political affectation of disavowing

and misunderstanding their meaning, the half-uttered, half-intimated

congratulations of the courtiers upon the favour of the Queen, carried

apparently to its highest pitch during the interview of that morning,

from which most of them seemed to augur that he might soon arise from

their equal in rank to become their master. And now, while the subdued

yet proud smile with which he disclaimed those inferences was yet

curling his cheek, the Queen shot into the circle, her passions excited

to the uttermost; and supporting with one hand, and apparently without

an effort, the pale and sinking form of his almost expiring wife,

and pointing with the finger of the other to her half-dead features,

demanded in a voice that sounded to the ears of the astounded statesman

like the last dread trumpet-call that is to summon body and spirit to

the judgment-seat, "Knowest thou this woman?"

As, at the blast of that last trumpet, the guilty shall call upon the

mountains to cover them, Leicester's inward thoughts invoked the stately

arch which he had built in his pride to burst its strong conjunction,

and overwhelm them in its ruins. But the cemented stones, architrave and

battlement, stood fast; and it was the proud master himself who, as

if some actual pressure had bent him to the earth, kneeled down before

Elizabeth, and prostrated his brow to the marble flag-stones on which

she stood.

"Leicester," said Elizabeth, in a voice which trembled with passion,

"could I think thou hast practised on me--on me thy Sovereign--on me thy

confiding, thy too partial mistress, the base and ungrateful deception

which thy present confusion surmises--by all that is holy, false lord,

that head of thine were in as great peril as ever was thy father's!"

Leicester had not conscious innocence, but he had pride to support him.

He raised slowly his brow and features, which were black and swoln with

contending emotions, and only replied, "My head cannot fall but by the

sentence of my peers. To them I will plead, and not to a princess who

thus requites my faithful service."

"What! my lords," said Elizabeth, looking around, "we are defied, I

think--defied in the Castle we have ourselves bestowed on this proud

man!--My Lord Shrewsbury, you are Marshal of England, attach him of high

treason."

"Whom does your Grace mean?" said Shrewsbury, much surprised, for he had

that instant joined the astonished circle.

"Whom should I mean, but that traitor Dudley, Earl of Leicester!--Cousin

of Hunsdon, order out your band of gentlemen pensioners, and take him

into instant custody. I say, villain, make haste!"

Hunsdon, a rough old noble, who, from his relationship to the Boleyns,

was accustomed to use more freedom with the Queen than almost any other

dared to do, replied bluntly, "And it is like your Grace might order me

to the Tower to-morrow for making too much haste. I do beseech you to be

patient."

"Patient--God's life!" exclaimed the Queen--"name not the word to me;

thou knowest not of what he is guilty!"

Amy, who had by this time in some degree recovered herself, and who saw

her husband, as she conceived, in the utmost danger from the rage of an

offended Sovereign, instantly (and alas! how many women have done the

same) forgot her own wrongs and her own danger in her apprehensions for

him, and throwing herself before the Queen, embraced her knees, while

she exclaimed, "He is guiltless, madam--he is guiltless; no one can lay

aught to the charge of the noble Leicester!"

"Why, minion," answered the Queen, "didst not thou thyself say that the

Earl of Leicester was privy to thy whole history?"

"Did I say so?" repeated the unhappy Amy, laying aside every

consideration of consistency and of self-interest. "Oh, if I did, I

foully belied him. May God so judge me, as I believe he was never privy

to a thought that would harm me!"

"Woman!" said Elizabeth, "I will know who has moved thee to this; or

my wrath--and the wrath of kings is a flaming fire--shall wither and

consume thee like a weed in the furnace!"

As the Queen uttered this threat, Leicester's better angel called

his pride to his aid, and reproached him with the utter extremity

of meanness which would overwhelm him for ever if he stooped to take

shelter under the generous interposition of his wife, and abandoned

her, in return for her kindness, to the resentment of the Queen. He had

already raised his head with the dignity of a man of honour to avow

his marriage, and proclaim himself the protector of his Countess, when

Varney, born, as it appeared, to be his master's evil genius, rushed

into the presence with every mark of disorder on his face and apparel.

"What means this saucy intrusion?" said Elizabeth.

Varney, with the air of a man altogether overwhelmed with grief and

confusion, prostrated himself before her feet, exclaiming, "Pardon, my

Liege, pardon!--or at least let your justice avenge itself on me, where

it is due; but spare my noble, my generous, my innocent patron and

master!"

Amy, who was yet kneeling, started up as she saw the man whom she deemed

most odious place himself so near her, and was about to fly towards

Leicester, when, checked at once by the uncertainty and even timidity

which his looks had reassumed as soon as the appearance of his confidant

seemed to open a new scene, she hung back, and uttering a faint scream,

besought of her Majesty to cause her to be imprisoned in the lowest

dungeon of the Castle--to deal with her as the worst of criminals--"but

spare," she exclaimed, "my sight and hearing what will destroy the

little judgment I have left--the sight of that unutterable and most

shameless villain!"

"And why, sweetheart?" said the Queen, moved by a new impulse; "what

hath he, this false knight, since such thou accountest him, done to

thee?"

"Oh, worse than sorrow, madam, and worse than injury--he has sown

dissension where most there should be peace. I shall go mad if I look

longer on him!"

"Beshrew me, but I think thou art distraught already," answered the

Queen.--"My Lord Hunsdon, look to this poor distressed young woman, and

let her be safely bestowed, and in honest keeping, till we require her

to be forthcoming."

Two or three of the ladies in attendance, either moved by compassion

for a creature so interesting, or by some other motive, offered their

services to look after her; but the Queen briefly answered, "Ladies,

under favour, no. You have all (give God thanks) sharp ears and nimble

tongues; our kinsman Hunsdon has ears of the dullest, and a tongue

somewhat rough, but yet of the slowest.--Hunsdon, look to it that none

have speech of her."

"By Our Lady," said Hunsdon, taking in his strong, sinewy arms the

fading and almost swooning form of Amy, "she is a lovely child! and

though a rough nurse, your Grace hath given her a kind one. She is safe

with me as one of my own ladybirds of daughters."

So saying, he carried her off; unresistingly and almost unconsciously,

his war-worn locks and long, grey beard mingling with her light-brown

tresses, as her head reclined on his strong, square shoulder. The Queen

followed him with her eye. She had already, with that self-command which

forms so necessary a part of a Sovereign's accomplishments, suppressed

every appearance of agitation, and seemed as if she desired to banish

all traces of her burst of passion from the recollection of those who

had witnessed it. "My Lord of Hunsdon says well," she observed, "he is

indeed but a rough nurse for so tender a babe."

"My Lord of Hunsdon," said the Dean of St. Asaph--"I speak it not in

defamation of his more noble qualities--hath a broad license in speech,

and garnishes his discourse somewhat too freely with the cruel and

superstitious oaths which savour both of profaneness and of old

Papistrie."

"It is the fault of his blood, Mr. Dean," said the Queen, turning

sharply round upon the reverend dignitary as she spoke; "and you may

blame mine for the same distemperature. The Boleyns were ever a hot and

plain-spoken race, more hasty to speak their mind than careful to

choose their expressions. And by my word--I hope there is no sin in that

affirmation--I question if it were much cooled by mixing with that of

Tudor."

As she made this last observation she smiled graciously, and stole her

eyes almost insensibly round to seek those of the Earl of Leicester, to

whom she now began to think she had spoken with hasty harshness upon the

unfounded suspicion of a moment.

The Queen's eye found the Earl in no mood to accept the implied offer

of conciliation. His own looks had followed, with late and rueful

repentance, the faded form which Hunsdon had just borne from the

presence. They now reposed gloomily on the ground, but more--so at least

it seemed to Elizabeth--with the expression of one who has received an

unjust affront, than of him who is conscious of guilt. She turned her

face angrily from him, and said to Varney, "Speak, Sir Richard, and

explain these riddles--thou hast sense and the use of speech, at least,

which elsewhere we look for in vain."

As she said this, she darted another resentful glance towards Leicester,

while the wily Varney hastened to tell his own story.

"Your Majesty's piercing eye," he said, "has already detected the cruel

malady of my beloved lady, which, unhappy that I am, I would not suffer

to be expressed in the certificate of her physician, seeking to conceal

what has now broken out with so much the more scandal."

"She is then distraught?" said the Queen. "Indeed we doubted not of

it; her whole demeanour bears it out. I found her moping in a corner of

yonder grotto; and every word she spoke--which indeed I dragged from her

as by the rack--she instantly recalled and forswore. But how came she

hither? Why had you her not in safe-keeping?"

"My gracious Liege," said Varney, "the worthy gentleman under whose

charge I left her, Master Anthony Foster, has come hither but now, as

fast as man and horse can travel, to show me of her escape, which

she managed with the art peculiar to many who are afflicted with this

malady. He is at hand for examination."

"Let it be for another time," said the Queen. "But, Sir Richard, we envy

you not your domestic felicity; your lady railed on you bitterly, and

seemed ready to swoon at beholding you."

"It is the nature of persons in her disorder, so please your Grace,"

answered Varney, "to be ever most inveterate in their spleen against

those whom, in their better moments, they hold nearest and dearest."

"We have heard so, indeed," said Elizabeth, "and give faith to the

saying."

"May your Grace then be pleased," said Varney, "to command my

unfortunate wife to be delivered into the custody of her friends?"

Leicester partly started; but making a strong effort, he subdued his

emotion, while Elizabeth answered sharply, "You are something too hasty,

Master Varney. We will have first a report of the lady's health and

state of mind from Masters, our own physician, and then determine what

shall be thought just. You shall have license, however, to see her, that

if there be any matrimonial quarrel betwixt you--such things we have

heard do occur, even betwixt a loving couple--you may make it up,

without further scandal to our court or trouble to ourselves."

Varney bowed low, and made no other answer.

Elizabeth again looked towards Leicester, and said, with a degree of

condescension which could only arise out of the most heartfelt interest,

"Discord, as the Italian poet says, will find her way into peaceful

convents, as well as into the privacy of families; and we fear our

own guards and ushers will hardly exclude her from courts. My Lord of

Leicester, you are offended with us, and we have right to be offended

with you. We will take the lion's part upon us, and be the first to

forgive."

Leicester smoothed his brow, as by an effort; but the trouble was too

deep-seated that its placidity should at once return. He said, however,

that which fitted the occasion, "That he could not have the happiness of

forgiving, because she who commanded him to do so could commit no injury

towards him."

Elizabeth seemed content with this reply, and intimated her pleasure

that the sports of the morning should proceed. The bugles sounded, the

hounds bayed, the horses pranced--but the courtiers and ladies sought

the amusement to which they were summoned with hearts very different

from those which had leaped to the morning's REVIELLE. There was doubt,

and fear, and expectation on every brow, and surmise and intrigue in

every whisper.

Blount took an opportunity to whisper into Raleigh's ear, "This storm

came like a levanter in the Mediterranean."

"VARIUM ET MUTABILE," answered Raleigh, in a similar tone.

"Nay, I know nought of your Latin," said Blount; "but I thank God

Tressilian took not the sea during that hurricane. He could scarce have

missed shipwreck, knowing as he does so little how to trim his sails to

a court gale."

"Thou wouldst have instructed him!" said Raleigh.

"Why, I have profited by my time as well as thou, Sir Walter," replied

honest Blount. "I am knight as well as thou, and of the earlier

creation."

"Now, God further thy wit," said Raleigh. "But for Tressilian, I would I

knew what were the matter with him. He told me this morning he would not

leave his chamber for the space of twelve hours or thereby, being bound

by a promise. This lady's madness, when he shall learn it, will not, I

fear, cure his infirmity. The moon is at the fullest, and men's brains

are working like yeast. But hark! they sound to mount. Let us to horse,

Blount; we young knights must deserve our spurs."

CHAPTER XXXV.

Sincerity,

Thou first of virtues! let no mortal leave

Thy onward path, although the earth should gape,

And from the gulf of hell destruction cry,

To take dissimulation's winding way. --DOUGLAS.

It was not till after a long and successful morning's sport, and a

prolonged repast which followed the return of the Queen to the Castle,

that Leicester at length found himself alone with Varney, from whom he

now learned the whole particulars of the Countess's escape, as they

had been brought to Kenilworth by Foster, who, in his terror for the

consequences, had himself posted thither with the tidings. As Varney,

in his narrative, took especial care to be silent concerning those

practices on the Countess's health which had driven her to so desperate

a resolution, Leicester, who could only suppose that she had adopted

it out of jealous impatience to attain the avowed state and appearance

belonging to her rank, was not a little offended at the levity with

which his wife had broken his strict commands, and exposed him to the

resentment of Elizabeth.

"I have given," he said, "to this daughter of an obscure Devonshire

gentleman the proudest name in England. I have made her sharer of my bed

and of my fortunes. I ask but of her a little patience, ere she launches

forth upon the full current of her grandeur; and the infatuated woman

will rather hazard her own shipwreck and mine--will rather involve me

in a thousand whirlpools, shoals, and quicksands, and compel me to

a thousand devices which shame me in mine own eyes--than tarry for a

little space longer in the obscurity to which she was born. So lovely,

so delicate, so fond, so faithful, yet to lack in so grave a matter the

prudence which one might hope from the veriest fool--it puts me beyond

my patience."

"We may post it over yet well enough," said Varney, "if my lady will be

but ruled, and take on her the character which the time commands."

"It is but too true, Sir Richard," said Leicester; "there is indeed no

other remedy. I have heard her termed thy wife in my presence,

without contradiction. She must bear the title until she is far from

Kenilworth."

"And long afterwards, I trust," said Varney; then instantly added, "For

I cannot but hope it will be long after ere she bear the title of Lady

Leicester--I fear me it may scarce be with safety during the life of

this Queen. But your lordship is best judge, you alone knowing what

passages have taken place betwixt Elizabeth and you."

"You are right, Varney," said Leicester. "I have this morning been both

fool and villain; and when Elizabeth hears of my unhappy marriage, she

cannot but think herself treated with that premeditated slight which

women never forgive. We have once this day stood upon terms little short

of defiance; and to those, I fear, we must again return."

"Is her resentment, then, so implacable?" said Varney.

"Far from it," replied the Earl; "for, being what she is in spirit and

in station, she has even this day been but too condescending, in giving

me opportunities to repair what she thinks my faulty heat of temper."

"Ay," answered Varney; "the Italians say right--in lovers' quarrels, the

party that loves most is always most willing to acknowledge the greater

fault. So then, my lord, if this union with the lady could be concealed,

you stand with Elizabeth as you did?"

Leicester sighed, and was silent for a moment, ere he replied.

"Varney, I think thou art true to me, and I will tell thee all. I do NOT

stand where I did. I have spoken to Elizabeth--under what mad impulse

I know not--on a theme which cannot be abandoned without touching

every female feeling to the quick, and which yet I dare not and cannot

prosecute. She can never, never forgive me for having caused and

witnessed those yieldings to human passion."

"We must do something, my lord," said Varney, "and that speedily."

"There is nought to be done," answered Leicester, despondingly. "I am

like one that has long toiled up a dangerous precipice, and when he is

within one perilous stride of the top, finds his progress arrested

when retreat has become impossible. I see above me the pinnacle which I

cannot reach--beneath me the abyss into which I must fall, as soon as

my relaxing grasp and dizzy brain join to hurl me from my present

precarious stance."

"Think better of your situation, my lord," said Varney; "let us try the

experiment in which you have but now acquiesced. Keep we your marriage

from Elizabeth's knowledge, and all may yet be well. I will instantly go

to the lady myself. She hates me, because I have been earnest with your

lordship, as she truly suspects, in opposition to what she terms her

rights. I care not for her prejudices--she SHALL listen to me; and I

will show her such reasons for yielding to the pressure of the times

that I doubt not to bring back her consent to whatever measures these

exigencies may require."

"No, Varney," said Leicester; "I have thought upon what is to be done,

and I will myself speak with Amy."

It was now Varney's turn to feel upon his own account the terrors

which he affected to participate solely on account of his patron. "Your

lordship will not yourself speak with the lady?"

"It is my fixed purpose," said Leicester. "Fetch me one of the

livery-cloaks; I will pass the sentinel as thy servant. Thou art to have

free access to her."

"But, my lord--"

"I will have no BUTS," replied Leicester; "it shall be even thus, and

not otherwise. Hunsdon sleeps, I think, in Saintlowe's Tower. We can go

thither from these apartments by the private passage, without risk of

meeting any one. Or what if I do meet Hunsdon? he is more my friend than

enemy, and thick-witted enough to adopt any belief that is thrust on

him. Fetch me the cloak instantly."

Varney had no alternative save obedience. In a few minutes Leicester was

muffled in the mantle, pulled his bonnet over his brows, and followed

Varney along the secret passage of the Castle which communicated with

Hunsdon's apartments, in which there was scarce a chance of meeting

any inquisitive person, and hardly light enough for any such to have

satisfied their curiosity. They emerged at a door where Lord Hunsdon

had, with military precaution, placed a sentinel, one of his own

northern retainers as it fortuned, who readily admitted Sir Richard

Varney and his attendant, saying only, in his northern dialect, "I

would, man, thou couldst make the mad lady be still yonder; for her

moans do sae dirl through my head that I would rather keep watch on a

snowdrift, in the wastes of Catlowdie."

They hastily entered, and shut the door behind them.

"Now, good devil, if there be one," said Varney, within himself,

"for once help a votary at a dead pinch, for my boat is amongst the

breakers!"

The Countess Amy, with her hair and her garments dishevelled, was seated

upon a sort of couch, in an attitude of the deepest affliction, out of

which she was startled by the opening of the door. Size turned hastily

round, and fixing her eye on Varney, exclaimed, "Wretch! art thou come

to frame some new plan of villainy?"

Leicester cut short her reproaches by stepping forward and dropping his

cloak, while he said, in a voice rather of authority than of affection,

"It is with me, madam, you have to commune, not with Sir Richard

Varney."

The change effected on the Countess's look and manner was like magic.

"Dudley!" she exclaimed, "Dudley! and art thou come at last?" And with

the speed of lightning she flew to her husband, clung round his neck,

and unheeding the presence of Varney, overwhelmed him with caresses,

while she bathed his face in a flood of tears, muttering, at the

same time, but in broken and disjointed monosyllables, the fondest

expressions which Love teaches his votaries.

Leicester, as it seemed to him, had reason to be angry with his lady

for transgressing his commands, and thus placing him in the perilous

situation in which he had that morning stood. But what displeasure could

keep its ground before these testimonies of affection from a being so

lovely, that even the negligence of dress, and the withering effects

of fear, grief, and fatigue, which would have impaired the beauty of

others, rendered hers but the more interesting. He received and repaid

her caresses with fondness mingled with melancholy, the last of which

she seemed scarcely to observe, until the first transport of her own joy

was over, when, looking anxiously in his face, she asked if he was ill.

"Not in my body, Amy," was his answer.

"Then I will be well too. O Dudley! I have been ill!--very ill, since

we last met!--for I call not this morning's horrible vision a meeting.

I have been in sickness, in grief, and in danger. But thou art come, and

all is joy, and health, and safety!"

"Alas, Amy," said Leicester, "thou hast undone me!"

"I, my lord?" said Amy, her cheek at once losing its transient flush of

joy--"how could I injure that which I love better than myself?"

"I would not upbraid you, Amy," replied the Earl; "but are you not

here contrary to my express commands--and does not your presence here

endanger both yourself and me?"

"Does it, does it indeed?" she exclaimed eagerly; "then why am I here a

moment longer? Oh, if you knew by what fears I was urged to quit Cumnor

Place! But I will say nothing of myself--only that if it might be

otherwise, I would not willingly return THITHER; yet if it concern your

safety--"

"We will think, Amy, of some other retreat," said Leicester; "and you

shall go to one of my northern castles, under the personage--it will be

but needful, I trust, for a very few days--of Varney's wife."

"How, my Lord of Leicester!" said the lady, disengaging herself from

his embraces; "is it to your wife you give the dishonourable counsel to

acknowledge herself the bride of another--and of all men, the bride of

that Varney?"

"Madam, I speak it in earnest--Varney is my true and faithful servant,

trusted in my deepest secrets. I had better lose my right hand than his

service at this moment. You have no cause to scorn him as you do."

"I could assign one, my lord," replied the Countess; "and I see he

shakes even under that assured look of his. But he that is necessary as

your right hand to your safety is free from any accusation of mine. May

he be true to you; and that he may be true, trust him not too much or

too far. But it is enough to say that I will not go with him unless by

violence, nor would I acknowledge him as my husband were all--"

"It is a temporary deception, madam," said Leicester, irritated by her

opposition, "necessary for both our safeties, endangered by you through

female caprice, or the premature desire to seize on a rank to which

I gave you title only under condition that our marriage, for a time,

should continue secret. If my proposal disgust you, it is yourself has

brought it on both of us. There is no other remedy--you must do what

your own impatient folly hath rendered necessary--I command you."

"I cannot put your commands, my lord," said Amy, "in balance with those

of honour and conscience. I will NOT, in this instance, obey you.

You may achieve your own dishonour, to which these crooked policies

naturally tend, but I will do nought that can blemish mine. How could

you again, my lord, acknowledge me as a pure and chaste matron, worthy

to share your fortunes, when, holding that high character, I had

strolled the country the acknowledged wife of such a profligate fellow

as your servant Varney?"

"My lord," said Varney interposing, "my lady is too much prejudiced

against me, unhappily, to listen to what I can offer, yet it may please

her better than what she proposes. She has good interest with Master

Edmund Tressilian, and could doubtless prevail on him to consent to

be her companion to Lidcote Hall, and there she might remain in safety

until time permitted the development of this mystery."

Leicester was silent, but stood looking eagerly on Amy, with eyes which

seemed suddenly to glow as much with suspicion as displeasure.

The Countess only said, "Would to God I were in my father's house!

When I left it, I little thought I was leaving peace of mind and honour

behind me."

Varney proceeded with a tone of deliberation. "Doubtless this will make

it necessary to take strangers into my lord's counsels; but surely the

Countess will be warrant for the honour of Master Tressilian, and such

of her father's family--"

"Peace, Varney," said Leicester; "by Heaven I will strike my dagger into

thee if again thou namest Tressilian as a partner of my counsels!"

"And wherefore not!" said the Countess; "unless they be counsels fitter

for such as Varney, than for a man of stainless honour and integrity. My

lord, my lord, bend no angry brows on me; it is the truth, and it is I

who speak it. I once did Tressilian wrong for your sake; I will not do

him the further injustice of being silent when his honour is brought in

question. I can forbear," she said, looking at Varney, "to pull the

mask off hypocrisy, but I will not permit virtue to be slandered in my

hearing."

There was a dead pause. Leicester stood displeased, yet undetermined,

and too conscious of the weakness of his cause; while Varney, with a

deep and hypocritical affectation of sorrow, mingled with humility, bent

his eyes on the ground.

It was then that the Countess Amy displayed, in the midst of distress

and difficulty, the natural energy of character which would have

rendered her, had fate allowed, a distinguished ornament of the rank

which she held. She walked up to Leicester with a composed step, a

dignified air, and looks in which strong affection essayed in vain to

shake the firmness of conscious, truth and rectitude of principle. "You

have spoken your mind, my lord," she said, "in these difficulties,

with which, unhappily, I have found myself unable to comply. This

gentleman--this person I would say--has hinted at another scheme, to

which I object not but as it displeases you. Will your lordship be

pleased to hear what a young and timid woman, but your most affectionate

wife, can suggest in the present extremity?"

Leicester was silent, but bent his head towards the Countess, as an

intimation that she was at liberty to proceed.

"There hath been but one cause for all these evils, my lord," she

proceeded, "and it resolves itself into the mysterious duplicity with

which you, have been induced to surround yourself. Extricate yourself at

once, my lord, from the tyranny of these disgraceful trammels. Be like

a true English gentleman, knight, and earl, who holds that truth is the

foundation of honour, and that honour is dear to him as the breath of

his nostrils. Take your ill-fated wife by the hand, lead her to the

footstool of Elizabeth's throne--say that in a moment of infatuation,

moved by supposed beauty, of which none perhaps can now trace even the

remains, I gave my hand to this Amy Robsart. You will then have done

justice to me, my lord, and to your own honour and should law or power

require you to part from me, I will oppose no objection, since I may

then with honour hide a grieved and broken heart in those shades from

which your love withdrew me. Then--have but a little patience, and Amy's

life will not long darken your brighter prospects."

There was so much of dignity, so much of tenderness, in the Countess's

remonstrance, that it moved all that was noble and generous in the

soul of her husband. The scales seemed to fall from his eyes, and the

duplicity and tergiversation of which he had been guilty stung him at

once with remorse and shame.

"I am not worthy of you, Amy," he said, "that could weigh aught which

ambition has to give against such a heart as thine. I have a bitter

penance to perform, in disentangling, before sneering foes and astounded

friends, all the meshes of my own deceitful policy. And the Queen--but

let her take my head, as she has threatened."

"Take your head, my lord!" said the Countess, "because you used the

freedom and liberty of an English subject in choosing a wife? For shame!

it is this distrust of the Queen's justice, this apprehension of danger,

which cannot but be imaginary, that, like scarecrows, have induced you

to forsake the straightforward path, which, as it is the best, is also

the safest."

"Ah, Amy, thou little knowest!" said Dudley but instantly checking

himself, he added, "Yet she shall not find in me a safe or easy victim

of arbitrary vengeance. I have friends--I have allies--I will not, like

Norfolk, be dragged to the block as a victim to sacrifice. Fear not,

Amy; thou shalt see Dudley bear himself worthy of his name. I must

instantly communicate with some of those friends on whom I can best

rely; for, as things stand, I may be made prisoner in my own Castle."

"Oh, my good lord," said Amy, "make no faction in a peaceful state!

There is no friend can help us so well as our own candid truth and

honour. Bring but these to our assistance, and you are safe amidst a

whole army of the envious and malignant. Leave these behind you, and all

other defence will be fruitless. Truth, my noble lord, is well painted

unarmed."

"But Wisdom, Amy," answered Leicester, "is arrayed in panoply of

proof. Argue not with me on the means I shall use to render my

confession--since it must be called so--as safe as may be; it will

be fraught with enough of danger, do what we will.--Varney, we must

hence.--Farewell, Amy, whom I am to vindicate as mine own, at an expense

and risk of which thou alone couldst be worthy. You shall soon hear

further from me."

He embraced her fervently, muffled himself as before, and accompanied

Varney from the apartment. The latter, as he left the room, bowed low,

and as he raised his body, regarded Amy with a peculiar expression,

as if he desired to know how far his own pardon was included in the

reconciliation which had taken place betwixt her and her lord. The

Countess looked upon him with a fixed eye, but seemed no more conscious

of his presence than if there had been nothing but vacant air on the

spot where he stood.

"She has brought me to the crisis," he muttered--"she or I am lost.

There was something--I wot not if it was fear or pity--that prompted me

to avoid this fatal crisis. It is now decided--she or I must PERISH."

While he thus spoke, he observed, with surprise, that a boy, repulsed by

the sentinel, made up to Leicester, and spoke with him. Varney was one

of those politicians whom not the slightest appearances escape without

inquiry. He asked the sentinel what the lad wanted with him, and

received for answer that the boy had wished him to transmit a parcel

to the mad lady; but that he cared not to take charge of it, such

communication being beyond his commission, His curiosity satisfied in

that particular, he approached his patron, and heard him say, "Well,

boy, the packet shall be delivered."

"Thanks, good Master Serving-man," said the boy, and was out of sight in

an instant.

Leicester and Varney returned with hasty steps to the Earl's private

apartment, by the same passage which had conducted them to Saintlowe's

Tower.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

I have said

This is an adulteress--I have said with whom:

More, she's a traitor, and Camillo is

A federary with her, and one that knows

What she should shame to know herself. --WINTER'S TALE.

They were no sooner in the Earl's cabinet than, taking his tablets from

his pocket, he began to write, speaking partly to Varney, and partly

to himself--"There are many of them close bounden to me, and especially

those in good estate and high office--many who, if they look back

towards my benefits, or forward towards the perils which may

befall themselves, will not, I think, be disposed to see me stagger

unsupported. Let me see--Knollis is sure, and through his means Guernsey

and Jersey. Horsey commands in the Isle of Wight. My brother-in-law,

Huntingdon, and Pembroke, have authority in Wales. Through Bedford I

lead the Puritans, with their interest, so powerful in all the boroughs.

My brother of Warwick is equal, well-nigh, to myself, in wealth,

followers, and dependencies. Sir Owen Hopton is at my devotion; he

commands the Tower of London, and the national treasure deposited there.

My father and grand-father needed never to have stooped their heads to

the block had they thus forecast their enterprises.--Why look you so

sad, Varney? I tell thee, a tree so deep-rooted is not so easily to be

torn up by the tempest."

"Alas! my lord," said Varney, with well-acted passion, and then resumed

the same look of despondency which Leicester had before noted.

"Alas!" repeated Leicester; "and wherefore alas, Sir Richard? Doth your

new spirit of chivalry supply no more vigorous ejaculation when a noble

struggle is impending? Or, if ALAS means thou wilt flinch from the

conflict, thou mayest leave the Castle, or go join mine enemies,

whichever thou thinkest best."

"Not so, my lord," answered his confidant; "Varney will be found

fighting or dying by your side. Forgive me, if, in love to you, I see

more fully than your noble heart permits you to do, the inextricable

difficulties with which you are surrounded. You are strong, my lord,

and powerful; yet, let me say it without offence, you are so only by

the reflected light of the Queen's favour. While you are Elizabeth's

favourite, you are all, save in name, like an actual sovereign. But let

her call back the honours she has bestowed, and the prophet's gourd did

not wither more suddenly. Declare against the Queen, and I do not say

that in the wide nation, or in this province alone, you would find

yourself instantly deserted and outnumbered; but I will say, that even

in this very Castle, and in the midst of your vassals, kinsmen, and

dependants, you would be a captive, nay, a sentenced captive, should she

please to say the word. Think upon Norfolk, my lord--upon the powerful

Northumberland--the splendid Westmoreland;--think on all who have made

head against this sage Princess. They are dead, captive, or fugitive.

This is not like other thrones, which can be overturned by a combination

of powerful nobles; the broad foundations which support it are in the

extended love and affections of the people. You might share it with

Elizabeth if you would; but neither yours, nor any other power, foreign

or domestic, will avail to overthrow, or even to shake it."

He paused, and Leicester threw his tablets from him with an air of

reckless despite. "It may be as thou sayest," he said? "and, in sooth,

I care not whether truth or cowardice dictate thy forebodings. But it

shall not be said I fell without a struggle. Give orders that those of

my retainers who served under me in Ireland be gradually drawn into the

main Keep, and let our gentlemen and friends stand on their guard, and

go armed, as if they expected arm onset from the followers of Sussex.

Possess the townspeople with some apprehension; let them take arms, and

be ready, at a given signal, to overpower the Pensioners and Yeomen of

the Guard."

"Let me remind you, my lord," said Varney, with the same appearance of

deep and melancholy interest, "that you have given me orders to prepare

for disarming the Queen's guard. It is an act of high treason, but you

shall nevertheless be obeyed."

"I care not," said Leicester desperately--"I care not. Shame is behind

me, ruin before me; I must on."

Here there was another pause, which Varney at length broke with the

following words: "It is come to the point I have long dreaded. I must

either witness, like an ungrateful beast, the downfall of the best and

kindest of masters, or I must speak what I would have buried in the

deepest oblivion, or told by any other mouth than mine."

"What is that thou sayest, or wouldst say?" replied the Earl; "we have

no time to waste on words when the times call us to action."

"My speech is soon made, my lord--would to God it were as soon answered!

Your marriage is the sole cause of the threatened breach with your

Sovereign, my lord, is it not?"

"Thou knowest it is!" replied Leicester. "What needs so fruitless a

question?"

"Pardon me, my lord," said Varney; "the use lies here. Men will wager

their lands and lives in defence of a rich diamond, my lord; but were it

not first prudent to look if there is no flaw in it?"

"What means this?" said Leicester, with eyes sternly fixed on his

dependant; "of whom dost thou dare to speak?"

"It is--of the Countess Amy, my lord, of whom I am unhappily bound to

speak; and of whom I WILL speak, were your lordship to kill me for my

zeal."

"Thou mayest happen to deserve it at my hand," said the Earl; "but speak

on, I will hear thee."

"Nay, then, my lord, I will be bold. I speak for my own life as well as

for your lordship's. I like not this lady's tampering and trickstering

with this same Edmund Tressilian. You know him, my lord. You know he had

formerly an interest in her, which it cost your lordship some pains to

supersede. You know the eagerness with which he has pressed on the suit

against me in behalf of this lady, the open object of which is to drive

your lordship to an avowal of what I must ever call your most unhappy

marriage, the point to which my lady also is willing, at any risk, to

urge you."

Leicester smiled constrainedly. "Thou meanest well, good Sir Richard,

and wouldst, I think, sacrifice thine own honour, as well as that of any

other person, to save me from what thou thinkest a step so terrible. But

remember"--he spoke these words with the most stern decision--"you speak

of the Countess of Leicester."

"I do, my lord," said Varney; "but it is for the welfare of the Earl of

Leicester. My tale is but begun. I do most strongly believe that this

Tressilian has, from the beginning of his moving in her cause, been in

connivance with her ladyship the Countess."

"Thou speakest wild madness, Varney, with the sober face of a preacher.

Where, or how, could they communicate together?"

"My lord," said Varney, "unfortunately I can show that but too well.

It was just before the supplication was presented to the Queen, in

Tressilian's name, that I met him, to my utter astonishment, at the

postern gate which leads from the demesne at Cumnor Place."

"Thou met'st him, villain! and why didst thou not strike him dead?"

exclaimed Leicester.

"I drew on him, my lord, and he on me; and had not my foot slipped, he

would not, perhaps, have been again a stumbling-block in your lordship's

path."

Leicester seemed struck dumb with surprise. At length he answered,

"What other evidence hast thou of this, Varney, save thine own

assertion?--for, as I will punish deeply, I will examine coolly and

warily. Sacred Heaven!--but no--I will examine coldly and warily--coldly

and warily." He repeated these words more than once to himself, as if in

the very sound there was a sedative quality; and again compressing his

lips, as if he feared some violent expression might escape from them, he

asked again, "What further proof?"

"Enough, my lord," said Varney, "and to spare. I would it rested with me

alone, for with me it might have been silenced for ever. But my servant,

Michael Lambourne, witnessed the whole, and was, indeed, the means of

first introducing Tressilian into Cumnor Place; and therefore I took him

into my service, and retained him in it, though something of a debauched

fellow, that I might have his tongue always under my own command." He

then acquainted Lord Leicester how easy it was to prove the circumstance

of their interview true, by evidence of Anthony Foster, with the

corroborative testimonies of the various persons at Cumnor, who had

heard the wager laid, and had seen Lambourne and Tressilian set off

together. In the whole narrative, Varney hazarded nothing fabulous,

excepting that, not indeed by direct assertion, but by inference, he led

his patron to suppose that the interview betwixt Amy and Tressilian at

Cumnor Place had been longer than the few minutes to which it was in

reality limited.

"And wherefore was I not told of all this?" said Leicester sternly. "Why

did all of ye--and in particular thou, Varney--keep back from me such

material information?"

"Because, my lord," replied Varney, "the Countess pretended to Foster

and to me that Tressilian had intruded himself upon her; and I concluded

their interview had been in all honour, and that she would at her own

time tell it to your lordship. Your lordship knows with what unwilling

ears we listen to evil surmises against those whom we love; and I thank

Heaven I am no makebate or informer, to be the first to sow them."

"You are but too ready to receive them, however, Sir Richard," replied

his patron. "How knowest thou that this interview was not in all honour,

as thou hast said? Methinks the wife of the Earl of Leicester might

speak for a short time with such a person as Tressilian without injury

to me or suspicion to herself."

"Questionless, my lord," answered Varney, "Had I thought otherwise,

I had been no keeper of the secret. But here lies the rub--Tressilian

leaves not the place without establishing a correspondence with a poor

man, the landlord of an inn in Cumnor, for the purpose of carrying off

the lady. He sent down an emissary of his, whom I trust soon to have

in right sure keeping under Mervyn's Tower--Killigrew and Lambsbey are

scouring the country in quest of him. The host is rewarded with a ring

for keeping counsel--your lordship may have noted it on Tressilian's

hand--here it is. This fellow, this agent, makes his way to the place

as a pedlar; holds conferences with the lady, and they make their escape

together by night; rob a poor fellow of a horse by the way, such was

their guilty haste, and at length reach this Castle, where the Countess

of Leicester finds refuge--I dare not say in what place."

"Speak, I command thee," said Leicester--"speak, while I retain sense

enough to hear thee."

"Since it must be so," answered Varney, "the lady resorted immediately

to the apartment of Tressilian, where she remained many hours, partly in

company with him, and partly alone. I told you Tressilian had a paramour

in his chamber; I little dreamed that paramour was--"

"Amy, thou wouldst say," answered Leicester; "but it is false, false as

the smoke of hell! Ambitious she may be--fickle and impatient--'tis a

woman's fault; but false to me!--never, never. The proof--the proof of

this!" he exclaimed hastily.

"Carrol, the Deputy Marshal, ushered her thither by her own desire, on

yesterday afternoon; Lambourne and the Warder both found her there at an

early hour this morning."

"Was Tressilian there with her?" said Leicester, in the same hurried

tone.

"No, my lord. You may remember," answered Varney, "that he was that

night placed with Sir Nicholas Blount, under a species of arrest."

"Did Carrol, or the other fellows, know who she was?" demanded

Leicester.

"No, my lord," replied Varney; "Carrol and the Warder had never seen the

Countess, and Lambourne knew her not in her disguise. But in seeking

to prevent her leaving the cell, he obtained possession of one of her

gloves, which, I think, your lordship may know."

He gave the glove, which had the Bear and Ragged Staff, the Earl's

impress, embroidered upon it in seed-pearls.

"I do--I do recognize it," said Leicester. "They were my own gift. The

fellow of it was on the arm which she threw this very day around my

neck!" He spoke this with violent agitation.

"Your lordship," said Varney, "might yet further inquire of the lady

herself respecting the truth of these passages."

"It needs not--it needs not," said the tortured Earl; "it is written

in characters of burning light, as if they were branded on my very

eyeballs! I see her infamy-I can see nought else; and--gracious

Heaven!--for this vile woman was I about to commit to danger the lives

of so many noble friends, shake the foundation of a lawful throne, carry

the sword and torch through the bosom of a peaceful land, wrong the

kind mistress who made me what I am, and would, but for that hell-framed

marriage, have made me all that man can be! All this I was ready to do

for a woman who trinkets and traffics with my worst foes!--And thou,

villain, why didst thou not speak sooner?"

"My lord," said Varney, "a tear from my lady would have blotted out

all I could have said. Besides, I had not these proofs until this very

morning, when Anthony Foster's sudden arrival with the examinations

and declarations, which he had extorted from the innkeeper Gosling and

others, explained the manner of her flight from Cumnor Place, and my own

researches discovered the steps which she had taken here."

"Now, may God be praised for the light He has given! so full, so

satisfactory, that there breathes not a man in England who shall call

my proceeding rash, or my revenge unjust.--And yet, Varney, so young,

so fair, so fawning, and so false! Hence, then, her hatred to thee, my

trusty, my well-beloved servant, because you withstood her plots, and

endangered her paramour's life!"

"I never gave her any other cause of dislike, my lord," replied Varney.

"But she knew that my counsels went directly to diminish her influence

with your lordship; and that I was, and have been, ever ready to peril

my life against your enemies."

"It is too, too apparent," replied Leicester "yet with what an air of

magnanimity she exhorted me to commit my head to the Queen's mercy,

rather than wear the veil of falsehood a moment longer! Methinks the

angel of truth himself can have no such tones of high-souled impulse.

Can it be so, Varney?--can falsehood use thus boldly the language of

truth?--can infamy thus assume the guise of purity? Varney, thou hast

been my servant from a child. I have raised thee high--can raise

thee higher. Think, think for me!--thy brain was ever shrewd and

piercing--may she not be innocent? Prove her so, and all I have yet done

for thee shall be as nothing--nothing, in comparison of thy recompense!"

The agony with which his master spoke had some effect even on the

hardened Varney, who, in the midst of his own wicked and ambitious

designs, really loved his patron as well as such a wretch was capable

of loving anything. But he comforted himself, and subdued his

self-reproaches, with the reflection that if he inflicted upon the Earl

some immediate and transitory pain, it was in order to pave his way to

the throne, which, were this marriage dissolved by death or otherwise,

he deemed Elizabeth would willingly share with his benefactor. He

therefore persevered in his diabolical policy; and after a moment's

consideration, answered the anxious queries of the Earl with a

melancholy look, as if he had in vain sought some exculpation for the

Countess; then suddenly raising his head, he said, with an expression

of hope, which instantly communicated itself to the countenance of his

patron--"Yet wherefore, if guilty, should she have perilled herself

by coming hither? Why not rather have fled to her father's, or

elsewhere?--though that, indeed, might have interfered with her desire

to be acknowledged as Countess of Leicester."

"True, true, true!" exclaimed Leicester, his transient gleam of hope

giving way to the utmost bitterness of feeling and expression; "thou

art not fit to fathom a woman's depth of wit, Varney. I see it all. She

would not quit the estate and title of the wittol who had wedded her.

Ay, and if in my madness I had started into rebellion, or if the angry

Queen had taken my head, as she this morning threatened, the wealthy

dower which law would have assigned to the Countess Dowager of Leicester

had been no bad windfall to the beggarly Tressilian. Well might she

goad me on to danger, which could not end otherwise than profitably to

her,--Speak not for her, Varney! I will have her blood!"

"My lord," replied Varney, "the wildness of your distress breaks forth

in the wildness of your language."

"I say, speak not for her!" replied Leicester; "she has dishonoured

me--she would have murdered me--all ties are burst between us. She shall

die the death of a traitress and adulteress, well merited both by the

laws of God and man! And--what is this casket," he said, "which was even

now thrust into my hand by a boy, with the desire I would convey it

to Tressilian, as he could not give it to the Countess? By Heaven! the

words surprised me as he spoke them, though other matters chased them

from my brain; but now they return with double force. It is her casket

of jewels!--Force it open, Varney--force the hinges open with thy

poniard!"

"She refused the aid of my dagger once," thought Varney, as he

unsheathed the weapon, "to cut the string which bound a letter, but now

it shall work a mightier ministry in her fortunes."

With this reflection, by using the three-cornered stiletto-blade as a

wedge, he forced open the slender silver hinges of the casket. The

Earl no sooner saw them give way than he snatched the casket from Sir

Richard's hand, wrenched off the cover, and tearing out the splendid

contents, flung them on the floor in a transport of rage, while he

eagerly searched for some letter or billet which should make the

fancied guilt of his innocent Countess yet more apparent. Then stamping

furiously on the gems, he exclaimed, "Thus I annihilate the miserable

toys for which thou hast sold thyself, body and soul--consigned thyself

to an early and timeless death, and me to misery and remorse for

ever!--Tell me not of forgiveness, Varney--she is doomed!"

So saying, he left the room, and rushed into an adjacent closet, the

door of which he locked and bolted.

Varney looked after him, while something of a more human feeling seemed

to contend with his habitual sneer. "I am sorry for his weakness," he

said, "but love has made him a child. He throws down and treads on

these costly toys-with the same vehemence would he dash to pieces this

frailest toy of all, of which he used to rave so fondly. But that taste

also will be forgotten when its object is no more. Well, he has no eye

to value things as they deserve, and that nature has given to Varney.

When Leicester shall be a sovereign, he will think as little of the

gales of passion through which he gained that royal port, as ever

did sailor in harbour of the perils of a voyage. But these tell-tale

articles must not remain here--they are rather too rich vails for the

drudges who dress the chamber."

While Varney was employed in gathering together and putting them into a

secret drawer of a cabinet that chanced to be open, he saw the door of

Leicester's closet open, the tapestry pushed aside, and the Earl's face

thrust out, but with eyes so dead, and lips and cheeks so bloodless

and pale, that he started at the sudden change. No sooner did his eyes

encounter the Earl's, than the latter withdrew his head and shut the

door of the closet. This manoeuvre Leicester repeated twice, without

speaking a word, so that Varney began to doubt whether his brain was

not actually affected by his mental agony. The third time, however, he

beckoned, and Varney obeyed the signal. When he entered, he soon

found his patron's perturbation was not caused by insanity, but by

the fullness of purpose which he entertained contending with various

contrary passions. They passed a full hour in close consultation;

after which the Earl of Leicester, with an incredible exertion, dressed

himself, and went to attend his royal guest.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

You have displaced the mirth, broke the good meeting

With most admired disorder. --MACBETH.

It was afterwards remembered that during the banquets and revels which

occupied the remainder of this eventful day the bearing of Leicester and

of Varney were totally different from their usual demeanour. Sir Richard

Varney had been held rather a man of counsel and of action than a votary

of pleasure. Business, whether civil or military, seemed always to be

his proper sphere; and while in festivals and revels, although he well

understood how to trick them up and present them, his own part was that

of a mere spectator; or if he exercised his wit, it was in a rough,

caustic, and severe manner, rather as if he scoffed at the exhibition

and the guests than shared the common pleasure.

But upon the present day his character seemed changed. He mixed among

the younger courtiers and ladies, and appeared for the moment to be

actuated by a spirit of light-hearted gaiety, which rendered him a match

for the liveliest. Those who had looked upon him as a man given up

to graver and more ambitious pursuits, a bitter sneerer and passer of

sarcasms at the expense of those who, taking life as they find it,

were disposed to snatch at each pastime it presents, now perceived with

astonishment that his wit could carry as smooth an edge as their own,

his laugh be as lively, and his brow as unclouded. By what art of

damnable hypocrisy he could draw this veil of gaiety over the black

thoughts of one of the worst of human bosoms must remain unintelligible

to all but his compeers, if any such ever existed; but he was a man of

extraordinary powers, and those powers were unhappily dedicated in all

their energy to the very worst of purposes.

It was entirely different with Leicester. However habituated his

mind usually was to play the part of a good courtier, and appear gay,

assiduous, and free from all care but that of enhancing the pleasure

of the moment, while his bosom internally throbbed with the pangs of

unsatisfied ambition, jealousy, or resentment, his heart had now a

yet more dreadful guest, whose workings could not be overshadowed or

suppressed; and you might read in his vacant eye and troubled brow that

his thoughts were far absent from the scenes in which he was compelling

himself to play a part. He looked, moved, and spoke as if by a

succession of continued efforts; and it seemed as if his will had in

some degree lost the promptitude of command over the acute mind and

goodly form of which it was the regent. His actions and gestures,

instead of appearing the consequence of simple volition, seemed, like

those of an automaton, to wait the revolution of some internal machinery

ere they could be performed; and his words fell from him piecemeal,

interrupted, as if he had first to think what he was to say, then how

it was to be said, and as if, after all, it was only by an effort of

continued attention that he completed a sentence without forgetting both

the one and the other.

The singular effects which these distractions of mind produced upon the

behaviour and conversation of the most accomplished courtier of England,

as they were visible to the lowest and dullest menial who approached his

person, could not escape the notice of the most intelligent Princess of

the age. Nor is there the least doubt that the alternate negligence and

irregularity of his manner would have called down Elizabeth's severe

displeasure on the Earl of Leicester, had it not occurred to her to

account for it by supposing that the apprehension of that displeasure

which she had expressed towards him with such vivacity that very morning

was dwelling upon the spirits of her favourite, and, spite of his

efforts to the contrary, distracted the usual graceful tenor of his mien

and the charms of his conversation. When this idea, so flattering to

female vanity, had once obtained possession of her mind, it proved a

full and satisfactory apology for the numerous errors and mistakes of

the Earl of Leicester; and the watchful circle around observed with

astonishment, that, instead of resenting his repeated negligence, and

want of even ordinary attention (although these were points on which she

was usually extremely punctilious), the Queen sought, on the contrary,

to afford him time and means to recollect himself, and deigned to assist

him in doing so, with an indulgence which seemed altogether inconsistent

with her usual character. It was clear, however, that this could not

last much longer, and that Elizabeth must finally put another and more

severe construction on Leicester's uncourteous conduct, when the Earl

was summoned by Varney to speak with him in a different apartment.

After having had the message twice delivered to him, he rose, and was

about to withdraw, as it were, by instinct; then stopped, and turning

round, entreated permission of the Queen to absent himself for a brief

space upon matters of pressing importance.

"Go, my lord," said the Queen. "We are aware our presence must occasion

sudden and unexpected occurrences, which require to be provided for on

the instant. Yet, my lord, as you would have us believe ourself your

welcome and honoured guest, we entreat you to think less of our good

cheer, and favour us with more of your good countenance than we have

this day enjoyed; for whether prince or peasant be the guest, the

welcome of the host will always be the better part of the entertainment.

Go, my lord; and we trust to see you return with an unwrinkled brow, and

those free thoughts which you are wont to have at the disposal of your

friends."

Leicester only bowed low in answer to this rebuke, and retired. At the

door of the apartment he was met by Varney, who eagerly drew him apart,

and whispered in his ear, "All is well!"

"Has Masters seen her?" said the Earl.

"He has, my lord; and as she would neither answer his queries, nor

allege any reason for her refusal, he will give full testimony that she

labours under a mental disorder, and may be best committed to the charge

of her friends. The opportunity is therefore free to remove her as we

proposed."

"But Tressilian?" said Leicester.

"He will not know of her departure for some time," replied Varney; "it

shall take place this very evening, and to-morrow he shall be cared

for."

"No, by my soul," answered Leicester; "I will take vengeance on him with

mine own hand!"

"You, my lord, and on so inconsiderable a man as Tressilian! No, my

lord, he hath long wished to visit foreign parts. Trust him to me--I

will take care he returns not hither to tell tales."

"Not so, by Heaven, Varney!" exclaimed Leicester. "Inconsiderable do you

call an enemy that hath had power to wound me so deeply that my whole

after-life must be one scene of remorse and misery?--No; rather than

forego the right of doing myself justice with my own hand on that

accursed villain, I will unfold the whole truth at Elizabeth's

footstool, and let her vengeance descend at once on them and on myself."

Varney saw with great alarm that his lord was wrought up to such a pitch

of agitation, that if he gave not way to him he was perfectly capable of

adopting the desperate resolution which he had announced, and which was

instant ruin to all the schemes of ambition which Varney had formed

for his patron and for himself. But the Earl's rage seemed at once

uncontrollable and deeply concentrated, and while he spoke his eyes

shot fire, his voice trembled with excess of passion, and the light foam

stood on his lip.

His confidant made a bold and successful effort to obtain the mastery of

him even in this hour of emotion. "My lord," he said, leading him to

a mirror, "behold your reflection in that glass, and think if these

agitated features belong to one who, in a condition so extreme, is

capable of forming a resolution for himself."

"What, then, wouldst thou make me?" said Leicester, struck at the change

in his own physiognomy, though offended at the freedom with which Varney

made the appeal. "Am I to be thy ward, thy vassal,--the property and

subject of my servant?"

"No, my lord," said Varney firmly, "but be master of yourself, and of

your own passion. My lord, I, your born servant, am ashamed to see how

poorly you bear yourself in the storm of fury. Go to Elizabeth's

feet, confess your marriage--impeach your wife and her paramour of

adultery--and avow yourself, amongst all your peers, the wittol who

married a country girl, and was cozened by her and her book-learned

gallant. Go, my lord--but first take farewell of Richard Varney, with

all the benefits you ever conferred on him. He served the noble, the

lofty, the high-minded Leicester, and was more proud of depending on him

than he would be of commanding thousands. But the abject lord who stoops

to every adverse circumstance, whose judicious resolves are scattered

like chaff before every wind of passion, him Richard Varney serves not.

He is as much above him in constancy of mind as beneath him in rank and

fortune."

Varney spoke thus without hypocrisy, for though the firmness of mind

which he boasted was hardness and impenetrability, yet he really felt

the ascendency which he vaunted; while the interest which he actually

felt in the fortunes of Leicester gave unusual emotion to his voice and

manner.

Leicester was overpowered by his assumed superiority it seemed to the

unfortunate Earl as if his last friend was about to abandon him. He

stretched his hand towards Varney as he uttered the words, "Do not leave

me. What wouldst thou have me do?"

"Be thyself, my noble master," said Varney, touching the Earl's hand

with his lips, after having respectfully grasped it in his own; "be

yourself, superior to those storms of passion which wreck inferior

minds. Are you the first who has been cozened in love--the first whom a

vain and licentious woman has cheated into an affection, which she

has afterwards scorned and misused? And will you suffer yourself to be

driven frantic because you have not been wiser than the wisest men whom

the world has seen? Let her be as if she had not been--let her pass from

your memory, as unworthy of ever having held a place there. Let your

strong resolve of this morning, which I have both courage, zeal,

and means enough to execute, be like the fiat of a superior being, a

passionless act of justice. She hath deserved death--let her die!"

While he was speaking, the Earl held his hand fast, compressed his lips

hard, and frowned, as if he laboured to catch from Varney a portion of

the cold, ruthless, and dispassionate firmness which he recommended.

When he was silent, the Earl still continued to rasp his hand, until,

with an effort at calm decision, he was able to articulate, "Be it

so--she dies! But one tear might be permitted."

"Not one, my lord," interrupted Varney, who saw by the quivering eye and

convulsed cheek of his patron that he was about to give way to a burst

of emotion--"not a tear--the time permits it not. Tressilian must be

thought of--"

"That indeed is a name," said the Earl, "to convert tears into blood.

Varney, I have thought on this, and I have determined--neither entreaty

nor argument shall move me--Tressilian shall be my own victim."

"It is madness, my lord; but you are too mighty for me to bar your

way to your revenge. Yet resolve at least to choose fitting time and

opportunity, and to forbear him until these shall be found."

"Thou shalt order me in what thou wilt," said Leicester, "only thwart me

not in this."

"Then, my lord," said Varney, "I first request of you to lay aside the

wild, suspected, and half-frenzied demeanour which hath this day drawn

the eyes of all the court upon you, and which, but for the Queen's

partial indulgence, which she hath extended towards you in a degree

far beyond her nature, she had never given you the opportunity to atone

for."

"Have I indeed been so negligent?" said Leicester, as one who awakes

from a dream. "I thought I had coloured it well. But fear nothing, my

mind is now eased--I am calm. My horoscope shall be fulfilled; and that

it may be fulfilled, I will tax to the highest every faculty of my mind.

Fear me not, I say. I will to the Queen instantly--not thine own looks

and language shall be more impenetrable than mine. Hast thou aught else

to say?"

"I must crave your signet-ring," said Varney gravely, "in token to those

of your servants whom I must employ, that I possess your full authority

in commanding their aid."

Leicester drew off the signet-ring which he commonly used, and gave it

to Varney, with a haggard and stern expression of countenance, adding

only, in a low, half-whispered tone, but with terrific emphasis, the

words, "What thou dost, do quickly."

Some anxiety and wonder took place, meanwhile, in the presence-hall, at

the prolonged absence of the noble Lord of the Castle, and great was

the delight of his friends when they saw him enter as a man from whose

bosom, to all human seeming, a weight of care had been just removed.

Amply did Leicester that day redeem the pledge he had given to Varney,

who soon saw himself no longer under the necessity of maintaining a

character so different from his own as that which he had assumed in the

earlier part of the day, and gradually relapsed into the same grave,

shrewd, caustic observer of conversation and incident which constituted

his usual part in society.

With Elizabeth, Leicester played his game as one to whom her natural

strength of talent and her weakness in one or two particular points were

well known. He was too wary to exchange on a sudden the sullen personage

which he had played before he retired with Varney; but on approaching

her it seemed softened into a melancholy, which had a touch of

tenderness in it, and which, in the course of conversing with Elizabeth,

and as she dropped in compassion one mark of favour after another to

console him, passed into a flow of affectionate gallantry, the most

assiduous, the most delicate, the most insinuating, yet at the same time

the most respectful, with which a Queen was ever addressed by a subject.

Elizabeth listened as in a sort of enchantment. Her jealousy of power

was lulled asleep; her resolution to forsake all social or domestic

ties, and dedicate herself exclusively to the care of her people, began

to be shaken; and once more the star of Dudley culminated in the court

horizon.

But Leicester did not enjoy this triumph over nature, and over

conscience, without its being embittered to him, not only by the

internal rebellion of his feelings against the violence which he

exercised over them, but by many accidental circumstances, which, in

the course of the banquet, and during the subsequent amusements of the

evening, jarred upon that nerve, the least vibration of which was agony.

The courtiers were, for example, in the Great Hall, after having left

the banqueting-room, awaiting the appearance of a splendid masque,

which was the expected entertainment of this evening, when the Queen

interrupted a wild career of wit which the Earl of Leicester was running

against Lord Willoughby, Raleigh, and some other courtiers, by saying,

"We will impeach you of high treason, my lord, if you proceed in this

attempt to slay us with laughter. And here comes a thing may make us all

grave at his pleasure, our learned physician Masters, with news belike

of our poor suppliant, Lady Varney;--nay, my lord, we will not have you

leave us, for this being a dispute betwixt married persons, we do not

hold our own experience deep enough to decide thereon without good

counsel.--How now, Masters, what thinkest thou of the runaway bride?"

The smile with which Leicester had been speaking, when the Queen

interrupted him, remained arrested on his lips, as if it had been carved

there by the chisel of Michael Angelo or of Chantrey; and he listened to

the speech of the physician with the same immovable cast of countenance.

"The Lady Varney, gracious Sovereign," said the court physician Masters,

"is sullen, and would hold little conference with me touching the state

of her health, talking wildly of being soon to plead her own cause

before your own presence, and of answering no meaner person's

inquiries."

"Now the heavens forfend!" said the Queen; "we have already suffered

from the misconstructions and broils which seem to follow this poor

brain-sick lady wherever she comes.--Think you not so, my lord?" she

added, appealing to Leicester with something in her look that indicated

regret, even tenderly expressed, for their disagreement of that morning.

Leicester compelled himself to bow low. The utmost force he could

exert was inadequate to the further effort of expressing in words his

acquiescence in the Queen's sentiment.

"You are vindictive," she said, "my lord; but we will find time and

place to punish you. But once more to this same trouble-mirth, this Lady

Varney. What of her health, Masters?"

"She is sullen, madam, as I already said," replied Masters, "and refuses

to answer interrogatories, or be amenable to the authority of the

mediciner. I conceive her to be possessed with a delirium, which I

incline to term rather HYPOCHONDRIA than PHRENESIS; and I think she were

best cared for by her husband in his own house, and removed from all

this bustle of pageants, which disturbs her weak brain with the most

fantastic phantoms. She drops hints as if she were some great person in

disguise--some Countess or Princess perchance. God help them, such are

often the hallucinations of these infirm persons!"

"Nay, then," said the Queen, "away with her with all speed. Let Varney

care for her with fitting humanity; but let them rid the Castle of her

forthwith she will think herself lady of all, I warrant you. It is pity

so fair a form, however, should have an infirm understanding.--What

think you, my lord?"

"It is pity indeed," said the Earl, repeating the words like a task

which was set him.

"But, perhaps," said Elizabeth, "you do not join with us in our opinion

of her beauty; and indeed we have known men prefer a statelier and more

Juno-like form to that drooping fragile one that hung its head like a

broken lily. Ay, men are tyrants, my lord, who esteem the animation

of the strife above the triumph of an unresisting conquest, and, like

sturdy champions, love best those women who can wage contest with

them.--I could think with you, Rutland, that give my Lord of Leicester

such a piece of painted wax for a bride, he would have wished her dead

ere the end of the honeymoon."

As she said this, she looked on Leicester so expressively that, while

his heart revolted against the egregious falsehood, he did himself so

much violence as to reply in a whisper that Leicester's love was more

lowly than her Majesty deemed, since it was settled where he could never

command, but must ever obey.

The Queen blushed, and bid him be silent; yet looked as of she expected

that he would not obey her commands. But at that moment the flourish of

trumpets and kettle-drums from a high balcony which overlooked the hall

announced the entrance of the maskers, and relieved Leicester from the

horrible state of constraint and dissimulation in which the result of

his own duplicity had placed him.

The masque which entered consisted of four separate bands, which

followed each other at brief intervals, each consisting of six principal

persons and as many torch-bearers, and each representing one of the

various nations by which England had at different times been occupied.

The aboriginal Britons, who first entered, were ushered in by two

ancient Druids, whose hoary hair was crowned with a chaplet of oak, and

who bore in their hands branches of mistletoe. The maskers who followed

these venerable figures were succeeded by two Bards, arrayed in white,

and bearing harps, which they occasionally touched, singing at the

same time certain stanzas of an ancient hymn to Belus, or the Sun. The

aboriginal Britons had been selected from amongst the tallest and most

robust young gentlemen in attendance on the court. Their masks were

accommodated with long, shaggy beards and hair; their vestments were

of the hides of wolves and bears; while their legs, arms, and the upper

parts of their bodies, being sheathed in flesh-coloured silk, on which

were traced in grotesque lines representations of the heavenly bodies,

and of animals and other terrestrial objects, gave them the lively

appearance of our painted ancestors, whose freedom was first trenched

upon by the Romans.

The sons of Rome, who came to civilize as well as to conquer, were next

produced before the princely assembly; and the manager of the revels had

correctly imitated the high crest and military habits of that celebrated

people, accommodating them with the light yet strong buckler and the

short two-edged sword, the use of which had made them victors of the

world. The Roman eagles were borne before them by two standard-bearers,

who recited a hymn to Mars, and the classical warriors followed with the

grave and haughty step of men who aspired at universal conquest.

The third quadrille represented the Saxons, clad in the bearskins which

they had brought with them from the German forests, and bearing in

their hands the redoubtable battle-axes which made such havoc among the

natives of Britain. They were preceded by two Scalds, who chanted the

praises of Odin.

Last came the knightly Normans, in their mail-shirts and hoods of steel,

with all the panoply of chivalry, and marshalled by two Minstrels, who

sang of war and ladies' love.

These four bands entered the spacious hall with the utmost order,

a short pause being made, that the spectators might satisfy their

curiosity as to each quadrille before the appearance of the next. They

then marched completely round the hall, in order the more fully to

display themselves, regulating their steps to organs, shalms, hautboys,

and virginals, the music of the Lord Leicester's household. At length

the four quadrilles of maskers, ranging their torch-bearers behind them,

drew up in their several ranks on the two opposite sides of the hall,

so that the Romans confronting the Britons, and the Saxons the Normans,

seemed to look on each other with eyes of wonder, which presently

appeared to kindle into anger, expressed by menacing gestures. At the

burst of a strain of martial music from the gallery the maskers drew

their swords on all sides, and advanced against each other in the

measured steps of a sort of Pyrrhic or military dance, clashing their

swords against their adversaries' shields, and clattering them against

their blades as they passed each other in the progress of the dance. It

was a very pleasant spectacle to see how the various bands, preserving

regularity amid motions which seemed to be totally irregular, mixed

together, and then disengaging themselves, resumed each their own

original rank as the music varied.

In this symbolical dance were represented the conflicts which had taken

place among the various nations which had anciently inhabited Britain.

At length, after many mazy evolutions, which afforded great pleasure to

the spectators, the sound of a loud-voiced trumpet was heard, as if

it blew for instant battle, or for victory won. The maskers instantly

ceased their mimic strife, and collecting themselves under their

original leaders, or presenters, for such was the appropriate phrase,

seemed to share the anxious expectation which the spectators experienced

concerning what was next to appear.

The doors of the hall were thrown wide, and no less a person entered

than the fiend-born Merlin, dressed in a strange and mystical attire,

suited to his ambiguous birth and magical power.

About him and behind him fluttered or gambolled many extraordinary

forms, intended to represent the spirits who waited to do his powerful

bidding; and so much did this part of the pageant interest the menials

and others of the lower class then in the Castle, that many of them

forgot even the reverence due to the Queen's presence, so far as to

thrust themselves into the lower part of the hall.

The Earl of Leicester, seeing his officers had some difficulty to repel

these intruders, without more disturbance than was fitting where the

Queen was in presence, arose and went himself to the bottom of the

hall; Elizabeth, at the same time, with her usual feeling for the common

people, requesting that they might be permitted to remain undisturbed

to witness the pageant. Leicester went under this pretext; but his real

motive was to gain a moment to himself, and to relieve his mind, were it

but for one instant, from the dreadful task of hiding, under the guise

of gaiety and gallantry, the lacerating pangs of shame, anger, remorse,

and thirst for vengeance. He imposed silence by his look and sign upon

the vulgar crowd at the lower end of the apartment; but instead of

instantly returning to wait on her Majesty, he wrapped his cloak around

him, and mixing with the crowd, stood in some degree an undistinguished

spectator of the progress of the masque.

Merlin having entered, and advanced into the midst of the hall, summoned

the presenters of the contending bands around him by a wave of his

magical rod, and announced to them, in a poetical speech, that the isle

of Britain was now commanded by a Royal Maiden, to whom it was the will

of fate that they should all do homage, and request of her to pronounce

on the various pretensions which each set forth to be esteemed the

pre-eminent stock, from which the present natives, the happy subjects of

that angelical Princess, derived their lineage.

In obedience to this mandate, the bands, each moving to solemn music,

passed in succession before Elizabeth, doing her, as they passed, each

after the fashion of the people whom they represented, the lowest

and most devotional homage, which she returned with the same gracious

courtesy that had marked her whole conduct since she came to Kenilworth.

The presenters of the several masques or quadrilles then alleged, each

in behalf of his own troop, the reasons which they had for claiming

pre-eminence over the rest; and when they had been all heard in turn,

she returned them this gracious answer: "That she was sorry she was not

better qualified to decide upon the doubtful question which had been

propounded to her by the direction of the famous Merlin, but that it

seemed to her that no single one of these celebrated nations could claim

pre-eminence over the others, as having most contributed to form the

Englishman of her own time, who unquestionably derived from each of them

some worthy attribute of his character. Thus," she said, "the Englishman

had from the ancient Briton his bold and tameless spirit of freedom;

from the Roman his disciplined courage in war, with his love of letters

and civilization in time of peace; from the Saxon his wise and equitable

laws; and from the chivalrous Norman his love of honour and courtesy,

with his generous desire for glory."

Merlin answered with readiness that it did indeed require that so many

choice qualities should meet in the English, as might render them in

some measure the muster of the perfections of other nations, since that

alone could render them in some degree deserving of the blessings they

enjoyed under the reign of England's Elizabeth.

The music then sounded, and the quadrilles, together with Merlin and his

assistants, had begun to remove from the crowded hall, when Leicester,

who was, as we have mentioned, stationed for the moment near the bottom

of the hall, and consequently engaged in some degree in the crowd, felt

himself pulled by the cloak, while a voice whispered in his ear, "My

Lord, I do desire some instant conference with you."

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

How is't with me, when every noise appals me? --MACBETH.

"I desire some conference with you." The words were simple in

themselves, but Lord Leicester was in that alarmed and feverish state

of mind when the most ordinary occurrences seem fraught with alarming

import; and he turned hastily round to survey the person by whom

they had been spoken. There was nothing remarkable in the speaker's

appearance, which consisted of a black silk doublet and short mantle,

with a black vizard on his face; for it appeared he had been among the

crowd of masks who had thronged into the hall in the retinue of Merlin,

though he did not wear any of the extravagant disguises by which most of

them were distinguished.

"Who are you, or what do you want with me?" said Leicester, not without

betraying, by his accents, the hurried state of his spirits.

"No evil, my lord," answered the mask, "but much good and honour, if

you will rightly understand my purpose. But I must speak with you more

privately."

"I can speak with no nameless stranger," answered Leicester, dreading he

knew not precisely what from the request of the stranger; "and those

who are known to me must seek another and a fitter time to ask an

interview."

He would have hurried away, but the mask still detained him.

"Those who talk to your lordship of what your own honour demands have a

right over your time, whatever occupations you may lay aside in order to

indulge them."

"How! my honour? Who dare impeach it?" said Leicester.

"Your own conduct alone can furnish grounds for accusing it, my lord,

and it is that topic on which I would speak with you."

"You are insolent," said Leicester, "and abuse the hospitable license

of the time, which prevents me from having you punished. I demand your

name!"

"Edmund Tressilian of Cornwall," answered the mask. "My tongue has been

bound by a promise for four-and-twenty hours. The space is passed,--I

now speak, and do your lordship the justice to address myself first to

you."

The thrill of astonishment which had penetrated to Leicester's very

heart at hearing that name pronounced by the voice of the man he most

detested, and by whom he conceived himself so deeply injured, at first

rendered him immovable, but instantly gave way to such a thirst for

revenge as the pilgrim in the desert feels for the water-brooks. He had

but sense and self-government enough left to prevent his stabbing to

the heart the audacious villain, who, after the ruin he had brought

upon him, dared, with such unmoved assurance, thus to practise upon

him further. Determined to suppress for the moment every symptom of

agitation, in order to perceive the full scope of Tressilian's purpose,

as well as to secure his own vengeance, he answered in a tone so altered

by restrained passion as scarce to be intelligible, "And what does

Master Edmund Tressilian require at my hand?"

"Justice, my lord," answered Tressilian, calmly but firmly.

"Justice," said Leicester, "all men are entitled to. YOU, Master

Tressilian, are peculiarly so, and be assured you shall have it."

"I expect nothing less from your nobleness," answered Tressilian; "but

time presses, and I must speak with you to-night. May I wait on you in

your chamber?"

"No," answered Leicester sternly, "not under a roof, and that roof mine

own. We will meet under the free cope of heaven."

"You are discomposed or displeased, my lord," replied Tressilian; "yet

there is no occasion for distemperature. The place is equal to me, so

you allow me one half-hour of your time uninterrupted."

"A shorter time will, I trust, suffice," answered Leicester. "Meet me in

the Pleasance when the Queen has retired to her chamber."

"Enough," said Tressilian, and withdrew; while a sort of rapture seemed

for the moment to occupy the mind of Leicester.

"Heaven," he said, "is at last favourable to me, and has put within my

reach the wretch who has branded me with this deep ignominy--who has

inflicted on me this cruel agony. I will blame fate no more, since I am

afforded the means of tracing the wiles by which he means still further

to practise on me, and then of at once convicting and punishing his

villainy. To my task--to my task! I will not sink under it now, since

midnight, at farthest, will bring me vengeance."

While these reflections thronged through Leicester's mind, he again made

his way amid the obsequious crowd, which divided to give him passage,

and resumed his place, envied and admired, beside the person of his

Sovereign. But could the bosom of him thus admired and envied have been

laid open before the inhabitants of that crowded hall, with all its dark

thoughts of guilty ambition, blighted affection, deep vengeance, and

conscious sense of meditated cruelty, crossing each other like spectres

in the circle of some foul enchantress, which of them, from the most

ambitious noble in the courtly circle down to the most wretched menial

who lived by shifting of trenchers, would have desired to change

characters with the favourite of Elizabeth, and the Lord of Kenilworth?

New tortures awaited him as soon as he had rejoined Elizabeth.

"You come in time, my lord," she said, "to decide a dispute between us

ladies. Here has Sir Richard Varney asked our permission to depart from

the Castle with his infirm lady, having, as he tells us, your lordship's

consent to his absence, so he can obtain ours. Certes, we have no will

to withhold him from the affectionate charge of this poor young person;

but you are to know that Sir Richard Varney hath this day shown himself

so much captivated with these ladies of ours, that here is our Duchess

of Rutland says he will carry his poor insane wife no farther than the

lake, plunge her in to tenant the crystal palaces that the enchanted

nymph told us of, and return a jolly widower, to dry his tears and to

make up the loss among our train. How say you, my lord? We have seen

Varney under two or three different guises--you know what are his proper

attributes--think you he is capable of playing his lady such a knave's

trick?"

Leicester was confounded, but the danger was urgent, and a reply

absolutely necessary. "The ladies," he said, "think too lightly of one

of their own sex, in supposing she could deserve such a fate; or too ill

of ours, to think it could be inflicted upon an innocent female."

"Hear him, my ladies," said Elizabeth; "like all his sex, he would

excuse their cruelty by imputing fickleness to us."

"Say not US, madam," replied the Earl. "We say that meaner women, like

the lesser lights of heaven, have revolutions and phases; but who shall

impute mutability to the sun, or to Elizabeth?"

The discourse presently afterwards assumed a less perilous tendency, and

Leicester continued to support his part in it with spirit, at whatever

expense of mental agony. So pleasing did it seem to Elizabeth, that the

Castle bell had sounded midnight ere she retired from the company, a

circumstance unusual in her quiet and regular habits of disposing of

time. Her departure was, of course, the signal for breaking up the

company, who dispersed to their several places of repose, to dream over

the pastimes of the day, or to anticipate those of the morrow.

The unfortunate Lord of the Castle, and founder of the proud festival,

retired to far different thoughts. His direction to the valet who

attended him was to send Varney instantly to his apartment. The

messenger returned after some delay, and informed him that an hour had

elapsed since Sir Richard Varney had left the Castle by the postern gate

with three other persons, one of whom was transported in a horse-litter.

"How came he to leave the Castle after the watch was set?" said

Leicester. "I thought he went not till daybreak."

"He gave satisfactory reasons, as I understand," said the domestic, "to

the guard, and, as I hear, showed your lordship's signet--"

"True--true," said the Earl; "yet he has been hasty. Do any of his

attendants remain behind?"

"Michael Lambourne, my lord," said the valet, "was not to be found when

Sir Richard Varney departed, and his master was much incensed at his

absence. I saw him but now saddling his horse to gallop after his

master."

"Bid him come hither instantly," said Leicester; "I have a message to

his master."

The servant left the apartment, and Leicester traversed it for some time

in deep meditation. "Varney is over-zealous," he said, "over-pressing.

He loves me, I think; but he hath his own ends to serve, and he is

inexorable in pursuit of them. If I rise, he rises; and he hath shown

himself already but too, eager to rid me of this obstacle which seems

to stand betwixt me and sovereignty. Yet I will not stoop to bear this

disgrace. She shall be punished, but it shall be more advisedly. I

already feel, even in anticipation, that over-haste would light the

flames of hell in my bosom. No--one victim is enough at once, and that

victim already waits me."

He seized upon writing materials, and hastily traced these words:--

"Sir Richard Varney, we have resolved to defer the matter entrusted to

your care, and strictly command you to proceed no further in relation

to our Countess until our further order. We also command your instant

return to Kenilworth as soon as you have safely bestowed that with which

you are entrusted. But if the safe-placing of your present charge shall

detain you longer than we think for, we command you in that case to send

back our signet-ring by a trusty and speedy messenger, we having present

need of the same. And requiring your strict obedience in these things,

and commending you to God's keeping, we rest your assured good friend

and master,

"R. LEICESTER. "Given at our Castle of Kenilworth, the tenth of July, in

the year of Salvation one thousand five hundred and seventy-five."

As Leicester had finished and sealed this mandate, Michael Lambourne,

booted up to mid-thigh, having his riding-cloak girthed around him

with a broad belt, and a felt cap on his head, like that of a courier,

entered his apartment, ushered in by the valet.

"What is thy capacity of service?" said the Earl.

"Equerry to your lordship's master of the horse," answered Lambourne,

with his customary assurance.

"Tie up thy saucy tongue, sir," said Leicester; "the jests that may suit

Sir Richard Varney's presence suit not mine. How soon wilt thou overtake

thy master?"

"In one hour's riding, my lord, if man and horse hold good," said

Lambourne, with an instant alteration of demeanour, from an approach to

familiarity to the deepest respect. The Earl measured him with his eye

from top to toe.

"I have heard of thee," he said "men say thou art a prompt fellow in

thy service, but too much given to brawling and to wassail to be trusted

with things of moment."

"My lord," said Lambourne, "I have been soldier, sailor, traveller, and

adventurer; and these are all trades in which men enjoy to-day, because

they have no surety of to-morrow. But though I may misuse mine own

leisure, I have never neglected the duty I owe my master."

"See that it be so in this instance," said Leicester, "and it shall do

thee good. Deliver this letter speedily and carefully into Sir Richard

Varney's hands."

"Does my commission reach no further?" said Lambourne.

"No," answered Leicester; "but it deeply concerns me that it be

carefully as well as hastily executed."

"I will spare neither care nor horse-flesh," answered Lambourne, and

immediately took his leave.

"So, this is the end of my private audience, from which I hoped so

much!" he muttered to himself, as he went through the long gallery, and

down the back staircase. "Cogs bones! I thought the Earl had wanted a

cast of mine office in some secret intrigue, and it all ends in carrying

a letter! Well, his pleasure shall be done, however; and as his lordship

well says, it may do me good another time. The child must creep ere he

walk, and so must your infant courtier. I will have a look into

this letter, however, which he hath sealed so sloven-like." Having

accomplished this, he clapped his hands together in ecstasy, exclaiming,

"The Countess the Countess! I have the secret that shall make or mar

me.--But come forth, Bayard," he added, leading his horse into the

courtyard, "for your flanks and my spurs must be presently acquainted."

Lambourne mounted, accordingly, and left the Castle by the postern gate,

where his free passage was permitted, in consequence of a message to

that effect left by Sir Richard Varney.

As soon as Lambourne and the valet had left the apartment, Leicester

proceeded to change his dress for a very plain one, threw his mantle

around him, and taking a lamp in his hand, went by the private passage

of communication to a small secret postern door which opened into the

courtyard, near to the entrance of the Pleasance. His reflections were

of a more calm and determined character than they had been at any late

period, and he endeavoured to claim, even in his own eyes, the character

of a man more sinned against than sinning.

"I have suffered the deepest injury," such was the tenor of his

meditations, "yet I have restricted the instant revenge which was in my

power, and have limited it to that which is manly and noble. But shall

the union which this false woman has this day disgraced remain an

abiding fetter on me, to check me in the noble career to which my

destinies invite me? No; there are other means of disengaging such ties,

without unloosing the cords of life. In the sight of God, I am no longer

bound by the union she has broken. Kingdoms shall divide us, oceans roll

betwixt us, and their waves, whose abysses have swallowed whole navies,

shall be the sole depositories of the deadly mystery."

By such a train of argument did Leicester labour to reconcile his

conscience to the prosecution of plans of vengeance, so hastily adopted,

and of schemes of ambition, which had become so woven in with every

purpose and action of his life that he was incapable of the effort of

relinquishing them, until his revenge appeared to him to wear a face of

justice, and even of generous moderation.

In this mood the vindictive and ambitious Earl entered the superb

precincts of the Pleasance, then illumined by the full moon. The broad,

yellow light was reflected on all sides from the white freestone, of

which the pavement, balustrades, and architectural ornaments of the

place were constructed; and not a single fleecy cloud was visible in the

azure sky, so that the scene was nearly as light as if the sun had but

just left the horizon. The numerous statues of white marble glimmered

in the pale light like so many sheeted ghosts just arisen from their

sepulchres, and the fountains threw their jets into the air as if they

sought that their waters should be brightened by the moonbeams ere they

fell down again upon their basins in showers of sparkling silver. The

day had been sultry, and the gentle night-breeze which sighed along the

terrace of the Pleasance raised not a deeper breath than the fan in the

hand of youthful beauty. The bird of summer night had built many a nest

in the bowers of the adjacent garden, and the tenants now indemnified

themselves for silence during the day by a full chorus of their

own unrivalled warblings, now joyous, now pathetic, now united, now

responsive to each other, as if to express their delight in the placid

and delicious scene to which they poured their melody.

Musing on matters far different from the fall of waters, the gleam of

moonlight, or the song of the nightingale, the stately Leicester walked

slowly from the one end of the terrace to the other, his cloak wrapped

around him, and his sword under his arm, without seeing anything

resembling the human form.

"I have been fooled by my own generosity," he said, "if I have suffered

the villain to escape me--ay, and perhaps to go to the rescue of the

adulteress, who is so poorly guarded."

These were his thoughts, which were instantly dispelled when, turning

to look back towards the entrance, he saw a human form advancing slowly

from the portico, and darkening the various objects with its shadow, as

passing them successively, in its approach towards him.

"Shall I strike ere I again hear his detested voice?" was Leicester's

thought, as he grasped the hilt of the sword. "But no! I will see which

way his vile practice tends. I will watch, disgusting as it is, the

coils and mazes of the loathsome snake, ere I put forth my strength and

crush him."

His hand quitted the sword-hilt, and he advanced slowly towards

Tressilian, collecting, for their meeting, all the self-possession he

could command, until they came front to front with each other.

Tressilian made a profound reverence, to which the Earl replied with

a haughty inclination of the head, and the words, "You sought secret

conference with me, sir; I am here, and attentive."

"My lord," said Tressilian, "I am so earnest in that which I have to

say, and so desirous to find a patient, nay, a favourable hearing, that

I will stoop to exculpate myself from whatever might prejudice your

lordship against me. You think me your enemy?"

"Have I not some apparent cause?" answered Leicester, perceiving that

Tressilian paused for a reply.

"You do me wrong, my lord. I am a friend, but neither a dependant nor

partisan, of the Earl of Sussex, whom courtiers call your rival; and it

is some considerable time since I ceased to consider either courts or

court intrigues as suited to my temper or genius."

"No doubt, sir," answered Leicester "there are other occupations more

worthy a scholar, and for such the world holds Master Tressilian. Love

has his intrigues as well as ambition."

"I perceive, my lord," replied Tressilian, "you give much weight to my

early attachment for the unfortunate young person of whom I am about to

speak, and perhaps think I am prosecuting her cause out of rivalry, more

than a sense of justice."

"No matter for my thoughts, sir," said the Earl; "proceed. You have as

yet spoken of yourself only--an important and worthy subject doubtless,

but which, perhaps, does not altogether so deeply concern me that I

should postpone my repose to hear it. Spare me further prelude, sir, and

speak to the purpose if indeed you have aught to say that concerns me.

When you have done, I, in my turn, have something to communicate."

"I will speak, then, without further prelude, my lord," answered

Tressilian, "having to say that which, as it concerns your lordship's

honour, I am confident you will not think your time wasted in listening

to. I have to request an account from your lordship of the unhappy Amy

Robsart, whose history is too well known to you. I regret deeply that I

did not at once take this course, and make yourself judge between me and

the villain by whom she is injured. My lord, she extricated herself

from an unlawful and most perilous state of confinement, trusting to the

effects of her own remonstrance upon her unworthy husband, and extorted

from me a promise that I would not interfere in her behalf until she had

used her own efforts to have her rights acknowledged by him."

"Ha," said Leicester, "remember you to whom you speak?"

"I speak of her unworthy husband, my lord," repeated Tressilian, "and

my respect can find no softer language. The unhappy young woman is

withdrawn from my knowledge, and sequestered in some secret place of

this Castle--if she be not transferred to some place of seclusion better

fitted for bad designs. This must be reformed, my lord--I speak it as

authorized by her father--and this ill-fated marriage must be avouched

and proved in the Queen's presence, and the lady placed without

restraint and at her own free disposal. And permit me to say it concerns

no one's honour that these most just demands of mine should be complied

with so much as it does that of your lordship."

The Earl stood as if he had been petrified at the extreme coolness

with which the man, whom he considered as having injured him so deeply,

pleaded the cause of his criminal paramour, as if she had been an

innocent woman and he a disinterested advocate; nor was his wonder

lessened by the warmth with which Tressilian seemed to demand for her

the rank and situation which she had disgraced, and the advantages of

which she was doubtless to share with the lover who advocated her cause

with such effrontery. Tressilian had been silent for more than a

minute ere the Earl recovered from the excess of his astonishment; and

considering the prepossessions with which his mind was occupied, there

is little wonder that his passion gained the mastery of every other

consideration. "I have heard you, Master Tressilian," said he, "without

interruption, and I bless God that my ears were never before made to

tingle by the words of so frontless a villain. The task of chastising

you is fitter for the hangman's scourge than the sword of a nobleman,

but yet--Villain, draw and defend thyself!"

As he spoke the last words, he dropped his mantle on the ground, struck

Tressilian smartly with his sheathed sword, and instantly drawing his

rapier, put himself into a posture of assault. The vehement fury of his

language at first filled Tressilian, in his turn, with surprise equal

to what Leicester had felt when he addressed him. But astonishment gave

place to resentment when the unmerited insults of his language were

followed by a blow which immediately put to flight every thought save

that of instant combat. Tressilian's sword was instantly drawn; and

though perhaps somewhat inferior to Leicester in the use of the weapon,

he understood it well enough to maintain the contest with great spirit,

the rather that of the two he was for the time the more cool, since he

could not help imputing Leicester's conduct either to actual frenzy or

to the influence of some strong delusion.

The rencontre had continued for several minutes, without either party

receiving a wound, when of a sudden voices were heard beneath the

portico which formed the entrance of the terrace, mingled with the steps

of men advancing hastily. "We are interrupted," said Leicester to his

antagonist; "follow me."

At the same time a voice from the portico said, "The jackanape is

right--they are tilting here."

Leicester, meanwhile, drew off Tressilian into a sort of recess behind

one of the fountains, which served to conceal them, while six of

the yeomen of the Queen's guard passed along the middle walk of the

Pleasance, and they could hear one say to the rest, "We shall never find

them to-night among all these squirting funnels, squirrel cages, and

rabbit-holes; but if we light not on them before we reach the farther

end, we will return, and mount a guard at the entrance, and so secure

them till morning."

"A proper matter," said another, "the drawing of swords so near the

Queen's presence, ay, and in her very palace as 'twere! Hang it, they

must be some poor drunken game-cocks fallen to sparring--'twere pity

almost we should find them--the penalty is chopping off a hand, is it

not?--'twere hard to lose hand for handling a bit of steel, that comes

so natural to one's gripe."

"Thou art a brawler thyself, George," said another; "but take heed, for

the law stands as thou sayest."

"Ay," said the first, "an the act be not mildly construed; for thou

knowest 'tis not the Queen's palace, but my Lord of Leicester's."

"Why, for that matter, the penalty may be as severe," said another "for

an our gracious Mistress be Queen, as she is, God save her, my Lord of

Leicester is as good as King."

"Hush, thou knave!" said a third; "how knowest thou who may be within

hearing?"

They passed on, making a kind of careless search, but seemingly more

intent on their own conversation than bent on discovering the persons

who had created the nocturnal disturbance.

They had no sooner passed forward along the terrace, than Leicester,

making a sign to Tressilian to follow him, glided away in an opposite

direction, and escaped through the portico undiscovered. He conducted

Tressilian to Mervyn's Tower, in which he was now again lodged; and

then, ere parting with him, said these words, "If thou hast courage to

continue and bring to an end what is thus broken off, be near me when

the court goes forth to-morrow; we shall find a time, and I will give

you a signal when it is fitting."

"My lord," said Tressilian, "at another time I might have inquired the

meaning of this strange and furious inveteracy against me. But you have

laid that on my shoulder which only blood can wash away; and were you

as high as your proudest wishes ever carried you, I would have from you

satisfaction for my wounded honour."

On these terms they parted, but the adventures of the night were not yet

ended with Leicester. He was compelled to pass by Saintlowe's Tower, in

order to gain the private passage which led to his own chamber; and in

the entrance thereof he met Lord Hunsdon half clothed, and with a naked

sword under his arm.

"Are you awakened, too, with this 'larum, my Lord of Leicester?" said

the old soldier. "'Tis well. By gog's nails, the nights are as noisy as

the day in this Castle of yours. Some two hours since I was waked by

the screams of that poor brain-sick Lady Varney, whom her husband

was forcing away. I promise you it required both your warrant and the

Queen's to keep me from entering into the game, and cutting that Varney

of yours over the head. And now there is a brawl down in the Pleasance,

or what call you the stone terrace-walk where all yonder gimcracks

stand?"

The first part of the old man's speech went through the Earl's heart

like a knife; to the last he answered that he himself had heard the

clash of swords, and had come down to take order with those who had been

so insolent so near the Queen's presence.

"Nay, then," said Hunsdon, "I will be glad of your lordship's company."

Leicester was thus compelled to turn back with the rough old Lord to the

Pleasance, where Hunsdon heard from the yeomen of the guard, who were

under his immediate command, the unsuccessful search they had made for

the authors of the disturbance; and bestowed for their pains some round

dozen of curses on them, as lazy knaves and blind whoresons. Leicester

also thought it necessary to seem angry that no discovery had been

effected; but at length suggested to Lord Hunsdon, that after all it

could only be some foolish young men who had been drinking healths

pottle-deep, and who should be sufficiently scared by the search which

had taken place after them. Hunsdon, who was himself attached to his

cup, allowed that a pint-flagon might cover many of the follies which it

had caused, "But," added he, "unless your lordship will be less liberal

in your housekeeping, and restrain the overflow of ale, and wine, and

wassail, I foresee it will end in my having some of these good fellows

into the guard-house, and treating them to a dose of the strappado. And

with this warning, good night to you."

Joyful at being rid of his company, Leicester took leave of him at the

entrance of his lodging, where they had first met, and entering the

private passage, took up the lamp which he had left there, and by its

expiring light found the way to his own apartment.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Room! room! for my horse will wince

If he comes within so many yards of a prince;

For to tell you true, and in rhyme,

He was foal'd in Queen Elizabeth's time;

When the great Earl of Lester

In his castle did feast her.

--BEN JONSON, MASQUE OF OWLS.

The amusement with which Elizabeth and her court were next day to be

regaled was an exhibition by the true-hearted men of Coventry, who were

to represent the strife between the English and the Danes, agreeably

to a custom long preserved in their ancient borough, and warranted for

truth by old histories and chronicles. In this pageant one party of the

townsfolk presented the Saxons and the other the Danes, and set forth,

both in rude rhymes and with hard blows, the contentions of these two

fierce nations, and the Amazonian courage of the English women, who,

according to the story, were the principal agents in the general

massacre of the Danes, which took place at Hocktide, in the year of God

1012. This sport, which had been long a favourite pastime with the

men of Coventry, had, it seems, been put down by the influence of

some zealous clergymen of the more precise cast, who chanced to have

considerable influence with the magistrates. But the generality of the

inhabitants had petitioned the Queen that they might have their play

again, and be honoured with permission to represent it before her

Highness. And when the matter was canvassed in the little council which

usually attended the Queen for dispatch of business, the proposal,

although opposed by some of the stricter sort, found favour in the eyes

of Elizabeth, who said that such toys occupied, without offence, the

minds of many who, lacking them, might find worse subjects of pastime;

and that their pastors, however commendable for learning and godliness,

were somewhat too sour in preaching against the pastimes of their flocks

and so the pageant was permitted to proceed.

Accordingly, after a morning repast, which Master Laneham calls an

ambrosial breakfast, the principal persons of the court in attendance

upon her Majesty pressed to the Gallery-tower, to witness the approach

of the two contending parties of English and Danes; and after a signal

had been given, the gate which opened in the circuit of the Chase was

thrown wide to admit them. On they came, foot and horse; for some of

the more ambitious burghers and yeomen had put themselves into fantastic

dresses, imitating knights, in order to resemble the chivalry of the two

different nations. However, to prevent fatal accidents, they were not

permitted to appear on real horses, but had only license to accoutre

themselves with those hobby-horses, as they are called, which anciently

formed the chief delight of a morrice-dance, and which still are

exhibited on the stage, in the grand battle fought at the conclusion

of Mr. Bayes's tragedy. The infantry followed in similar disguises.

The whole exhibition was to be considered as a sort of anti-masque, or

burlesque of the more stately pageants in which the nobility and gentry

bore part in the show, and, to the best of their knowledge, imitated

with accuracy the personages whom they represented. The Hocktide play

was of a different character, the actors being persons of inferior

degree, and their habits the better fitted for the occasion, the more

incongruous and ridiculous that they were in themselves. Accordingly

their array, which the progress of our tale allows us no time to

describe, was ludicrous enough; and their weapons, though sufficiently

formidable to deal sound blows, were long alder-poles instead of lances,

and sound cudgels for swords; and for fence, both cavalry and infantry

were well equipped with stout headpieces and targets, both made of thick

leather.

Captain Coxe, that celebrated humorist of Coventry, whose library of

ballads, almanacs, and penny histories, fairly wrapped up in parchment,

and tied round for security with a piece of whipcord, remains still

the envy of antiquaries, being himself the ingenious person under

whose direction the pageant had been set forth, rode valiantly on his

hobby-horse before the bands of English, high-trussed, saith Laneham,

and brandishing his long sword, as became an experienced man of war, who

had fought under the Queen's father, bluff King Henry, at the siege of

Boulogne. This chieftain was, as right and reason craved, the first to

enter the lists, and passing the Gallery at the head of his myrmidons,

kissed the hilt of his sword to the Queen, and executed at the same

time a gambade, the like whereof had never been practised by two-legged

hobby-horse. Then passing on with all his followers of cavaliers and

infantry, he drew them up with martial skill at the opposite extremity

of the bridge, or tilt-yard, until his antagonist should be fairly

prepared for the onset.

This was no long interval; for the Danish cavalry and infantry, no way

inferior to the English in number, valour, and equipment, instantly

arrived, with the northern bagpipe blowing before them in token of their

country, and headed by a cunning master of defence, only inferior to the

renowned Captain Coxe, if to him, in the discipline of war. The Danes,

as invaders, took their station under the Gallery-tower, and opposite

to that of Mortimer; and when their arrangements were completely made, a

signal was given for the encounter.

Their first charge upon each other was rather moderate, for either party

had some dread of being forced into the lake. But as reinforcements came

up on either side, the encounter grew from a skirmish into a blazing

battle. They rushed upon one another, as Master Laneham testifies, like

rams inflamed by jealousy, with such furious encounter that both parties

were often overthrown, and the clubs and targets made a most horrible

clatter. In many instances that happened which had been dreaded by the

more experienced warriors who began the day of strife. The rails which

defended the ledges of the bridge had been, perhaps on purpose, left but

slightly fastened, and gave way under the pressure of those who thronged

to the combat, so that the hot courage of many of the combatants

received a sufficient cooling. These incidents might have occasioned

more serious damage than became such an affray, for many of the

champions who met with this mischance could not swim, and those who

could were encumbered with their suits of leathern and of paper armour;

but the case had been provided for, and there were several boats in

readiness to pick up the unfortunate warriors and convey them to the dry

land, where, dripping and dejected, they comforted themselves with the

hot ale and strong waters which were liberally allowed to them, without

showing any desire to re-enter so desperate a conflict.

Captain Coxe alone, that paragon of Black-Letter antiquaries, after

twice experiencing, horse and man, the perilous leap from the bridge

into the lake, equal to any extremity to which the favourite heroes of

chivalry, whose exploits he studied in an abridged form, whether Amadis,

Belianis, Bevis, or his own Guy of Warwick, had ever been subjected

to--Captain Coxe, we repeat, did alone, after two such mischances, rush

again into the heat of conflict, his bases and the footcloth of his

hobby-horse dropping water, and twice reanimated by voice and example

the drooping spirits of the English; so that at last their victory over

the Danish invaders became, as was just and reasonable, complete and

decisive. Worthy he was to be rendered immortal by the pen of Ben

Jonson, who, fifty years afterwards, deemed that a masque, exhibited at

Kenilworth, could be ushered in by none with so much propriety as by the

ghost of Captain Coxe, mounted upon his redoubted hobby-horse.

These rough, rural gambols may not altogether agree with the reader's

preconceived idea of an entertainment presented before Elizabeth, in

whose reign letters revived with such brilliancy, and whose court,

governed by a female whose sense of propriety was equal to her strength

of mind, was no less distinguished for delicacy and refinement than her

councils for wisdom and fortitude. But whether from the political wish

to seem interested in popular sports, or whether from a spark of old

Henry's rough, masculine spirit, which Elizabeth sometimes displayed,

it is certain the Queen laughed heartily at the imitation, or rather

burlesque, of chivalry which was presented in the Coventry play. She

called near her person the Earl of Sussex and Lord Hunsdon, partly

perhaps to make amends to the former for the long and private audiences

with which she had indulged the Earl of Leicester, by engaging him in

conversation upon a pastime which better suited his taste than those

pageants that were furnished forth from the stores of antiquity. The

disposition which the Queen showed to laugh and jest with her military

leaders gave the Earl of Leicester the opportunity he had been watching

for withdrawing from the royal presence, which to the court around, so

well had he chosen his time, had the graceful appearance of leaving his

rival free access to the Queen's person, instead of availing himself of

his right as her landlord to stand perpetually betwixt others and the

light of her countenance.

Leicester's thoughts, however, had a far different object from

mere courtesy; for no sooner did he see the Queen fairly engaged in

conversation with Sussex and Hunsdon, behind whose back stood Sir

Nicholas Blount, grinning from ear to ear at each word which was spoken,

than, making a sign to Tressilian, who, according to appointment,

watched his motions at a little distance, he extricated himself from the

press, and walking towards the Chase, made his way through the crowds of

ordinary spectators, who, with open mouth, stood gazing on the battle

of the English and the Danes. When he had accomplished this, which was

a work of some difficulty, he shot another glance behind him to see that

Tressilian had been equally successful; and as soon as he saw him also

free from the crowd, he led the way to a small thicket, behind which

stood a lackey, with two horses ready saddled. He flung himself on the

one, and made signs to Tressilian to mount the other, who obeyed without

speaking a single word.

Leicester then spurred his horse, and galloped without stopping until

he reached a sequestered spot, environed by lofty oaks, about a mile's

distance from the Castle, and in an opposite direction from the scene to

which curiosity was drawing every spectator. He there dismounted, bound

his horse to a tree, and only pronouncing the words, "Here there is no

risk of interruption," laid his cloak across his saddle, and drew his

sword.

Tressilian imitated his example punctually, yet could not forbear

saying, as he drew his weapon, "My lord, as I have been known to many as

one who does not fear death when placed in balance with honour, methinks

I may, without derogation, ask wherefore, in the name of all that is

honourable, your lordship has dared to offer me such a mark of disgrace

as places us on these terms with respect to each other?"

"If you like not such marks of my scorn," replied the Earl, "betake

yourself instantly to your weapon, lest I repeat the usage you complain

of."

"It shall not need, my lord," said Tressilian. "God judge betwixt us!

and your blood, if you fall, be on your own head."

He had scarce completed the sentence when they instantly closed in

combat.

But Leicester, who was a perfect master of defence among all other

exterior accomplishments of the time, had seen on the preceding night

enough of Tressilian's strength and skill to make him fight with more

caution than heretofore, and prefer a secure revenge to a hasty one.

For some minutes they fought with equal skill and fortune, till, in

a desperate lunge which Leicester successfully put aside, Tressilian

exposed himself at disadvantage; and in a subsequent attempt to close,

the Earl forced his sword from his hand, and stretched him on the

ground. With a grim smile he held the point of his rapier within two

inches of the throat of his fallen adversary, and placing his foot at

the same time upon his breast, bid him confess his villainous wrongs

towards him, and prepare for death.

"I have no villainy nor wrong towards thee to confess," answered

Tressilian, "and am better prepared for death than thou. Use thine

advantage as thou wilt, and may God forgive you! I have given you no

cause for this."

"No cause!" exclaimed the Earl, "no cause!--but why parley with such a

slave? Die a liar, as thou hast lived!"

He had withdrawn his arm for the purpose of striking the fatal blow,

when it was suddenly seized from behind.

The Earl turned in wrath to shake off the unexpected obstacle, but was

surprised to find that a strange-looking boy had hold of his sword-arm,

and clung to it with such tenacity of grasp that he could not shake him

of without a considerable struggle, in the course of which Tressilian

had opportunity to rise and possess himself once more of his weapon.

Leicester again turned towards him with looks of unabated ferocity, and

the combat would have recommenced with still more desperation on both

sides, had not the boy clung to Lord Leicester's knees, and in a shrill

tone implored him to listen one moment ere he prosecuted this quarrel.

"Stand up, and let me go," said Leicester, "or, by Heaven, I will pierce

thee with my rapier! What hast thou to do to bar my way to revenge?"

"Much--much!" exclaimed the undaunted boy, "since my folly has been

the cause of these bloody quarrels between you, and perchance of worse

evils. Oh, if you would ever again enjoy the peace of an innocent mind,

if you hope again to sleep in peace and unhaunted by remorse, take so

much leisure as to peruse this letter, and then do as you list."

While he spoke in this eager and earnest manner, to which his singular

features and voice gave a goblin-like effect, he held up to Leicester

a packet, secured with a long tress of woman's hair of a beautiful

light-brown colour. Enraged as he was, nay, almost blinded with fury to

see his destined revenge so strangely frustrated, the Earl of Leicester

could not resist this extraordinary supplicant. He snatched the letter

from his hand--changed colour as he looked on the superscription--undid

with faltering hand the knot which secured it--glanced over the

contents, and staggering back, would have fallen, had he not rested

against the trunk of a tree, where he stood for an instant, his eyes

bent on the letter, and his sword-point turned to the ground, without

seeming to be conscious of the presence of an antagonist towards whom

he had shown little mercy, and who might in turn have taken him at

advantage. But for such revenge Tressilian was too noble-minded. He

also stood still in surprise, waiting the issue of this strange fit of

passion, but holding his weapon ready to defend himself in case of need

against some new and sudden attack on the part of Leicester, whom he

again suspected to be under the influence of actual frenzy. The boy,

indeed, he easily recognized as his old acquaintance Dickon, whose face,

once seen, was scarcely to be forgotten; but how he came hither at so

critical a moment, why his interference was so energetic, and, above

all, how it came to produce so powerful an effect upon Leicester, were

questions which he could not solve.

But the letter was of itself powerful enough to work effects yet more

wonderful. It was that which the unfortunate Amy had written to her

husband, in which she alleged the reasons and manner of her flight from

Cumnor Place, informed him of her having made her way to Kenilworth

to enjoy his protection, and mentioned the circumstances which had

compelled her to take refuge in Tressilian's apartment, earnestly

requesting he would, without delay, assign her a more suitable asylum.

The letter concluded with the most earnest expressions of devoted

attachment and submission to his will in all things, and particularly

respecting her situation and place of residence, conjuring him only that

she might not be placed under the guardianship or restraint of Varney.

The letter dropped from Leicester's hand when he had perused it. "Take

my sword," he said, "Tressilian, and pierce my heart, as I would but now

have pierced yours!"

"My lord," said Tressilian, "you have done me great wrong, but something

within my breast ever whispered that it was by egregious error."

"Error, indeed!" said Leicester, and handed him the letter; "I have been

made to believe a man of honour a villain, and the best and purest of

creatures a false profligate.--Wretched boy, why comes this letter now,

and where has the bearer lingered?"

"I dare not tell you, my lord," said the boy, withdrawing, as if to keep

beyond his reach; "but here comes one who was the messenger."

Wayland at the same moment came up; and interrogated by Leicester,

hastily detailed all the circumstances of his escape with Amy, the fatal

practices which had driven her to flight, and her anxious desire to

throw herself under the instant protection of her husband--pointing

out the evidence of the domestics of Kenilworth, "who could not," he

observed, "but remember her eager inquiries after the Earl of Leicester

on her first arrival."

"The villains!" exclaimed Leicester; "but oh, that worst of villains,

Varney!--and she is even now in his power!"

"But not, I trust in God," said Tressilian, "with any commands of fatal

import?"

"No, no, no!" exclaimed the Earl hastily. "I said something in madness;

but it was recalled, fully recalled, by a hasty messenger, and she is

now--she must now be safe."

"Yes," said Tressilian, "she MUST be safe, and I MUST be assured of her

safety. My own quarrel with you is ended, my lord; but there is another

to begin with the seducer of Amy Robsart, who has screened his guilt

under the cloak of the infamous Varney."

"The SEDUCER of Amy!" replied Leicester, with a voice like thunder; "say

her husband!--her misguided, blinded, most unworthy husband! She is

as surely Countess of Leicester as I am belted Earl. Nor can you, sir,

point out that manner of justice which I will not render her at my own

free will. I need scarce say I fear not your compulsion."

The generous nature of Tressilian was instantly turned from

consideration of anything personal to himself, and centred at once

upon Amy's welfare. He had by no means undoubting confidence in the

fluctuating resolutions of Leicester, whose mind seemed to him agitated

beyond the government of calm reason; neither did he, notwithstanding

the assurances he had received, think Amy safe in the hands of his

dependants. "My lord," he said calmly, "I mean you no offence, and am

far from seeking a quarrel. But my duty to Sir Hugh Robsart compels me

to carry this matter instantly to the Queen, that the Countess's rank

may be acknowledged in her person."

"You shall not need, sir," replied the Earl haughtily; "do not dare

to interfere. No voice but Dudley's shall proclaim Dudley's infamy. To

Elizabeth herself will I tell it; and then for Cumnor Place with the

speed of life and death!"

So saying, he unbound his horse from the tree, threw himself into the

saddle, and rode at full gallop towards the Castle.

"Take me before you, Master Tressilian," said the boy, seeing Tressilian

mount in the same haste; "my tale is not all told out, and I need your

protection."

Tressilian complied, and followed the Earl, though at a less furious

rate. By the way the boy confessed, with much contrition, that in

resentment at Wayland's evading all his inquiries concerning the lady,

after Dickon conceived he had in various ways merited his confidence,

he had purloined from him in revenge the letter with which Amy had

entrusted him for the Earl of Leicester. His purpose was to have

restored it to him that evening, as he reckoned himself sure of meeting

with him, in consequence of Wayland's having to perform the part of

Arion in the pageant. He was indeed something alarmed when he saw to

whom the letter was addressed; but he argued that, as Leicester did

not return to Kenilworth until that evening, it would be again in the

possession of the proper messenger as soon as, in the nature of things,

it could possibly be delivered. But Wayland came not to the pageant,

having been in the interim expelled by Lambourne from the Castle; and

the boy, not being able to find him, or to get speech of Tressilian, and

finding himself in possession of a letter addressed to no less a person

than the Earl of Leicester, became much afraid of the consequences

of his frolic. The caution, and indeed the alarm, which Wayland had

expressed respecting Varney and Lambourne, led him to judge that the

letter must be designed for the Earl's own hand, and that he might

prejudice the lady by giving it to any of the domestics. He made an

attempt or two to obtain an audience of Leicester; but the singularity

of his features and the meanness of his appearance occasioned his being

always repulsed by the insolent menials whom he applied to for that

purpose. Once, indeed, he had nearly succeeded, when, in prowling

about, he found in the grotto the casket, which he knew to belong to the

unlucky Countess, having seen it on her journey; for nothing escaped his

prying eye. Having striven in vain to restore it either to Tressilian

or the Countess, he put it into the hands, as we have seen, of Leicester

himself, but unfortunately he did not recognize him in his disguise.

At length the boy thought he was on the point of succeeding when the

Earl came down to the lower part of the hall; but just as he was about

to accost him, he was prevented by Tressilian. As sharp in ear as in

wit, the boy heard the appointment settled betwixt them, to take place

in the Pleasance, and resolved to add a third to the party, in hope

that, either in coming or returning, he might find an opportunity of

delivering the letter to Leicester; for strange stories began to flit

among the domestics, which alarmed him for the lady's safety. Accident,

however, detained Dickon a little behind the Earl, and as he reached

the arcade he saw them engaged in combat; in consequence of which he

hastened to alarm the guard, having little doubt that what bloodshed

took place betwixt them might arise out of his own frolic. Continuing to

lurk in the portico, he heard the second appointment which Leicester at

parting assigned to Tressilian; and was keeping them in view during

the encounter of the Coventry men, when, to his surprise, he recognized

Wayland in the crowd, much disguised, indeed, but not sufficiently so to

escape the prying glance of his old comrade. They drew aside out of the

crowd to explain their situation to each other. The boy confessed to

Wayland what we have above told; and the artist, in return, informed him

that his deep anxiety for the fate of the unfortunate lady had brought

him back to the neighbourhood of the Castle, upon his learning

that morning, at a village about ten miles distant, that Varney

and Lambourne, whose violence he dreaded, had both left Kenilworth

over-night.

While they spoke, they saw Leicester and Tressilian separate themselves

from the crowd, dogged them until they mounted their horses, when the

boy, whose speed of foot has been before mentioned, though he could not

possibly keep up with them, yet arrived, as we have seen, soon enough

to save Tressilian's life. The boy had just finished his tale when they

arrived at the Gallery-tower.

CHAPTER XL.

High o'er the eastern steep the sun is beaming,

And darkness flies with her deceitful shadows;--

So truth prevails o'er falsehood. --OLD PLAY.

As Tressilian rode along the bridge, lately the scene of so much riotous

sport, he could not but observe that men's countenances had singularly

changed during the space of his brief absence. The mock fight was over,

but the men, still habited in their masking suits, stood together in

groups, like the inhabitants of a city who have been just startled by

some strange and alarming news.

When he reached the base-court, appearances were the same--domestics,

retainers, and under-officers stood together and whispered, bending

their eyes towards the windows of the Great Hall, with looks which

seemed at once alarmed and mysterious.

Sir Nicholas Blount was the first person of his own particular

acquaintance Tressilian saw, who left him no time to make inquiries, but

greeted him with, "God help thy heart, Tressilian! thou art fitter for a

clown than a courtier thou canst not attend, as becomes one who follows

her Majesty. Here you are called for, wished for, waited for--no man but

you will serve the turn; and hither you come with a misbegotten brat on

thy horse's neck, as if thou wert dry nurse to some sucking devil, and

wert just returned from airing."

"Why, what is the matter?" said Tressilian, letting go the boy, who

sprung to ground like a feather, and himself dismounting at the same

time.

"Why, no one knows the matter," replied Blount; "I cannot smell it out

myself, though I have a nose like other courtiers. Only, my Lord of

Leicester has galloped along the bridge as if he would have rode over

all in his passage, demanded an audience of the Queen, and is closeted

even now with her, and Burleigh and Walsingham--and you are called for;

but whether the matter be treason or worse, no one knows."

"He speaks true, by Heaven!" said Raleigh, who that instant appeared;

"you must immediately to the Queen's presence."

"Be not rash, Raleigh," said Blount, "remember his boots.--For Heaven's

sake, go to my chamber, dear Tressilian, and don my new bloom-coloured

silken hose; I have worn them but twice."

"Pshaw!" answered Tressilian; "do thou take care of this boy, Blount; be

kind to him, and look he escapes you not--much depends on him."

So saying, he followed Raleigh hastily, leaving honest Blount with the

bridle of his horse in one hand, and the boy in the other. Blount gave a

long look after him.

"Nobody," he said, "calls me to these mysteries--and he leaves me here

to play horse-keeper and child-keeper at once. I could excuse the one,

for I love a good horse naturally; but to be plagued with a bratchet

whelp.--Whence come ye, my fair-favoured little gossip?"

"From the Fens," answered the boy.

"And what didst thou learn there, forward imp?"

"To catch gulls, with their webbed feet and yellow stockings," said the

boy.

"Umph!" said Blount, looking down on his own immense roses. "Nay, then,

the devil take him asks thee more questions."

Meantime Tressilian traversed the full length of the Great Hall,

in which the astonished courtiers formed various groups, and were

whispering mysteriously together, while all kept their eyes fixed on

the door which led from the upper end of the hall into the Queen's

withdrawing apartment. Raleigh pointed to the door. Tressilian knocked,

and was instantly admitted. Many a neck was stretched to gain a view

into the interior of the apartment; but the tapestry which covered

the door on the inside was dropped too suddenly to admit the slightest

gratification of curiosity.

Upon entrance, Tressilian found himself, not without a strong

palpitation of heart, in the presence of Elizabeth, who was walking to

and fro in a violent agitation, which she seemed to scorn to conceal,

while two or three of her most sage and confidential counsellors

exchanged anxious looks with each other, but delayed speaking till her

wrath abated. Before the empty chair of state in which she had been

seated, and which was half pushed aside by the violence with which she

had started from it, knelt Leicester, his arms crossed, and his

brows bent on the ground, still and motionless as the effigies upon a

sepulchre. Beside him stood the Lord Shrewsbury, then Earl Marshal of

England, holding his baton of office. The Earl's sword was unbuckled,

and lay before him on the floor.

"Ho, sir!" said the Queen, coming close up to Tressilian, and stamping

on the floor with the action and manner of Henry himself; "you knew of

this fair work--you are an accomplice in this deception which has been

practised on us--you have been a main cause of our doing injustice?"

Tressilian dropped on his knee before the Queen, his good sense showing

him the risk of attempting any defence at that moment of irritation.

"Art dumb, sirrah?" she continued; "thou knowest of this affair dost

thou not?"

"Not, gracious madam, that this poor lady was Countess of Leicester."

"Nor shall any one know her for such," said Elizabeth. "Death of my

life! Countess of Leicester!--I say Dame Amy Dudley; and well if she

have not cause to write herself widow of the traitor Robert Dudley."

"Madam," said Leicester, "do with me what it may be your will to do, but

work no injury on this gentleman; he hath in no way deserved it."

"And will he be the better for thy intercession," said the Queen,

leaving Tressilian, who slowly arose, and rushing to Leicester, who

continued kneeling--"the better for thy intercession, thou doubly

false--thou doubly forsworn;--of thy intercession, whose villainy hath

made me ridiculous to my subjects and odious to myself? I could tear out

mine eyes for their blindness!"

Burleigh here ventured to interpose.

"Madam," he said, "remember that you are a Queen--Queen of

England--mother of your people. Give not way to this wild storm of

passion."

Elizabeth turned round to him, while a tear actually twinkled in her

proud and angry eye. "Burleigh," she said, "thou art a statesman--thou

dost not, thou canst not, comprehend half the scorn, half the misery,

that man has poured on me!"

With the utmost caution--with the deepest reverence--Burleigh took her

hand at the moment he saw her heart was at the fullest, and led her

aside to an oriel window, apart from the others.

"Madam," he said, "I am a statesman, but I am also a man--a man already

grown old in your councils--who have not and cannot have a wish on earth

but your glory and happiness; I pray you to be composed."

"Ah! Burleigh," said Elizabeth, "thou little knowest--" here her tears

fell over her cheeks in despite of her.

"I do--I do know, my honoured sovereign. Oh, beware that you lead not

others to guess that which they know not!"

"Ha!" said Elizabeth, pausing as if a new train of thought had

suddenly shot across her brain. "Burleigh, thou art right--thou

art right--anything but disgrace--anything but a confession of

weakness--anything rather than seem the cheated, slighted--'sdeath! to

think on it is distraction!"

"Be but yourself, my Queen," said Burleigh; "and soar far above a

weakness which no Englishman will ever believe his Elizabeth could have

entertained, unless the violence of her disappointment carries a sad

conviction to his bosom."

"What weakness, my lord?" said Elizabeth haughtily; "would you too

insinuate that the favour in which I held yonder proud traitor derived

its source from aught--" But here she could no longer sustain the proud

tone which she had assumed, and again softened as she said, "But why

should I strive to deceive even thee, my good and wise servant?"

Burleigh stooped to kiss her hand with affection, and--rare in the

annals of courts--a tear of true sympathy dropped from the eye of the

minister on the hand of his Sovereign.

It is probable that the consciousness of possessing this sympathy aided

Elizabeth in supporting her mortification, and suppressing her extreme

resentment; but she was still more moved by fear that her passion should

betray to the public the affront and the disappointment, which, alike

as a woman and a Queen, she was so anxious to conceal. She turned from

Burleigh, and sternly paced the hall till her features had recovered

their usual dignity, and her mien its wonted stateliness of regular

motion.

"Our Sovereign is her noble self once more," whispered Burleigh to

Walsingham; "mark what she does, and take heed you thwart her not."

She then approached Leicester, and said with calmness, "My Lord

Shrewsbury, we discharge you of your prisoner.--My Lord of Leicester,

rise and take up your sword; a quarter of an hour's restraint under

the custody of our Marshal, my lord, is, we think, no high penance for

months of falsehood practised upon us. We will now hear the progress

of this affair." She then seated herself in her chair, and said, "You,

Tressilian, step forward, and say what you know."

Tressilian told his story generously, suppressing as much as he could

what affected Leicester, and saying nothing of their having twice

actually fought together. It is very probable that, in doing so, he did

the Earl good service; for had the Queen at that instant found anything

on account of which she could vent her wrath upon him, without laying

open sentiments of which she was ashamed, it might have fared hard with

him. She paused when Tressilian had finished his tale.

"We will take that Wayland," she said, "into our own service, and place

the boy in our Secretary office for instruction, that he may in future

use discretion towards letters. For you, Tressilian, you did wrong in

not communicating the whole truth to us, and your promise not to do so

was both imprudent and undutiful. Yet, having given your word to this

unhappy lady, it was the part of a man and a gentleman to keep it; and

on the whole, we esteem you for the character you have sustained in this

matter.--My Lord of Leicester, it is now your turn to tell us the truth,

an exercise to which you seem of late to have been too much a stranger."

Accordingly, she extorted, by successive questions, the whole history

of his first acquaintance with Amy Robsart--their marriage--his

jealousy--the causes on which it was founded, and many particulars

besides. Leicester's confession, for such it might be called, was

wrenched from him piecemeal, yet was upon the whole accurate, excepting

that he totally omitted to mention that he had, by implication or

otherwise, assented to Varney's designs upon the life of his Countess.

Yet the consciousness of this was what at that moment lay nearest to

his heart; and although he trusted in great measure to the very positive

counter-orders which he had sent by Lambourne, it was his purpose to set

out for Cumnor Place in person as soon as he should be dismissed from

the presence of the Queen, who, he concluded, would presently leave

Kenilworth.

But the Earl reckoned without his host. It is true his presence and his

communications were gall and wormwood to his once partial mistress.

But barred from every other and more direct mode of revenge, the Queen

perceived that she gave her false suitor torture by these inquiries,

and dwelt on them for that reason, no more regarding the pain which she

herself experienced, than the savage cares for the searing of his own

hands by grasping the hot pincers with which he tears the flesh of his

captive enemy.

At length, however, the haughty lord, like a deer that turns to bay,

gave intimation that his patience was failing. "Madam," he said, "I have

been much to blame--more than even your just resentment has expressed.

Yet, madam, let me say that my guilt, if it be unpardonable, was not

unprovoked, and that if beauty and condescending dignity could seduce

the frail heart of a human being, I might plead both as the causes of my

concealing this secret from your Majesty."

The Queen was so much struck with this reply, which Leicester took

care should be heard by no one but herself, that she was for the moment

silenced, and the Earl had the temerity to pursue his advantage. "Your

Grace, who has pardoned so much, will excuse my throwing myself on your

royal mercy for those expressions which were yester-morning accounted

but a light offence."

The Queen fixed her eyes on him while she replied, "Now, by Heaven, my

lord, thy effrontery passes the bounds of belief, as well as patience!

But it shall avail thee nothing.--What ho! my lords, come all and hear

the news-my Lord of Leicester's stolen marriage has cost me a husband,

and England a king. His lordship is patriarchal in his tastes--one wife

at a time was insufficient, and he designed US the honour of his left

hand. Now, is not this too insolent--that I could not grace him with

a few marks of court-favour, but he must presume to think my hand and

crown at his disposal? You, however, think better of me; and I can pity

this ambitious man, as I could a child, whose bubble of soap has burst

between his hands. We go to the presence-chamber.--My Lord of Leicester,

we command your close attendance on us."

All was eager expectation in the hall, and what was the universal

astonishment when the Queen said to those next her, "The revels of

Kenilworth are not yet exhausted, my lords and ladies--we are to

solemnize the noble owner's marriage."

There was an universal expression of surprise.

"It is true, on our royal word," said the Queen; "he hath kept this

a secret even from us, that he might surprise us with it at this very

place and time. I see you are dying of curiosity to know the happy

bride. It is Amy Robsart, the same who, to make up the May-game

yesterday, figured in the pageant as the wife of his servant Varney."

"For God's sake, madam," said the Earl, approaching her with a mixture

of humility, vexation, and shame in his countenance, and speaking so low

as to be heard by no one else, "take my head, as you threatened in your

anger, and spare me these taunts! Urge not a falling man--tread not on a

crushed worm."

"A worm, my lord?" said the Queen, in the same tone; "nay, a snake is

the nobler reptile, and the more exact similitude--the frozen snake you

wot of, which was warmed in a certain bosom--"

"For your own sake--for mine, madam," said the Earl--"while there is yet

some reason left in me--"

"Speak aloud, my lord," said Elizabeth, "and at farther distance, so

please you--your breath thaws our ruff. What have you to ask of us?"

"Permission," said the unfortunate Earl humbly, "to travel to Cumnor

Place."

"To fetch home your bride belike?--Why, ay--that is but right, for, as

we have heard, she is indifferently cared for there. But, my lord, you

go not in person; we have counted upon passing certain days in this

Castle of Kenilworth, and it were slight courtesy to leave us without a

landlord during our residence here. Under your favour, we cannot think

to incur such disgrace in the eyes of our subjects. Tressilian shall

go to Cumnor Place instead of you, and with him some gentleman who hath

been sworn of our chamber, lest my Lord of Leicester should be again

jealous of his old rival.--Whom wouldst thou have to be in commission

with thee, Tressilian?"

Tressilian, with humble deference, suggested the name of Raleigh.

"Why, ay," said the Queen; "so God ha' me, thou hast made a good choice.

He is a young knight besides, and to deliver a lady from prison is

an appropriate first adventure.--Cumnor Place is little better than a

prison, you are to know, my lords and ladies. Besides, there are certain

faitours there whom we would willingly have in safe keeping. You will

furnish them, Master Secretary, with the warrant necessary to secure the

bodies of Richard Varney and the foreign Alasco, dead or alive. Take

a sufficient force with you, gentlemen--bring the lady here in all

honour--lose no time, and God be with you!"

They bowed, and left the presence,

Who shall describe how the rest of that day was spent at Kenilworth?

The Queen, who seemed to have remained there for the sole purpose of

mortifying and taunting the Earl of Leicester, showed herself as skilful

in that female art of vengeance, as she was in the science of wisely

governing her people. The train of state soon caught the signal, and as

he walked among his own splendid preparations, the Lord of Kenilworth,

in his own Castle, already experienced the lot of a disgraced courtier,

in the slight regard and cold manners of alienated friends, and the

ill-concealed triumph of avowed and open enemies. Sussex, from his

natural military frankness of disposition, Burleigh and Walsingham, from

their penetrating and prospective sagacity, and some of the ladies, from

the compassion of their sex, were the only persons in the crowded court

who retained towards him the countenance they had borne in the morning.

So much had Leicester been accustomed to consider court favour as the

principal object of his life, that all other sensations were, for the

time, lost in the agony which his haughty spirit felt at the succession

of petty insults and studied neglects to which he had been subjected;

but when he retired to his own chamber for the night, that long,

fair tress of hair which had once secured Amy's letter fell under his

observation, and, with the influence of a counter-charm, awakened his

heart to nobler and more natural feelings. He kissed it a thousand

times; and while he recollected that he had it always in his power to

shun the mortifications which he had that day undergone, by retiring

into a dignified and even prince-like seclusion with the beautiful and

beloved partner of his future life, he felt that he could rise above the

revenge which Elizabeth had condescended to take.

Accordingly, on the following day the whole conduct of the Earl

displayed so much dignified equanimity--he seemed so solicitous about

the accommodations and amusements of his guests, yet so indifferent to

their personal demeanour towards him--so respectfully distant to the

Queen, yet so patient of her harassing displeasure--that Elizabeth

changed her manner to him, and, though cold and distant, ceased to offer

him any direct affront. She intimated also with some sharpness to others

around her, who thought they were consulting her pleasure in showing a

neglectful conduct to the Earl, that while they remained at Kenilworth

they ought to show the civility due from guests to the Lord of the

Castle. In short, matters were so far changed in twenty-four hours that

some of the more experienced and sagacious courtiers foresaw a strong

possibility of Leicester's restoration to favour, and regulated their

demeanour towards him, as those who might one day claim merit for not

having deserted him in adversity. It is time, however, to leave these

intrigues, and follow Tressilian and Raleigh on their journey.

The troop consisted of six persons; for, besides Wayland, they had

in company a royal pursuivant and two stout serving-men. All were

well-armed, and travelled as fast as it was possible with justice to

their horses, which had a long journey before them. They endeavoured

to procure some tidings as they rode along of Varney and his party, but

could hear none, as they had travelled in the dark. At a small village

about twelve miles from Kenilworth, where they gave some refreshment to

their horses, a poor clergyman, the curate of the place, came out of a

small cottage, and entreated any of the company who might know aught of

surgery to look in for an instant on a dying man.

The empiric Wayland undertook to do his best, and as the curate

conducted him to the spot, he learned that the man had been found on

the highroad, about a mile from the village, by labourers, as they were

going to their work on the preceding morning, and the curate had given

him shelter in his house. He had received a gun-shot wound, which seemed

to be obviously mortal; but whether in a brawl or from robbers they

could not learn, as he was in a fever, and spoke nothing connectedly.

Wayland entered the dark and lowly apartment, and no sooner had the

curate drawn aside the curtain than he knew, in the distorted features

of the patient, the countenance of Michael Lambourne. Under pretence

of seeking something which he wanted, Wayland hastily apprised

his fellow-travellers of this extraordinary circumstance; and both

Tressilian and Raleigh, full of boding apprehensions, hastened to the

curate's house to see the dying man.

The wretch was by this time in the agonies of death, from which a much

better surgeon than Wayland could not have rescued him, for the bullet

had passed clear through his body. He was sensible, however, at least in

part, for he knew Tressilian, and made signs that he wished him to stoop

over his bed. Tressilian did so, and after some inarticulate murmurs, in

which the names of Varney and Lady Leicester were alone distinguishable,

Lambourne bade him "make haste, or he would come too late." It was in

vain Tressilian urged the patient for further information; he seemed

to become in some degree delirious, and when he again made a signal to

attract Tressilian's attention, it was only for the purpose of desiring

him to inform his uncle, Giles Gosling of the Black Bear, that "he had

died without his shoes after all." A convulsion verified his words a few

minutes after, and the travellers derived nothing from having met with

him, saving the obscure fears concerning the fate of the Countess, which

his dying words were calculated to convey, and which induced them to

urge their journey with the utmost speed, pressing horses in the Queen's

name when those which they rode became unfit for service.

CHAPTER XLI.

The death-bell thrice was heard to ring,

An aerial voice was heard to call,

And thrice the raven flapp'd its wing

Around the towers of Cumnor Hall. --MICKLE.

We are now to return to that part of our story where we intimated that

Varney, possessed of the authority of the Earl of Leicester, and of

the Queen's permission to the same effect, hastened to secure himself

against discovery of his perfidy by removing the Countess from

Kenilworth Castle. He had proposed to set forth early in the morning;

but reflecting that the Earl might relent in the interim, and seek

another interview with the Countess, he resolved to prevent, by

immediate departure, all chance of what would probably have ended in his

detection and ruin. For this purpose he called for Lambourne, and was

exceedingly incensed to find that his trusty attendant was abroad on

some ramble in the neighbouring village, or elsewhere. As his return

was expected, Sir Richard commanded that he should prepare himself

for attending him on an immediate journey, and follow him in case he

returned after his departure.

In the meanwhile, Varney used the ministry of a servant called Robin

Tider, one to whom the mysteries of Cumnor Place were already in some

degree known, as he had been there more than once in attendance on the

Earl. To this man, whose character resembled that of Lambourne, though

he was neither quite so prompt nor altogether so profligate, Varney gave

command to have three horses saddled, and to prepare a horse-litter, and

have them in readiness at the postern gate. The natural enough excuse of

his lady's insanity, which was now universally believed, accounted for

the secrecy with which she was to be removed from the Castle, and he

reckoned on the same apology in case the unfortunate Amy's resistance or

screams should render such necessary. The agency of Anthony Foster was

indispensable, and that Varney now went to secure.

This person, naturally of a sour, unsocial disposition, and somewhat

tired, besides, with his journey from Cumnor to Warwickshire, in order

to bring the news of the Countess's escape, had early extricated himself

from the crowd of wassailers, and betaken himself to his chamber, where

he lay asleep, when Varney, completely equipped for travelling, and with

a dark lantern in his hand, entered his apartment. He paused an instant

to listen to what his associate was murmuring in his sleep, and could

plainly distinguish the words, "AVE MARIA--ORA PRO NOBIS. No, it runs

not so--deliver us from evil--ay, so it goes."

"Praying in his sleep," said Varney, "and confounding his old and

new devotions. He must have more need of prayer ere I am done with

him.--What ho! holy man, most blessed penitent!--awake--awake! The devil

has not discharged you from service yet."

As Varney at the same time shook the sleeper by the arm, it changed the

current of his ideas, and he roared out, "Thieves!--thieves! I will die

in defence of my gold--my hard-won gold--that has cost me so dear. Where

is Janet?--Is Janet safe?"

"Safe enough, thou bellowing fool!" said Varney; "art thou not ashamed

of thy clamour?"

Foster by this time was broad awake, and sitting up in his bed, asked

Varney the meaning of so untimely a visit. "It augurs nothing good," he

added.

"A false prophecy, most sainted Anthony," returned Varney; "it augurs

that the hour is come for converting thy leasehold into copyhold. What

sayest thou to that?"

"Hadst thou told me this in broad day," said Foster, "I had rejoiced;

but at this dead hour, and by this dim light, and looking on thy pale

face, which is a ghastly contradiction to thy light words, I cannot

but rather think of the work that is to be done, than the guerdon to be

gained by it."

"Why, thou fool, it is but to escort thy charge back to Cumnor Place."

"Is that indeed all?" said Foster; "thou lookest deadly pale, and thou

art not moved by trifles--is that indeed all?"

"Ay, that--and maybe a trifle more," said Varney.

"Ah, that trifle more!" said Foster; "still thou lookest paler and

paler."

"Heed not my countenance," said Varney; "you see it by this wretched

light. Up and be doing, man. Think of Cumnor Place--thine own proper

copyhold. Why, thou mayest found a weekly lectureship, besides endowing

Janet like a baron's daughter. Seventy pounds and odd."

"Seventy-nine pounds, five shillings and fivepence half-penny, besides

the value of the wood," said Foster; "and I am to have it all as

copyhold?"

"All, man--squirrels and all. No gipsy shall cut the value of a

broom--no boy so much as take a bird's nest--without paying thee a

quittance.--Ay, that is right--don thy matters as fast as possible;

horses and everything are ready, all save that accursed villain

Lambourne, who is out on some infernal gambol."

"Ay, Sir Richard," said Foster, "you would take no advice. I ever told

you that drunken profligate would fail you at need. Now I could have

helped you to a sober young man."

"What, some slow-spoken, long-breathed brother of the congregation? Why,

we shall have use for such also, man. Heaven be praised, we shall lack

labourers of every kind.--Ay, that is right--forget not your pistols.

Come now, and let us away."

"Whither?" said Anthony.

"To my lady's chamber; and, mind, she MUST along with us. Thou art not a

fellow to be startled by a shriek?"

"Not if Scripture reason can be rendered for it; and it is written,

'Wives obey your husbands.' But will my lord's commands bear us out if

we use violence?"

"Tush, man! here is his signet," answered Varney; and having thus

silenced the objections of his associate, they went together to Lord

Hunsdon's apartments, and acquainting the sentinel with their purpose,

as a matter sanctioned by the Queen and the Earl of Leicester, they

entered the chamber of the unfortunate Countess.

The horror of Amy may be conceived when, starting from a broken slumber,

she saw at her bedside Varney, the man on earth she most feared and

hated. It was even a consolation to see that he was not alone, though

she had so much reason to dread his sullen companion.

"Madam," said Varney, "there is no time for ceremony. My Lord of

Leicester, having fully considered the exigencies of the time, sends you

his orders immediately to accompany us on our return to Cumnor Place.

See, here is his signet, in token of his instant and pressing commands."

"It is false!" said the Countess; "thou hast stolen the warrant--thou,

who art capable of every villainy, from the blackest to the basest!"

"It is TRUE, madam," replied Varney; "so true, that if you do not

instantly arise, and prepare to attend us, we must compel you to obey

our orders."

"Compel! Thou darest not put it to that issue, base as thou art!"

exclaimed the unhappy Countess.

"That remains to be proved, madam," said Varney, who had determined on

intimidation as the only means of subduing her high spirit; "if you put

me to it, you will find me a rough groom of the chambers."

It was at this threat that Amy screamed so fearfully that, had it not

been for the received opinion of her insanity, she would quickly have

had Lord Hunsdon and others to her aid. Perceiving, however, that her

cries were vain, she appealed to Foster in the most affecting terms,

conjuring him, as his daughter Janet's honour and purity were dear to

him, not to permit her to be treated with unwomanly violence.

"Why, madam, wives must obey their husbands---there's Scripture warrant

for it," said Foster; "and if you will dress yourself, and come with

us patiently, there's no one shall lay finger on you while I can draw a

pistol-trigger."

Seeing no help arrive, and comforted even by the dogged language of

Foster, the Countess promised to arise and dress herself, if they would

agree to retire from the room. Varney at the same time assured her of

all safety and honour while in their hands, and promised that he himself

would not approach her, since his presence was so displeasing. Her

husband, he added, would be at Cumnor Place within twenty-four hours

after they had reached it.

Somewhat comforted by this assurance, upon which, however, she saw

little reason to rely, the unhappy Amy made her toilette by the

assistance of the lantern, which they left with her when they quitted

the apartment.

Weeping, trembling, and praying, the unfortunate lady dressed herself

with sensations how different from the days in which she was wont to

decorate herself in all the pride of conscious beauty! She endeavoured

to delay the completing her dress as long as she could, until, terrified

by the impatience of Varney, she was obliged to declare herself ready to

attend them.

When they were about to move, the Countess clung to Foster with such an

appearance of terror at Varney's approach that the latter protested to

her, with a deep oath, that he had no intention whatever of even coming

near her. "If you do but consent to execute your husband's will in

quietness, you shall," he said, "see but little of me. I will leave you

undisturbed to the care of the usher whom your good taste prefers."

"My husband's will!" she exclaimed. "But it is the will of God, and let

that be sufficient to me. I will go with Master Foster as unresistingly

as ever did a literal sacrifice. He is a father at least; and will have

decency, if not humanity. For thee, Varney, were it my latest word, thou

art an equal stranger to both."

Varney replied only she was at liberty to choose, and walked some paces

before them to show the way; while, half leaning on Foster, and half

carried by him, the Countess was transported from Saintlowe's Tower to

the postern gate, where Tider waited with the litter and horses.

The Countess was placed in the former without resistance. She saw with

some satisfaction that, while Foster and Tider rode close by the litter,

which the latter conducted, the dreaded Varney lingered behind, and was

soon lost in darkness. A little while she strove, as the road winded

round the verge of the lake, to keep sight of those stately towers which

called her husband lord, and which still, in some places, sparkled with

lights, where wassailers were yet revelling. But when the direction of

the road rendered this no longer possible, she drew back her head,

and sinking down in the litter, recommended herself to the care of

Providence.

Besides the desire of inducing the Countess to proceed quietly on her

journey, Varney had it also in view to have an interview with Lambourne,

by whom he every moment expected to be joined, without the presence

of any witnesses. He knew the character of this man, prompt, bloody,

resolute, and greedy, and judged him the most fit agent he could employ

in his further designs. But ten miles of their journey had been measured

ere he heard the hasty clatter of horse's hoofs behind him, and was

overtaken by Michael Lambourne.

Fretted as he was with his absence, Varney received his profligate

servant with a rebuke of unusual bitterness. "Drunken villain," he said,

"thy idleness and debauched folly will stretch a halter ere it be long,

and, for me, I care not how soon!"

This style of objurgation Lambourne, who was elated to an unusual

degree, not only by an extraordinary cup of wine, but by the sort of

confidential interview he had just had with the Earl, and the secret

of which he had made himself master, did not receive with his wonted

humility. "He would take no insolence of language," he said, "from the

best knight that ever wore spurs. Lord Leicester had detained him on

some business of import, and that was enough for Varney, who was but a

servant like himself."

Varney was not a little surprised at his unusual tone of insolence; but

ascribing it to liquor, suffered it to pass as if unnoticed, and then

began to tamper with Lambourne touching his willingness to aid in

removing out of the Earl of Leicester's way an obstacle to a rise, which

would put it in his power to reward his trusty followers to their utmost

wish. And upon Michael Lambourne's seeming ignorant what was meant, he

plainly indicated "the litter-load, yonder," as the impediment which he

desired should be removed.

"Look you, Sir Richard, and so forth," said Michael, "some are wiser

than some, that is one thing, and some are worse than some, that's

another. I know my lord's mind on this matter better than thou, for he

hath trusted me fully in the matter. Here are his mandates, and his

last words were, Michael Lambourne--for his lordship speaks to me as a

gentleman of the sword, and useth not the words drunken villain, or such

like phrase, of those who know not how to bear new dignities--Varney,

says he, must pay the utmost respect to my Countess. I trust to you for

looking to it, Lambourne, says his lordship, and you must bring back my

signet from him peremptorily."

"Ay," replied Varney, "said he so, indeed? You know all, then?"

"All--all; and you were as wise to make a friend of me while the weather

is fair betwixt us."

"And was there no one present," said Varney, "when my lord so spoke?"

"Not a breathing creature," replied Lambourne. "Think you my lord would

trust any one with such matters, save an approved man of action like

myself?"

"Most true," said Varney; and making a pause, he looked forward on the

moonlight road. They were traversing a wide and open heath. The litter

being at least a mile before them, was both out of sight and hearing.

He looked behind, and there was an expanse, lighted by the moonbeams,

without one human being in sight. He resumed his speech to Lambourne:

"And will you turn upon your master, who has introduced you to

this career of court-like favour--whose apprentice you have been,

Michael--who has taught you the depths and shallows of court intrigue?"

"Michael not me!" said Lambourne; "I have a name will brook a MASTER

before it as well as another; and as to the rest, if I have been

an apprentice, my indenture is out, and I am resolute to set up for

myself."

"Take thy quittance first, thou fool!" said Varney; and with a pistol,

which he had for some time held in his hand, shot Lambourne through the

body.

The wretch fell from his horse without a single groan; and Varney,

dismounting, rifled his pockets, turning out the lining, that it might

appear he had fallen by robbers. He secured the Earl's packet, which was

his chief object; but he also took Lambourne's purse, containing some

gold pieces, the relics of what his debauchery had left him, and from a

singular combination of feelings, carried it in his hand only the length

of a small river, which crossed the road, into which he threw it as far

as he could fling. Such are the strange remnants of conscience which

remain after she seems totally subdued, that this cruel and remorseless

man would have felt himself degraded had he pocketed the few pieces

belonging to the wretch whom he had thus ruthlessly slain.

The murderer reloaded his pistol after cleansing the lock and barrel

from the appearances of late explosion, and rode calmly after the

litter, satisfying himself that he had so adroitly removed a troublesome

witness to many of his intrigues, and the bearer of mandates which he

had no intentions to obey, and which, therefore, he was desirous it

should be thought had never reached his hand.

The remainder of the journey was made with a degree of speed which

showed the little care they had for the health of the unhappy Countess.

They paused only at places where all was under their command, and where

the tale they were prepared to tell of the insane Lady Varney would

have obtained ready credit had she made an attempt to appeal to the

compassion of the few persons admitted to see her. But Amy saw no

chance of obtaining a hearing from any to whom she had an opportunity of

addressing herself; and besides, was too terrified for the presence of

Varney to violate the implied condition under which she was to travel

free from his company. The authority of Varney, often so used during

the Earl's private journeys to Cumnor, readily procured relays of horses

where wanted, so that they approached Cumnor Place upon the night after

they left Kenilworth.

At this period of the journey Varney came up to the rear of the litter,

as he had done before repeatedly during their progress, and asked, "How

does she?"

"She sleeps," said Foster. "I would we were home--her strength is

exhausted."

"Rest will restore her," answered Varney. "She shall soon sleep sound

and long. We must consider how to lodge her in safety."

"In her own apartments, to be sure," said Foster. "I have sent Janet to

her aunt's with a proper rebuke, and the old women are truth itself--for

they hate this lady cordially."

"We will not trust them, however, friend Anthony," said Varney; "We must

secure her in that stronghold where you keep your gold."

"My gold!" said Anthony, much alarmed; "why, what gold have I? God help

me, I have no gold--I would I had!"

"Now, marry hang thee, thou stupid brute, who thinks of or cares for thy

gold? If I did, could I not find an hundred better ways to come at it?

In one word, thy bedchamber, which thou hast fenced so curiously, must

be her place of seclusion; and thou, thou hind, shalt press her pillows

of down. I dare to say the Earl will never ask after the rich furniture

of these four rooms."

This last consideration rendered Foster tractable; he only asked

permission to ride before, to make matters ready, and spurring

his horse, he posted before the litter, while Varney falling about

threescore paces behind it, it remained only attended by Tider.

When they had arrived at Cumnor Place, the Countess asked eagerly for

Janet, and showed much alarm when informed that she was no longer to

have the attendance of that amiable girl.

"My daughter is dear to me, madam," said Foster gruffly; "and I desire

not that she should get the court-tricks of lying and 'scaping--somewhat

too much of that has she learned already, an it please your ladyship."

The Countess, much fatigued and greatly terrified by the circumstances

of her journey, made no answer to this insolence, but mildly expressed a

wish to retire to her chamber.

"Ay, ay," muttered Foster, "'tis but reasonable; but, under favour,

you go not to your gew-gaw toy-house yonder--you will sleep to-night in

better security."

"I would it were in my grave," said the Countess; "but that mortal

feelings shiver at the idea of soul and body parting."

"You, I guess, have no chance to shiver at that," replied Foster. "My

lord comes hither to-morrow, and doubtless you will make your own ways

good with him."

"But does he come hither?--does he indeed, good Foster?"

"Oh, ay, good Foster!" replied the other. "But what Foster shall I be

to-morrow when you speak of me to my lord--though all I have done was to

obey his own orders?"

"You shall be my protector--a rough one indeed--but still a protector,"

answered the Countess. "Oh that Janet were but here!"

"She is better where she is," answered Foster--"one of you is enough to

perplex a plain head. But will you taste any refreshment?"

"Oh no, no--my chamber--my chamber! I trust," she said apprehensively,

"I may secure it on the inside?"

"With all my heart," answered Foster, "so I may secure it on the

outside;" and taking a light, he led the way to a part of the building

where Amy had never been, and conducted her up a stair of great height,

preceded by one of the old women with a lamp. At the head of the stair,

which seemed of almost immeasurable height, they crossed a short wooden

gallery, formed of black oak, and very narrow, at the farther end of

which was a strong oaken door, which opened and admitted them into the

miser's apartment, homely in its accommodations in the very last degree,

and, except in name, little different from a prison-room.

Foster stopped at the door, and gave the lamp to the Countess, without

either offering or permitting the attendance of the old woman who had

carried it. The lady stood not on ceremony, but taking it hastily,

barred the door, and secured it with the ample means provided on the

inside for that purpose.

Varney, meanwhile, had lurked behind on the stairs; but hearing the door

barred, he now came up on tiptoe, and Foster, winking to him, pointed

with self-complacence to a piece of concealed machinery in the wall,

which, playing with much ease and little noise, dropped a part of the

wooden gallery, after the manner of a drawbridge, so as to cut off

all communication between the door of the bedroom, which he usually

inhabited, and the landing-place of the high, winding stair which

ascended to it. The rope by which this machinery was wrought was

generally carried within the bedchamber, it being Foster's object to

provide against invasion from without; but now that it was intended

to secure the prisoner within, the cord had been brought over to

the landing-place, and was there made fast, when Foster with much

complacency had dropped the unsuspected trap-door.

Varney looked with great attention at the machinery, and peeped more

than once down the abyss which was opened by the fall of the trap-door.

It was dark as pitch, and seemed profoundly deep, going, as Foster

informed his confederate in a whisper, nigh to the lowest vault of the

Castle. Varney cast once more a fixed and long look down into this

sable gulf, and then followed Foster to the part of the manor-house most

usually inhabited.

When they arrived in the parlour which we have mentioned, Varney

requested Foster to get them supper, and some of the choicest wine. "I

will seek Alasco," he added; "we have work for him to do, and we must

put him in good heart."

Foster groaned at this intimation, but made no remonstrance. The old

woman assured Varney that Alasco had scarce eaten or drunken since her

master's departure, living perpetually shut up in the laboratory, and

talking as if the world's continuance depended on what he was doing

there.

"I will teach him that the world hath other claims on him," said Varney,

seizing a light, and going in quest of the alchemist. He returned, after

a considerable absence, very pale, but yet with his habitual sneer on

his cheek and nostril. "Our friend," he said, "has exhaled."

"How!--what mean you?" said Foster--"run away--fled with my forty

pounds, that should have been multiplied a thousand-fold? I will have

Hue and Cry!"

"I will tell thee a surer way," said Varney.

"How!--which way?" exclaimed Foster; "I will have back my forty

pounds--I deemed them as surely a thousand times multiplied--I will have

back my in-put, at the least."

"Go hang thyself, then, and sue Alasco in the Devil's Court of Chancery,

for thither he has carried the cause."

"How!--what dost thou mean is he dead?"

"Ay, truly is he," said Varney; "and properly swollen already in the

face and body. He had been mixing some of his devil's medicines, and the

glass mask which he used constantly had fallen from his face, so that

the subtle poison entered the brain, and did its work."

"SANCTA MARIA!" said Foster--"I mean, God in His mercy preserve us from

covetousness and deadly sin!--Had he not had projection, think you? Saw

you no ingots in the crucibles?"

"Nay, I looked not but at the dead carrion," answered Varney; "an ugly

spectacle--he was swollen like a corpse three days exposed on the wheel.

Pah! give me a cup of wine."

"I will go," said Foster, "I will examine myself--" He took the lamp,

and hastened to the door, but there hesitated and paused. "Will you not

go with me?" said he to Varney.

"To what purpose?" said Varney; "I have seen and smelled enough to spoil

my appetite. I broke the window, however, and let in the air; it reeked

of sulphur, and such like suffocating steams, as if the very devil had

been there."

"And might it not be the act of the demon himself?" said Foster, still

hesitating; "I have heard he is powerful at such times, and with such

people."

"Still, if it were that Satan of thine," answered Varney, "who thus

jades thy imagination, thou art in perfect safety, unless he is a most

unconscionable devil indeed. He hath had two good sops of late."

"How TWO sops--what mean you?" said Foster--"what mean you?"

"You will know in time," said Varney;--"and then this other banquet--but

thou wilt esteem Her too choice a morsel for the fiend's tooth--she must

have her psalms, and harps, and seraphs."

Anthony Foster heard, and came slowly back to the table. "God! Sir

Richard, and must that then be done?"

"Ay, in very truth, Anthony, or there comes no copyhold in thy way,"

replied his inflexible associate.

"I always foresaw it would land there!" said Foster. "But how, Sir

Richard, how?--for not to win the world would I put hands on her."

"I cannot blame thee," said Varney; "I should be reluctant to do that

myself. We miss Alasco and his manna sorely--ay, and the dog Lambourne."

"Why, where tarries Lambourne?" said Anthony.

"Ask no questions," said Varney, "thou wilt see him one day if thy creed

is true. But to our graver matter. I will teach thee a spring, Tony, to

catch a pewit. Yonder trap-door--yonder gimcrack of thine, will remain

secure in appearance, will it not, though the supports are withdrawn

beneath?"

"Ay, marry, will it," said Foster; "so long as it is not trodden on."

"But were the lady to attempt an escape over it," replied Varney, "her

weight would carry it down?"

"A mouse's weight would do it," said Foster.

"Why, then, she dies in attempting her escape, and what could you or

I help it, honest Tony? Let us to bed, we will adjust our project

to-morrow."

On the next day, when evening approached, Varney summoned Foster to the

execution of their plan. Tider and Foster's old man-servant were sent on

a feigned errand down to the village, and Anthony himself, as if anxious

to see that the Countess suffered no want of accommodation, visited

her place of confinement. He was so much staggered at the mildness and

patience with which she seemed to endure her confinement, that he could

not help earnestly recommending to her not to cross the threshold of her

room on any account whatever, until Lord Leicester should come, "which,"

he added, "I trust in God, will be very soon." Amy patiently promised

that she would resign herself to her fate, and Foster returned to his

hardened companion with his conscience half-eased of the perilous load

that weighed on it. "I have warned her," he said; "surely in vain is the

snare set in the sight of any bird!"

He left, therefore, the Countess's door unsecured on the outside, and,

under the eye of Varney, withdrew the supports which sustained the

falling trap, which, therefore, kept its level position merely by a

slight adhesion. They withdrew to wait the issue on the ground-floor

adjoining; but they waited long in vain. At length Varney, after walking

long to and fro, with his face muffled in his cloak, threw it suddenly

back and exclaimed, "Surely never was a woman fool enough to neglect so

fair an opportunity of escape!"

"Perhaps she is resolved," said Foster, "to await her husband's return."

"True!--most true!" said Varney, rushing out; "I had not thought of that

before."

In less than two minutes, Foster, who remained behind, heard the tread

of a horse in the courtyard, and then a whistle similar to that

which was the Earl's usual signal. The instant after the door of the

Countess's chamber opened, and in the same moment the trap-door gave

way. There was a rushing sound--a heavy fall--a faint groan--and all was

over.

At the same instant, Varney called in at the window, in an accent and

tone which was an indescribable mixture betwixt horror and raillery, "Is

the bird caught?--is the deed done?"

"O God, forgive us!" replied Anthony Foster.

"Why, thou fool," said Varney, "thy toil is ended, and thy reward

secure. Look down into the vault--what seest thou?"

"I see only a heap of white clothes, like a snowdrift," said Foster. "O

God, she moves her arm!"

"Hurl something down on her--thy gold chest, Tony--it is an heavy one."

"Varney, thou art an incarnate fiend!" replied Foster.

"There needs nothing more--she is gone!"

"So pass our troubles," said Varney, entering the room; "I dreamed not I

could have mimicked the Earl's call so well."

"Oh, if there be judgment in heaven, thou hast deserved it," said

Foster, "and wilt meet it! Thou hast destroyed her by means of her best

affections--it is a seething of the kid in the mother's milk!"

"Thou art a fanatical ass," replied Varney; "let us now think how the

alarm should be given--the body is to remain where it is."

But their wickedness was to be permitted no longer; for even while they

were at this consultation, Tressilian and Raleigh broke in upon them,

having obtained admittance by means of Tider and Foster's servant, whom

they had secured at the village.

Anthony Foster fled on their entrance, and knowing each corner and pass

of the intricate old house, escaped all search. But Varney was taken on

the spot; and instead of expressing compunction for what he had done,

seemed to take a fiendish pleasure in pointing out to them the remains

of the murdered Countess, while at the same time he defied them to show

that he had any share in her death. The despairing grief of Tressilian,

on viewing the mangled and yet warm remains of what had lately been so

lovely and so beloved, was such that Raleigh was compelled to have him

removed from the place by force, while he himself assumed the direction

of what was to be done.

Varney, upon a second examination, made very little mystery either of

the crime or of its motives---alleging, as a reason for his frankness,

that though much of what he confessed could only have attached to him by

suspicion, yet such suspicion would have been sufficient to deprive

him of Leicester's confidence, and to destroy all his towering plans of

ambition. "I was not born," he said, "to drag on the remainder of life a

degraded outcast; nor will I so die that my fate shall make a holiday to

the vulgar herd."

From these words it was apprehended he had some design upon himself, and

he was carefully deprived of all means by which such could be carried

into execution. But like some of the heroes of antiquity, he carried

about his person a small quantity of strong poison, prepared probably

by the celebrated Demetrius Alasco. Having swallowed this potion

over-night, he was found next morning dead in his cell; nor did he

appear to have suffered much agony, his countenance presenting, even in

death, the habitual expression of sneering sarcasm which was predominant

while he lived. "The wicked man," saith Scripture, "hath no bands in his

death."

The fate of his colleague in wickedness was long unknown. Cumnor Place

was deserted immediately after the murder; for in the vicinity of what

was called the Lady Dudley's Chamber, the domestics pretended to hear

groans, and screams, and other supernatural noises. After a certain

length of time, Janet, hearing no tidings of her father, became the

uncontrolled mistress of his property, and conferred it with her hand

upon Wayland, now a man of settled character, and holding a place in

Elizabeth's household. But it was after they had been both dead for some

years that their eldest son and heir, in making some researches about

Cumnor Hall, discovered a secret passage, closed by an iron door, which,

opening from behind the bed in the Lady Dudley's Chamber, descended to a

sort of cell, in which they found an iron chest containing a quantity

of gold, and a human skeleton stretched above it. The fate of Anthony

Foster was now manifest. He had fled to this place of concealment,

forgetting the key of the spring-lock; and being barred from escape by

the means he had used for preservation of that gold, for which he had

sold his salvation, he had there perished miserably. Unquestionably the

groans and screams heard by the domestics were not entirely imaginary,

but were those of this wretch, who, in his agony, was crying for relief

and succour.

The news of the Countess's dreadful fate put a sudden period to the

pleasures of Kenilworth. Leicester retired from court, and for a

considerable time abandoned himself to his remorse. But as Varney in his

last declaration had been studious to spare the character of his patron,

the Earl was the object rather of compassion than resentment. The Queen

at length recalled him to court; he was once more distinguished as a

statesman and favourite; and the rest of his career is well known to

history. But there was something retributive in his death, if, according

to an account very generally received, it took place from his swallowing

a draught of poison which was designed by him for another person. [See

Note 9. Death of the Earl of Leicester.]

Sir Hugh Robsart died very soon after his daughter, having settled his

estate on Tressilian. But neither the prospect of rural independence,

nor the promises of favour which Elizabeth held out to induce him to

follow the court, could remove his profound melancholy. Wherever he went

he seemed to see before him the disfigured corpse of the early and

only object of his affection. At length, having made provision for the

maintenance of the old friends and old servants who formed Sir Hugh's

family at Lidcote Hall, he himself embarked with his friend Raleigh

for the Virginia expedition, and, young in years but old in grief, died

before his day in that foreign land.

Of inferior persons it is only necessary to say that Blount's wit grew

brighter as his yellow roses faded; that, doing his part as a brave

commander in the wars, he was much more in his element than during the

short period of his following the court; and that Flibbertigibbet's

acute genius raised him to favour and distinction in the employment both

of Burleigh and Walsingham.

NOTES.

Note 1. Ch. III.--FOSTER, LAMBOURNE, AND THE BLACK BEAR.

If faith is to be put in epitaphs, Anthony Foster was something the very

reverse of the character represented in the novel. Ashmole gives this

description of his tomb. I copy from the ANTIQUITIES OF BERKSHIRE,

vol.i., p.143.

"In the north wall of the chancel at Cumnor church is a monument of grey

marble, whereon, in brass plates, are engraved a man in armour, and

his wife in the habit of her times, both kneeling before a fald-stoole,

together with the figures of three sons kneeling behind their mother.

Under the figure of the man is this inscription:--

"ANTONIUS FORSTER, generis generosa propago,

Cumnerae Dominus, Bercheriensis erat.

Armiger, Armigero prognatus patre Ricardo,

Qui quondam Iphlethae Salopiensis erat.

Quatuor ex isto fluxerunt stemmate nati,

Ex isto Antonius stemmate quartus erat.

Mente sagax, animo precellens, corpore promptus,

Eloquii dulcis, ore disertus erat.

In factis probitas; fuit in sermone venustas,

In vultu gravitas, relligione fides,

In patriam pietas, in egenos grata voluntas,

Accedunt reliquis annumeranda bonis.

Si quod cuncta rapit, rapuit non omnia Lethum,

Si quod Mors rapuit, vivida fama dedit.

"These verses following are writ at length, two by two, in praise of

him:--

"Argute resonas Cithare pretendere chordas

Novit, et Aonia concrepuisse Lyra.

Gaudebat terre teneras defigere plantas;

Et mira pulchras construere arte domos

Composita varias lingua formare loquelas

Doctus, et edocta scribere multa manu."

The arms over it thus:--

Quart. I. 3 HUNTER'S HORNS stringed.

II. 3 PINIONS with their points upwards.

"The crest is a STAG couchant, vulnerated through the neck by a broad

arrow; on his side is a MARTLETT for a difference."

From this monumental inscription it appears that Anthony Foster,

instead of being a vulgar, low-bred, puritanical churl, was, in fact, a

gentleman of birth and consideration, distinguished for his skill in

the arts of music and horticulture, as also in languages. In so far,

therefore, the Anthony Foster of the romance has nothing but the name

in common with the real individual. But notwithstanding the charity,

benevolence, and religious faith imputed by the monument of grey marble

to its tenant, tradition, as well as secret history, names him as the

active agent in the death of the Countess; and it is added that,

from being a jovial and convivial gallant, as we may infer from some

expressions in the epitaph, he sunk, after the fatal deed, into a man

of gloomy and retired habits, whose looks and manners indicated that he

suffered under the pressure of some atrocious secret.

The name of Lambourne is still known in the vicinity, and it is said

some of the clan partake the habits, as well as name, of the Michael

Lambourne of the romance. A man of this name lately murdered his wife,

outdoing Michael in this respect, who only was concerned in the murder

of the wife of another man.

I have only to add that the jolly Black Bear has been restored to his

predominance over bowl and bottle in the village of Cumnor.

Note 2. Ch. XIII.--LEGEND OF WAYLAND SMITH.

The great defeat given by Alfred to the Danish invaders is said by Mr.

Gough to have taken place near Ashdown, in Berkshire. "The burial

place of Baereg, the Danish chief, who was slain in this fight, is

distinguished by a parcel of stones, less than a mile from the hill, set

on edge, enclosing a piece of ground somewhat raised. On the east side

of the southern extremity stand three squarish flat stones, of about

four or five feet over either way, supporting a fourth, and now called

by the vulgar WAYLAND SMITH, from an idle tradition about an invisible

smith replacing lost horse-shoes there."--GOUGH'S edition of CAMDEN'S

BRITANNIA, vol.i., p. 221.

The popular belief still retains memory of this wild legend, which,

connected as it is with the site of a Danish sepulchre, may have arisen

from some legend concerning the northern Duergar, who resided in the

rocks, and were cunning workers in steel and iron. It was believed that

Wayland Smith's fee was sixpence, and that, unlike other workmen, he was

offended if more was offered. Of late his offices have been again called

to memory; but fiction has in this, as in other cases, taken the liberty

to pillage the stores of oral tradition. This monument must be very

ancient, for it has been kindly pointed out to me that it is referred to

in an ancient Saxon charter as a landmark. The monument has been of late

cleared out, and made considerably more conspicuous.

Note 3. Ch. XIV.--LEICESTER AND SUSSEX.

Naunton gives us numerous and curious particulars of the jealous

struggle which took place between Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex, and the

rising favourite Leicester. The former, when on his deathbed, predicted

to his followers that after his death the gipsy (so he called Leicester,

from his dark complexion) would prove too many for them.

Note 4. Ch. XIV.--SIR WALTER RALEIGH.

Among the attendants and adherents of Sussex, we have ventured to

introduce the celebrated Raleigh, in the dawn of his court favour.

In Aubrey's Correspondence there are some curious particulars of Sir

Walter Raleigh. "He was a tall, handsome, bold man; but his naeve was

that he was damnably proud. Old Sir Robert Harley of Brampton Brian

Castle, who knew him, would say it was a great question who was the

proudest, Sir Walter or Sir Thomas Overbury; but the difference that

was, was judged in Sir Thomas's side. In the great parlour at Downton,

at Mr. Raleigh's, is a good piece, an original of Sir Walter, in a white

satin doublet, all embroidered with rich pearls, and a mighty rich chain

of great pearls about his neck. The old servants have told me that

the real pearls were near as big as the painted ones. He had a

most remarkable aspect, an exceeding high forehead, long-faced, and

sour-eyelidded. A rebus is added to this purpose:--

The enemy to the stomach, and the word of disgrace,

Is the name of the gentleman with the bold face.

Sir Walter Raleigh's beard turned up naturally, which gave him an

advantage over the gallants of the time, whose moustaches received a

touch of the barber's art to give them the air then most admired.--See

AUBREY'S CORRESPONDENCE, vol.ii., part ii., p.500.

Note 5. Ch. XV.--COURT FAVOUR OF SIR WALTER RALEIGH.

The gallant incident of the cloak is the traditional account of this

celebrated statesman's rise at court. None of Elizabeth's courtiers knew

better than he how to make his court to her personal vanity, or could

more justly estimate the quantity of flattery which she could

condescend to swallow. Being confined in the Tower for some offence, and

understanding the Queen was about to pass to Greenwich in her barge,

he insisted on approaching the window, that he might see, at whatever

distance, the Queen of his Affections, the most beautiful object which

the earth bore on its surface. The Lieutenant of the Tower (his own

particular friend) threw himself between his prisoner and the window;

while Sir Waiter, apparently influenced by a fit of unrestrainable

passion, swore he would not be debarred from seeing his light, his life,

his goddess! A scuffle ensued, got up for effect's sake, in which the

Lieutenant and his captive grappled and struggled with fury, tore each

other's hair, and at length drew daggers, and were only separated by

force. The Queen being informed of this scene exhibited by her frantic

adorer, it wrought, as was to be expected, much in favour of the captive

Paladin. There is little doubt that his quarrel with the Lieutenant was

entirely contrived for the purpose which it produced.

Note 6. Ch. XVII.--ROBERT LANEHAM.

Little is known of Robert Laneham, save in his curious letter to a

friend in London, giving an account of Queen Elizabeth's entertainments

at Kenilworth, written in a style of the most intolerable affectation,

both in point of composition and orthography. He describes himself as a

BON VIVANT, who was wont to be jolly and dry in the morning, and by his

good-will would be chiefly in the company of the ladies. He was, by the

interest of Lord Leicester, Clerk of the Council Chamber door, and also

keeper of the same. "When Council sits," says he, "I am at hand. If any

makes a babbling, PEACE, say I. If I see a listener or a pryer in at

the chinks or lockhole, I am presently on the bones of him. If a friend

comes, I make him sit down by me on a form or chest. The rest may walk,

a God's name!" There has been seldom a better portrait of the pragmatic

conceit and self-importance of a small man in office.

Note 7. Ch. XVIII.--DR. JULIO.

The Earl of Leicester's Italian physician, Julio, was affirmed by his

contemporaries to be a skilful compounder of poisons, which he applied

with such frequency, that the Jesuit Parsons extols ironically the

marvellous good luck of this great favourite in the opportune deaths of

those who stood in the way of his wishes. There is a curious passage on

the subject:--

"Long after this, he fell in love with the Lady Sheffield, whom I

signified before, and then also had he the same fortune to have her

husband dye quickly, with an extreame rheume in his head (as it was

given out), but as others say, of an artificiall catarre that stopped

his breath.

"The like good chance had he in the death of my Lord of Essex (as I have

said before), and that at a time most fortunate for his purpose; for

when he was coming home from Ireland, with intent to revenge himselfe

upon my Lord of Leicester for begetting his wife with childe in his

absence (the childe was a daughter, and brought up by the Lady Shandoes,

W. Knooles, his wife), my Lord of Leicester hearing thereof, wanted not

a friend or two to accompany the deputy, as among other a couple of the

Earles own servants, Crompton (if I misse not his name), yeoman of his

bottles, and Lloid his secretary, entertained afterward by my Lord of

Leicester, and so he dyed in the way of an extreame flux, caused by an

Italian receipe, as all his friends are well assured, the maker whereof

was a chyrurgeon (as it is beleeved) that then was newly come to my Lord

from Italy---a cunning man and sure in operation, with whom, if the good

Lady had been sooner acquainted, and used his help, she should not have

needed to sitten so pensive at home, and fearefull of her husband's

former returne out of the same country......Neither must you marvaile

though all these died in divers manners of outward diseases, for this

is the excellency of the Italian art, for which this chyrurgeon and

Dr. Julio were entertained so carefully, who can make a man dye in what

manner or show of sickness you will--by whose instructions, no doubt;

but his lordship is now cunning, especially adding also to these the

counsell of his Doctor Bayly, a man also not a little studied (as he

seemeth) in his art; for I heard him once myselfe, in a publique act

in Oxford, and that in presence of my Lord of Leicester (if I be not

deceived), maintain that poyson might be so tempered and given as it

should not appear presently, and yet should kill the party afterward,

at what time should be appointed; which argument belike pleased well his

lordship, and therefore was chosen to be discussed in his audience, if

I be not deceived of his being that day present. So, though one dye of a

flux, and another of a catarre, yet this importeth little to the

matter, but showeth rather the great cunning and skill of the

artificer."--PARSONS' LEICESTER'S COMMONWEALTH, p.23.

It is unnecessary to state the numerous reasons why the Earl is stated

in the tale to be rather the dupe of villains than the unprincipled

author of their atrocities. In the latter capacity, which a part

at least of his contemporaries imputed to him, he would have made a

character too disgustingly wicked to be useful for the purposes of

fiction.

I have only to add that the union of the poisoner, the quacksalver, the

alchemist, and the astrologer in the same person was familiar to the

pretenders to the mystic sciences.

Note 8. Ch. XXXII.--FURNITURE OF KENILWORTH.

In revising this work, I have had the means of making some accurate

additions to my attempt to describe the princely pleasures of

Kenilworth, by the kindness of my friend William Hamper, Esq., who

had the goodness to communicate to me an inventory of the furniture

of Kenilworth in the days of the magnificent Earl of Leicester. I have

adorned the text with some of the splendid articles mentioned in the

inventory, but antiquaries especially will be desirous to see a more

full specimen than the story leaves room for.

EXTRACTS FROM KENILWORTH INVENTORY, A.D. 1584. A Salte, ship-fashion,

of the mother of perle, garnished with silver and divers workes, warlike

ensignes, and ornaments, with xvj peeces of ordinance whereof ij on

wheles, two anckers on the foreparte, and on the stearne the image of

Dame Fortune standing on a globe with a flag in her hand. Pois xxxij oz.

A gilte salte like a swann, mother of perle. Pois xxx oz. iij quarters.

A George on horseback, of wood, painted and gilt, with a case for knives

in the tayle of the horse, and a case for oyster knives in the brest of

the Dragon.

A green barge-cloth, embrother'd with white lions and beares.

A perfuming pann, of silver. Pois xix oz.

In the halle. Tabells, long and short, vj. Formes, long and short,

xiiij.

HANGINGS. (These are minutely specified, and consisted of the following

subjects, in tapestry, and gilt, and red leather.)

Flowers, beasts, and pillars arched. Forest worke. Historie. Storie

of Susanna, the Prodigall Childe, Saule, Tobie, Hercules, Lady Fame,

Hawking and Hunting, Jezabell, Judith and Holofernes, David, Abraham,

Sampson, Hippolitus, Alexander the Great, Naaman the Assyrian, Jacob,

etc.

BEDSTEADS, WITH THEIR FURNITURE. (These are magnificent and numerous. I

shall copy VERBATIM the description of what appears to have been one of

the best.)

A bedsted of wallnut-tree, toppe fashion, the pillers redd and

varnished, the ceelor, tester, and single vallance of crimson sattin,

paned with a broad border of bone lace of golde and silver. The tester

richlie embrothered with my Lo. armes in a garland of hoppes, roses, and

pomegranetts, and lyned with buckerom. Fyve curteins of crimson sattin

to the same bedsted, striped downe with a bone lace of gold and silver,

garnished with buttons and loops of crimson silk and golde, containing

xiiij bredths of sattin, and one yarde iij quarters deepe. The ceelor,

vallance, and curteins lyned with crymson taffata sarsenet.

A crymson sattin counterpointe, quilted and embr. with a golde twiste,

and lyned with redd sarsenet, being in length iij yards good, and in

breadth iij scant.

A chaise of crymson sattin, suteable.

A fayre quilte of crymson sattin, vj breadths, iij yardes 3 quarters

naile deepe, all lozenged over with silver twiste, in the midst a

cinquefoile within a garland of ragged staves, fringed rounde aboute

with a small fringe of crymson silke, lyned throughe with white fustian.

Fyve plumes of coolered feathers, garnished with bone lace and spangells

of goulde and silver, standing in cups knitt all over with goulde,

silver, and crymson silk. [Probably on the centre and four corners of

the bedstead. Four bears and ragged staves occupied a similar position

on another of these sumptuous pieces of furniture.]

A carpett for a cupboarde of crymson sattin, embrothered with a border

of goulde twiste, about iij parts of it fringed with silk and goulde,

lyned with bridges [That is, Bruges.] sattin, in length ij yards, and ij

bredths of sattin.

(There were eleven down beds and ninety feather beds, besides

thirty-seven mattresses.)

CHYRES, STOOLES, AND CUSHENS. (These were equally splendid with the

beds, etc. I shall here copy that which stands at the head of the list.)

A chaier of crimson velvet, the seate and backe partlie embrothered,

with R. L. in cloth of goulde, the beare and ragged staffe in clothe of

silver, garnished with lace and fringe of goulde, silver, and crimson

silck. The frame covered with velvet, bounde aboute the edge with goulde

lace, and studded with gilte nailes.

A square stoole and a foote stoole, of crimson velvet, fringed and

garnished suteable.

A long cushen of crimson velvet, embr. with the ragged staffe in a

wreathe of goulde, with my Lo. posie "DROYTE ET LOYALL" written in the

same, and the letters R. L. in clothe of goulde, being garnished with

lace, fringe, buttons, and tassels of gold, silver, and crimson silck,

lyned with crimson taff., being in length 1 yard quarter.

A square cushen, of the like velvet, embr. suteable to the long cushen.

CARPETS. (There were 10 velvet carpets for tables and windows, 49

Turkey carpets for floors, and 32 cloth carpets. One of each I will now

specify.)

A carpett of crimson velvet, richlie embr. with my Lo. posie, beares and

ragged staves, etc., of clothe of goulde and silver, garnished upon

the seames and aboute with golde lace, fringed accordinglie, lyned

with crimson taffata sarsenett, being 3 breadths of velvet, one yard 3

quarters long.

A great Turquoy carpett, the grounde blew, with a list of yelloe at each

end, being in length x yards, in bredthe iiij yards and quarter

A long carpett of blew clothe, lyned with bridges sattin, fringed with

blew silck and goulde, in length vj yards lack a quarter, the whole

bredth of the clothe.

PICTURES. (Chiefly described as having curtains.)

The Queene's Majestie (2 great tables). 3 of my Lord. St. Jerome. Lo. of

Arundell. Lord Mathevers. Lord of Pembroke. Counte Egmondt. The Queene

of Scotts. King Philip. The Baker's Daughters. The Duke of Feria.

Alexander Magnus. Two Yonge Ladies. Pompaea Sabina. Fred. D. of Saxony.

Emp. Charles. K. Philip's Wife. Prince of Orange and his Wife. Marq. of

Berges and his Wife. Counte de Home. Count Holstrate. Monsr. Brederode.

Duke Alva. Cardinal Grandville. Duches of Parma. Henrie E. of Pembrooke

and his young Countess. Countis of Essex. Occacion and Repentance. Lord

Mowntacute. Sir Jas. Crofts. Sir Wr. Mildmay. Sr. Wm. Pickering. Edwin

Abp. of York.

A tabell of an historie of men, women, and children, moulden in wax.

A little foulding table of ebanie, garnished with white bone, wherein

are written verses with lres. of goulde.

A table of my Lord's armes.

Fyve of the plannetts, painted in frames.

Twentie-three cardes, [That is charts.] or maps of countries.

INSTRUMENTS. (I shall give two specimens.)

An instrument of organs, regall, and virginalls, covered with crimson

velvet, and garnished with goulde lace.

A fair pair of double virginalls.

CABONETTS. A cabonett of crimson sattin, richlie embr. with a device of

hunting the stagg, in goulde, silver, and silck, with iiij glasses

in the topp thereof, xvj cupps of flowers made of goulde, silver, and

silck, in a case of leather, lyned with greene sattin of bridges.

(Another of purple velvet. A desk of red leather.)

A CHESS BOARDE of ebanie, with checkars of christall and other stones,

layed with silver, garnished with beares and ragged staves, and

cinquefoiles of silver. The xxxij men likewyse of christall and other

stones sett, the one sort in silver white, the other gilte, in a case

gilded and lyned with green cotton.

(Another of bone and ebanie. A pair of tabells of bone.)

A great BRASON CANDLESTICK to hang in the roofe of the howse, verie

fayer and curiouslye wrought, with xxiiij branches, xij greate and xij

of lesser size, 6 rowlers and ij wings for the spreade eagle, xxiiij

socketts for candells, xij greater and xij of a lesser sorte, xxiiij

sawcers, or candlecups, of like proporcion to put under the socketts,

iij images of men and iij of weomen, of brass, verie finely and

artificiallie done.

These specimens of Leicester's magnificence may serve to assure the

reader that it scarce lay in the power of a modern author to exaggerate

the lavish style of expense displayed in the princely pleasures of

Kenilworth.

Note to Ch. XLI.--DEATH OF THE EARL OF LEICESTER.

In a curious manuscript copy of the information given by Ben Jonson

to Drummond of Hawthornden, as transcribed by Sir Robert Sibbald,

Leicester's death is ascribed to poison administered as a cordial by his

countess, to whom he had given it, representing it to be a restorative

in any faintness, in the hope that she herself might be cut off by using

it. We have already quoted Jonson's account of this merited stroke of

retribution in a note of the Introduction to this volume. It may be

here added that the following satirical epitaph on Leicester occurs in

Drummond's Collection, but is evidently not of his composition:--

EPITAPH ON THE ERLE OF LEISTER.

Here lies a valiant warriour,

Who never drew a sword;

Here lies a noble courtier,

Who never kept his word;

Here lies the Erle of Leister,

Who governed the Estates,

Whom the earth could never living love,

And the just Heaven now hates.